

## THE EDITOR

Boris Ford read English at Cambridge before the war. He then spent six years in the Army Education Corps, being finally in command of a residential School of Artistic Studies. On leaving the Army, he joined the staff of the newly formed Bureau of Current Affairs and graduated to be its Chief Editor and in the end its Director. When the Bureau closed down at the end of 1951, he joined the Secretariat of the United Nations in New York and Geneva. On returning to England in the autumn of 1953, he was appointed Secretary of a national inquiry into the problem of providing a humane liberal education for people undergoing technical and professional training.

Boris Ford then became Editor of the *Journal of Education*, until it ceased publication in 1958, and also the first Head of School Broadcasting with independent television. From 1958 he was Education Secretary at the Cambridge University Press, and then in 1960 he became Professor of Education and Director of the Institute of Education at Sheffield University. He is editor of *Universities Quarterly*.

*For a complete list of books available  
please write to Penguin Books  
whose address can be found on the  
back of the title page*

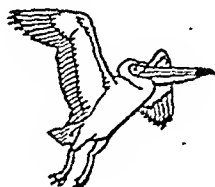
PELICAN BOOKS

A 465

THE PELICAN GUIDE TO ENGLISH LITERATURE

7

THE MODERN AGE













## CONTENTS

The Consistency of James Joyce: ARNOLD KETTLE	301
Ezra Pound's <i>Hugh Selwyn Mauberley</i> : DONALD DAVIE	315
T. S. Eliot: Poet and Critic: L. G. SALINGAR	330
Criticism and the Reading Public: ANDOR GOMME	350
The Poetry of W. H. Auden: R. G. COX	377
Novelists of Three Decades: Evelyn Waugh, Graham Greene, C. P. SNOW: GRAHAM MARTIN	394
Metaphor and Maturity: T. F. Powys and Dylan Thomas: DAVID HOLBROOK	415
The Twentieth-Century Best-Seller: P. N. FURBANK	429
Mass Communications in Britain: RICHARD HOGGART	442
Poetry Today: CHARLES TOMLINSON	458
The Novel Today: GILBERT PHELPS	473

## PART IV

COMPILED BY JOY SAMUEL

### Appendix:

<i>For Further Reading and Reference</i>	497
<i>Authors and Works</i>	511
Acknowledgements	547
Index of Names	548

## GENERAL INTRODUCTION

THIS is the final volume of the *Pelican Guide to English Literature*. Inevitably the project as a whole has taken a good deal longer to carry out than was originally planned, with the result that a number of the earlier volumes in the series have already been through several impressions. Indeed, from the point of view of sales the *Guide* seems to have done very well, at any rate well enough to modify the comment made in the original General Introduction that 'this is not an age which is altogether sympathetic to such an undertaking'.

Yet though the sales of Pelican books undoubtedly signify something (if only a guilty conscience about the topics that one has always meant to 'take up'), they cannot of themselves dispel one's sense of the 'deep-seated spiritual vulgarity that lies at the heart of our civilization', in L. H. Myers's phrase. Other ages have no doubt suffered from their own kinds of grossness and vulgarity, which (and it would be a legitimate criticism) the earlier volumes of the *Guide* have not always sufficiently emphasized. The reason for this, perhaps, was that ultimately the critical preoccupation of these volumes was with the meaning of literature for our own age and for the non-specialist and non-historical reader of today, who might be glad of guidance to help him to respond to what is living and contemporary in literature. For, like the other arts, literature has the power to enrich the imagination and to clarify thought and feeling. Not that one is offering literature as a substitute religion or as providing a philosophy for life. Its satisfactions are of their own kind, though they are satisfactions intimately bound up with the life of each individual reader and therefore not without their bearing on his attitude to life.

This attempt to draw up an ordered account of literature that would be concerned, first and foremost, with value for the present, has meant that the *Guide* has been a work of criticism rather than a standard history of literature. And if this was so in the case of the earlier historical volumes, it was always certain that when it came to offering guidance about the literature of this century, the work would have to be conducted in an unusually critical and yet exploratory spirit. Of all the volumes, this last was bound to be the hardest to assemble, for the major writers are still very much part of our

time and yet they are just sufficiently in the past for it to have become fashionable to find some of them unfashionable; and at the same time, the profusion of lesser writers have a certain inescapable currency that makes it very hard, in a volume designed for the wide-ranging contemporary reader, to disregard them altogether.

In the event this final volume has had to accept a measure of compromise between critical rigour and what one might call sociological indulgence. A variety of extra-literary factors may give much of the writing of one's own day a certain genuine life, even though one comes to the conclusion that it will be comparatively short-lived. Both these evaluations need to be made, for only in this way can one avoid the prevailing sin of much week-end criticism, which is not that it gives too much space to lesser writers but that it tries to justify this space by concocting an unconscionable number of masterpieces. Though this volume of the *Guide* has not uncovered any new masterpieces or master-writers, it has done its critical best not to take a narrow or unsympathetic view of things. But in the end the standards of reference have been a few writers who seem, on re-examination, to have made a profound contribution to our literature, and a few critics who have made a determined effort to elicit from this literature what is of living value today. Together, they have managed to re-establish a sense of literary tradition and they have defined the high standards that this tradition implies.

It is in this spirit that this final volume of the *Guide* offers its contour-map of the literary scene to the general reader. Like its predecessors, it provides the reader with four kinds of related material:

(i) An account of the social context of literature in the period, attempting to answer such questions as 'Why has the literature of this period dealt with *this* rather than *that* kind of problem?', 'What has been the relationship between writer and public?', 'What is the reading public like in its tastes and make-up?'. This section of the volume provides, not a potted history, but an account of contemporary society at its points of contact with literature.

(ii) A literary survey of this period, describing the general characteristics of the period's literature in such a way as to enable the reader to trace its growth and to keep his bearings. The aim of this section is to answer such questions as 'What *kind* of literature has been written





---

PART

I





# THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

G. H. BANTOCK

*Reader in Education, the University of Leicester*

## *Introduction: The writer's predicament*

WHEN Logan Pearsall Smith confessed to Henry James that he to do the best he could with his pen, James replied that, if such was the case, 'There is one word – let me impress upon you – which you must inscribe upon your banner, and that word is Loneliness.' James caught at the eremitic implications of Pearsall Smith's pursuit of 'the best' at a time so inimical to a display of the finest awarenesses. If, then, two basic themes of modern literature have been those of 'isolation' and of 'relationship' within what has been considered a decaying moral order, they have reflected a sense, on the side of the writer, of alienation from the public, an alienation reinforced by indifference or hostility on the part of the community at large. I refer, of course, to the greatest writers and critics rather than to those who have preferred the equivocations necessary in audience-seeking – the 'associational process' as James called it – to the renunciations implicit in the lesson of the Master. Though even these latter have recently shown a tendency to exploit a fashion for 'outsiders' which is at the opposite pole to James's exacting regard for the life of the artist.

The fact that, in our times, really serious literature has become a peripheral occupation may induce a feeling that the writer's diagnosis of moral confusion or perplexity is suspect, springing from a wounded ego or dramatizing a self-pity. Though many eminent Victorians had regarded their age as one of transition, for the great unthunking the Edwardian week-end was little disturbed by intimations of 'chaos' and 'multiplicity', such as afflicted Henry Adams; and Henry James's comment to A. C. Benson in 1896, 'I have the imagination of disaster – and see life as ferocious and sinister', would have fallen strangely on many ears at that time. Yet it is clear that by the mid twentieth century every newspaperman has become aware of a

'crisis', a translation into journalese of Adams's intimation of moral confusion, ushered in, as he saw it, by the final triumph of the Dynamo over the Virgin. Two world wars and an accelerated degree of social change have produced profound alterations from even the nineteenth-century ethos, which we now know to have been less stable and free from doubt than was once imagined.<sup>1</sup> Nor has the serious artist remained aloof from social movements or indifferent to moral dilemmas. Rarely, indeed, can there have been a time when 'background' more readily obtrudes as an essential part of foreground. For all the comparative indifference with which they have been received, writers have less and less felt able to retreat into private worlds; instead, they have become increasingly committed to social, political, and therefore public comment. Indeed, our greatest living novelist, in a television interview, has explained his recent lack of fecundity as being due to precisely such altered pressures:

... I think one of the reasons why I stopped writing novels is that the social aspect of the world changed so much. I had been accustomed to write about the old-fashioned world with its homes and its family life and its comparative peace. All that went, and though I can think about the new world I cannot put it into fiction.

(E. M. Forster)

### *Economic and social change*

The later years of the nineteenth century saw the almost final breakdown, in the limited areas in which it still survived, of a pre-industrial way of life and economy. The agricultural depression of those times (1870-1902) hit particularly hard the landed aristocracy and the agricultural labourer; and it was then that the 'change in the village' denoted the end of rural England on any significant scale; as Lawrence noted, even the countryman became a 'town bird' at heart. Of the 45 million inhabitants of the United Kingdom in 1911 (an increase of 14 million in 40 years), nearly 80 per cent lived in England and Wales; and, of these, again roughly 80 per cent came to live in urban districts. The development of the American wheat prairies and the importation of refrigerated meat from the Argentine meant that four million arable acres, £17 millions of landed rents, 150,000

agricultural labourers disappeared during a period of forty years – some place the numbers a good deal higher. Free Trade, and the increasing urbanization it provoked, ‘gorged the banks but left our rickyards bare’ (Rider Haggard).

‘Agriculture’, as G. M. Trevelyan has said, ‘is not one industry among many, but is a way of life, unique and irreplaceable in its human and spiritual values.’ The decline of the rural way of life has certainly been reflected in the tenuousness of this century’s nature poetry and in the veering of interest, noted by Dr Holloway, towards urban and cosmopolitan themes. The profound human implications of its loss have been mourned by Hardy, George ‘Bourne’, Richard Jefferies, Edward Thomas, and others, though as a way of life it had a shadier side to it than they always confessed. For the evidence of Commissions on the state of the rural poor ought not to be forgotten in assessing the implications of rural depopulation. The Rev. J. Fraser, reporting on the eastern counties for the Royal Commission on Women and Children in Agriculture (1867–70), said that ‘The majority of the cottages that exist in rural parishes are deficient in almost every requisite that should constitute a home for a Christian family in a civilized community’. Certainly, then, the ‘organic community’ of rural England may not have existed quite as its more naïve exponents believe; in re-animating the past it is easy to omit the stresses that are inseparable from the human condition. Nevertheless, this idealization of rural values is important because many writers have accepted its essential truth and have involved it, if only as a nostalgia, in their work. The theme of the past golden age, over the last century and a half, has manifested itself, in one of its important guises, as a yearning for a simpler, more ‘organic’ (a modern hurrah-word) society, to provide a refuge in this ‘much-divided’ civilization. The pervasive feeling certainly is that any material gain must be balanced against a perceptible spiritual loss, and it is the spiritual loss which has received the literary attention, even though one realizes in saying so that the division itself over-simplifies the situation.

The altered social emphasis following on urbanization extended the encroachment of a changed pattern in social relations already to be found over the greater part of the country throughout the century. Considering the enlarged role of money in the new village economy, George ‘Bourne’ points to the alterations necessitated by the slow but

## PART ONE

remorseless enclosure of the commons after 1861, a phase which in his area lasted until 1900:

... the common [was], as it were, a supplement to the cottage gardens, and [furnished] means of extending the scope of the little home industries. It encouraged the poorest labourer to practise, for instance, all those time-honoured crafts which Cobbett, in his little book on Cottage Economy, had advocated as the one hope for labourers.

(*Change in the Village*, 1912)

With the enclosure of the common, 'the once self-supporting cottager turned into a spender of money'. The implications of this struck at the very heart of his human relationships; what emerged was a new ethic, familiar enough by then in the towns but less known in the country, the ethic of competition. The effect of this had been to reduce man to the level of economic man, one whose community relationships were at the mercy of the cash-nexus, and whose psychological motivations were thought of mostly in terms of self-interest. (There had been protests, of course, but not on a socially significant scale.) In such circumstances, "the Poor" was regarded not as a term descriptive of a condition of society but of the character of a group of people' (Beatrice Webb, *My Apprenticeship*). Darwinian notions, interpreted by Herbert Spencer and others, helped to afford a set of fortuitous economic arrangements with the force of an apparent natural law. The chance interaction of economic atomic particles pursuing their rational self-interest was regarded as the inevitable and exclusive model of social behaviour. Notions of a public morality in terms of a diffused public good hardly existed among ordinary people – as C. F. G. Masterman's *Condition of England* (1909) makes clear.

Private morality, at least on the face which it turned towards the world, was authoritarian and taboo-ridden. Serious personal oddity was dismissed as a sign of degeneracy, not diagnosed as neurosis. The bringing-up of children, as Samuel Butler bore witness, was strict; and the overt decencies of family life and relationship were maintained, whatever went on under the surface. The 'great ladies of the day' sent for Lord Templecombe when the question of divorce arose, in Miss Sackville-West's *The Edwardians*:

'Noblesse oblige, my dear Eadred', they had said; 'people like us do not exhibit their feelings; they do not divorce. Only the vulgar divorce.'

The twentieth century has seen the break-down of the old familiar authoritarian pattern in private and social, as opposed to political, life. A similar type of moral questioning to that which, in the later eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, undermined the old hierarchic political order, affected many of the assumptions of family and social life. By way of compensation, private dilemma provoked, or at least went along with, a growth of public concern, particularly a developing guilt over wealth. Divorce today carries no moral stigma comparable to that of exploiting the poor, or of ill-treating a child. To some extent, indeed, the realm of the public has expanded at the expense of the private, almost as if the pressure of uncertainty had been resolved by a transfer of responsibility. The individual and the social ('the social' understood to imply the primary sub-group as well as society at large) have come to seem inter-dependent to a degree which would have appeared strange to a Victorian, to the detriment of that individual atomization inherent in Victorian economic arrangements, and of that sense of individual self-responsibility which characterized the morally earnest Victorian ethos. As Mr Noel Annan has pointed out:

Nothing marks the break with Victorian thought more decisively than modern sociology - that revolution at the beginning of this century which we associate with the names of Weber, Durkheim, and Pareto. They no longer started with the individual as the central concept in terms of which society must be explained. They saw society as a nexus of groups; and the pattern of behaviour which these groups unwittingly established primarily determined men's actions.

(*The Curious Strength of Positivism in English Political Thought*, 1959)

It may be that, in Mr Annan's meaning of the terms, positivist and sociological notions still vie for ascendancy in our political thinking. What is certain is that man's private behaviour has been profoundly affected, both by the atmosphere of moral perplexity within which

he lives and by the expansion of the public realm which characterizes our age.

### *Moral perplexities*

A theory basically economic had considerably affected social and political thinking about relationships in society for nearly a century, then. In its replacement, the empirical, sceptical spirit of science played a large part and helped in the dissolution of old social acceptances based on *a priori* assumptions. Beatrice Webb refers to the

... belief of the most original and vigorous minds of the seventies and eighties that it was by science, and by science alone, that all human misery would be ultimately swept away.

The scientific approach affected also the field of economics and social investigations. From trying 'to solve the largest possible problems from the least possible knowledge' (Postan), Cambridge economists from Marshall to Keynes have infused their theoretical constructions with particular observations of reality. No Gradgrind could have pursued facts more relentlessly than the investigators into social conditions at the end of the nineteenth century. The wife of Charles Booth, whose *Life and Labour of the People of London* (1891-1903) was one of the first great social surveys, stated clearly in a *Memoir* of her husband's life:

The *a priori* reasoning of political economy, orthodox and unorthodox alike, fails from want of reality. At its base are a series of assumptions very imperfectly connected with the observed facts of life. We need to begin with a true picture of the modern industrial organism.

'The primary task [is] to observe and dissect facts,' urged the Webbs. Education and other aspects of social life were similarly affected.

The Enlightenment view of the world of men as constituting simply a part of the natural world and hence offering precisely similar opportunities for scientific investigation is nowhere better illustrated than in the rapidly developing study of psychology and particularly in the work of Freud. Freud worked within the framework of nine-

teenth-century assumptions—deterministic, materialistic, and rationalistic. At the same time, there were also features of his work which to the careless reader seemed to point to a considerable scepticism about the findings of reason. Rooted in a theory of biological instincts, Freud's view of the developing psyche placed a great emphasis on the power of the unconscious to affect conduct; intellectual convictions seemed to be rationalizations of emotional needs—'rationalization' being a word introduced by Freud's disciple, Ernest Jones. Freud's telology was firmly rooted in nineteenth-century hedonism; but the discovery that man's actions could be 'motivated' by forces of which he might know nothing introduced a probable irrationality into human behaviour which was profoundly disturbing. This 'entirely unsuspected peculiarity in the constitution of human nature', as William James not quite accurately called it, meant that a new dimension in the assessment of human behaviour had to be taken into account. The 'normal' scale of events demanded a new measuring rod, for analysis might reveal a profound significance in the apparently trivial. The firm line which nineteenth-century psychiatrists had drawn between the normal and the abnormal, the latter of which they explained largely in terms of degeneracy, disappeared; dreams and slips of the tongue, if nothing else, showed that we all displayed neurotic symptoms. Above all, the implied criticism of the traditional model in terms of which reason ruled the will in the interests of moral behaviour, and the discovery that the super-ego could profoundly distort the ego, so that 'in our therapy we often find ourselves obliged to do battle with the super-ego, and work to moderate its demands', had a profound effect on twentieth-century moral attitudes. Rationalist though Freud was, therapeutically speaking, his 'ego' is a feeble thing, fighting for its life against the encroachments of the super-ego and the id. And then, of course, there was the enormous importance, in the theories of instincts, placed on the demands of libido (those, that is, of sexuality), particularly on those manifested in the Oedipus phase.

Thus a blow seemed to be struck at men's sense of self-responsibility and at the ordered emphases of behaviour on which he had come to depend: the consequences for fiction can be sensed in the comments of Virginia Woolf, who knew of psycho-analytic doctrine early because of her affiliations with the Strachey family:







## PART ONE

The 'will' (the instrument of the moral 'super-ego') had, then, in some degree exhausted itself in the war effort; it was, in any case, suspect through its association with Victorian strenuousness and the subtle dominations of family relationships. Lawrence was insistent on its power to cramp and thwart in the field of personal relationships between 'men and women' – the 'insensate love will' marred the intimate growth of psychic uniqueness. He saw in it, too, the motive force behind developments in machine technology, dehumanizing in the industrial field.<sup>2</sup> Strength became a questionable value and 'success' in a worldly sense was only for the insensitive – Babbitt on Main Street. The theme was not by any means entirely new, of course, as witness Gissing's *New Grub Street*. And, further back, there was Blake's 'Damn braces; bless relaxes', not to mention Wordsworth's 'wise passiveness'. But there is an increasing tendency, in the inter-war years, for the hero in novels to be a person to whom things happen, rather than someone who to any extent imposes his will on life – Eustace rather than Hilda – a whimper replaces a bang. In the thirties, the life of action itself (except, of course, in defence of the Workers' Republic) is often suspect; *The Ascent of F6* poses the dilemma of action and contemplation.

In the social sphere increasing knowledge tended only to confirm and strengthen intimations of moral unease and to destroy faith in the essential and unquestioned rightness of Western ways of behaviour. Advances in anthropology, for instance, helped to undermine the absoluteness of religious and ethical systems in favour of a more relativistic standpoint. Westermarck's *Ethical Relativity*, denying the objectivity of moral judgements, was followed by Frazer's *Golden Bough* (1890–1915), beneath which, as Noel Annan puts it, 'runs the theme that all Christian ceremonies are merely sophistications of savage rituals and that as magic was superseded by religion, so religion will vanish before reason'. Further developments conceived primitive societies as integrated structures, 'patterns of culture', and, in this way, a large variety of different ways of organizing a society was demonstrated. The myth of a universal human nature was finally exploded; modes of behaviour obviously varied immensely in different environments. To grow up in Samoa was obviously not the same thing as to grow up in, say, Chicago. Ruth Benedict herself pointed out, whilst she deprecated, a typical Western reaction to these findings:

The sophisticated modern temper has made of *social relativity* ... a doctrine of despair. It has pointed out its incongruity with the orthodox dreams of permanence and ideality and with the individual's illusions of autonomy.

(*Patterns of Culture*, 1934)

Behind all these manifestations of confusion and uncertainty there lies a deeper and more profound problem – the inability to arrive at a commonly accepted metaphysical picture of man. To Freud man is a biological phenomenon, a prey to instinctual desires and their re-direction in the face of 'harsh' reality; he is, therefore, in the Darwinian tradition, simply a part of nature. To Marxists he is the outcome of economic and social forces, the product of an evolutionary necessity as rigid as any to be found in the natural world. The declining but still powerful rationalistic picture of man derived from the liberal, *laissez-faire* tradition rests upon an assumed harmony among men's varying rational desires, which, when not interfered with, reflect the pre-established harmonies to be found in nature: this view is derived

involve system-building and has become linguistic and analytical. Philosophers have become more conscious of a professional expertise and have shown a growing concern with questions of technique. Rigour in argument has replaced rhetoric and eloquence.

In the early years of the century, Bradley's absolute idealism began to give way to the realism of Russell and Moore. Russell urged in 1914 that philosophers 'should give an account of the world of science and daily life'; Moore put forward the claims of common sense. From this and from Moore's practice of clarification and analysis implicit in the *Principia Ethica* (1903) and *Ethics* (1911), through the aridities of logical atomism and logical positivism, developed the current concern with the analysis of ordinary language. On the way, metaphysics was repudiated, as could be seen in A. J. Ayer's *Language, Truth and Logic* (1935). The later Wittgenstein, in the *Philosophical Investigations*, dismisses any desire to reveal the essential function of language and seeks to investigate *how* language is used in daily existence. Most recently there has been a revived interest in metaphysics. But, in general, the tendency of the dominant school of English philosophy over the last forty years has been '... not to increase what we know ... but to rectify the logical geography of the knowledge we already possess' (Gilbert Ryle, *The Concept of Mind*).

This changed focus of philosophical discussion has been accompanied by the belief that moral statements do not constitute genuine propositions. With the decline of intuitionism, the view of the American, C. L. Stevenson, that ethical judgements had 'no objective validity whatsoever ... (but) are pure expressions of feeling and as such do not come under the category of truth or falsehood', was widely accepted among ethical theorists in the late thirties and forties and reflects a widespread scepticism about the objectivity of moral judgements. Ethics, for many moral philosophers, became 'the logical study of the language of morals' (R. M. Hare, 1952). Latterly, ethical statements have been reinstated as being supportable on rational, and not merely on emotive, grounds; though ethical judgements are, strictly speaking, neither true nor false, they can be better or worse. Recent developments, too, have shown some interest in the psychology of moral decisions. Nevertheless, the ethical philosopher still largely denies that his job is to tell us what we ought to do:

## THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

Generalization [about moral advice] is possible only in so far as men are psychologically and biologically similar ... it is vain, presumptuous, and dangerous to try to answer these questions without a knowledge both of psychology and of the individual case. (P. H. Nowell-Smith, *Ethics*, 1954)

Something of the same spirit has infected the field of political philosophy. Political and party propagandists and left-wing theorists like the British Marxist, the late Harold Laski, have continued to discuss or imply the function of the state. But, after the generation of Hobhouse, Lindsay, and Ernest Barker, academic political theorists have either, like Michael Oakeshott, reacted against ideological system-builders, finding in the pursuit of 'intimations' a sufficient guide to political action, or urged, like T. D. Weldon, the uselessness of attempting to discover the ideal purpose of the state and assigned to the philosopher a subordinate role as 'consultant' (*The Vocabulary of Politics*, 1953). Though writers such as Collingwood have not been totally neglected nor the work of foreign existentialists unknown, the



THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

I hate the idea of causes and if I had to choose between betraying my country and betraying my friend, I hope I should have the guts to betray my country.

(‘What I believe’, 1939)

For the world, he believed, ‘is a globe of men who are trying to reach one another ... by the help of goodwill plus culture and intelligence’ – a remark which betrays a true English insularity in the era of Freud (*homo homini lupus*) and Hitler; though it is to Mr Forster’s credit that he recognized the echo in the Marabar caves as a threat to his liberal rationality. He does not plumb, but he is aware of, the demonic depths; he receives intimations from the dread goblins who, for him, stalk through Beethoven’s Fifth Symphony.

*The new social ethic*



of absolutism, many hastened to abet the new manifestation of Necessity, the victory of the proletariat.

Yet the temporary success of Marxism merely served to highlight in dramatic form the slow, uncertain emergence of a new ethic which, in so far as contemporary movements are discernible to those who live through them and who therefore lack historical perspective, would seem to compensate in some measure for the private dilemmas we have analysed. The Protestant, individualistic, liberal outlook seems to be giving way to a social group ethic, in no way universally accepted, even though it had been developing spasmodically during the nineteenth century, but providing considerable evidence of a trend. The old atomization has met the challenge of new key concepts: 'organic', 'integration', 'relation', 'adaptation'. The new hell is to be that of other people. The empirical philosopher often speaks as if disagreement springs from inadequate factual data; the 'organization man' suspects a break-down in communication. The solution involves 'imprisonment in brotherhood'.

Indeed, there would be reasons for thinking that some of the earlier questionings in the private sphere arose out of a changing social awareness. The nineteenth century, of course, had a long minority tradition of comment and criticism unfavourable to the cultural and social consequences of industrialization and commercialism. Cobbett, Robert Owen, Dickens, Matthew Arnold, Ruskin, William Morris had all, with a variety of stresses, pointed to the human unsatisfactoriness of the dominant trends. At the end of the century, a number of circumstances combined to bring this minority criticism into greater prominence. Signs of a relative decline *vis-à-vis* certain foreign nations, the exclusion from certain primary markets by the imposition of a heavy duties, a decline in the birth rate, and an increase in emigration induced unaccustomed uncertainties into the economic situation. The third Reform Act of 1884 and the County Councils Act of 1888, together with the development of universal education after 1870 and the rise of the grammar schools after 1902, implied a change in political balance; the lower middle classes were arriving. Though the predominant class structure was still strongly authoritarian, it came to be realized that the boasted 'freedom' extended only to the employer of labour; the implications of 'water plentiful and labour docile' were examined and found wanting.

There were signs that the upper classes were no longer quite what they had been. Henry James bluntly referred to the 'clumsy conventional expensive materialized vulgarized brutalized life of London', and found the state of the upper class in England 'in many ways very much the same rotten and *collapsible* one of the French aristocracy before the revolution'. The old aristocracy of birth and inheritance was being replaced by one of wealth and economic power during all the Victorian period. By its end, even the degree of 'respectability' exacted, in moral and sexual terms, was, as Beatrice Webb saw, graded to the degree of social, political, or industrial power exercised. Ramsay Macdonald proclaimed that 'the Age of the Financier' had come and expressed the belief that 'such people' (they included 'the scum of the earth which possessed itself of gold in the gutters of the Johannesburg market place') 'did not command the moral respect which tones down class hatred'.

What was distasteful in this society to the sensibilities of the writer was the total lack of concern for personal relationships, the judging of people by exclusively 'social' standards; though, perhaps, what was new was the sensitivity of the artist rather than the behaviour of exclusive social sets:

What was demoralizing ... because it bred a poisonous cynicism about human relations, was the making and breaking of personal friendships according to temporary and accidental circumstances in no way connected with personal merit: gracious appreciation and insistent intimacy being succeeded, when failure according to worldly standards occurred, by harsh criticism and cold avoidance. (Webb, *op. cit.*)

with the public school outlook. Such analyses should perhaps warn us against accepting sureness of values as in itself a virtue. The value of the values, so to speak, is also in question.

Politically, the aristocracy, with the passing of the Parliament Act of 1911, suffered a great loss of direct influence. And when George V, after much anxious thought and consultation, accepted the advice of Lord Balfour and, in 1923, sent for Stanley Baldwin in preference to Lord Curzon to form the new Conservative ministry, the highest political office in the land was forever closed to a member of the House of Lords. At the same time, the persistence of what has been termed an 'Establishment' – a network of social-political-commercial and economic relations involving the decision-makers of our generation – has been amply demonstrated recently in an article by T. Lupton and C. Wilson published in *The Manchester School*. The network of family, school, club, and personal relationships there revealed, together with some significant remarks at the Parker Tribunal, would suggest that personal influence has not given way before the insistent claims of the new social Meritocracy as much as might have been thought. Even in the Labour Party, after the first generation of members had passed, a public school education at Haileybury or Winchester proved no bar to advancement; and though Lloyd George had proclaimed 'the day of the cottage-bred man', the personnel of the House of Commons remains obstinately middle class. Nevertheless, there has been an immense increase in social mobility; and the struggle for status, based on education not birth, has become a characteristic mid-century phenomenon.

Beatrice Webb's father, she recalled, had no conception of 'general principles ... no clear vision of the public good'. The new ethic of which she herself was symptomatic was to be much concerned with 'public good', state action was to replace the 'freedom of the market' but without fundamentally altering the anti-traditional, rationalistic basis of political behaviour. For the spirit of Bentham rather than that of Burke still triumphs, indeed, both *laissez-faire* liberalism and socialism stem from the ideas of the Enlightenment. The new sense of 'community' is dependent very much on the functioning of the 'upper centres' as Lawrence would have put it. Old custom was to be replaced, after the nineteenth-century vacuum, by positive law as the guiding force of the new communal spirit: at this level,

relationship was willed rather than the result of a genuine 'organic' growth, though to say that is not to deny it a strong positive value.

Several groups at the end of the century demanded change: the Marxist Social Democratic Federation under A. M. Hyndman provided the revolutionary element, though its influence was not great. The Socialist League produced Morris, even if otherwise its effect was slight. Above all, the Fabian Society, which started out in revolutionary terms, became the 'symbol of social democracy, of gradualism, of peaceful permeation, of avoidance of revolution'. Wedded to fact-finding, its empirical approach forbade the enveloping philosophical theory and substituted a detailed programme of action based on the careful collection of factual data. As Helen Lynd puts it, the Fabians 'applied the method of social engineering to questions hitherto left to the realm of sentiment'. Their only common principle was the 'condemnation of the profit motive [which condemnation] was the G.C.M., the greatest common measure, of socialists'.

The Gladstone Parliament of 1880-5 was 'the "no-man's land" between the old Radicalism and the new Socialism'. The new spirit not only manifested itself in a spate of social legislation and royal commissions, but received theoretical justification at the hands of T. H. Green and the neo-Hegelian philosophers in the universities. The stage was set for the predominant twentieth-century developments, both in social philosophy and legislation. 'Every period has its dominant religion and hope,' as Arthur Koestler says, 'and "Socialism" in a vague and undefined sense was the hope of the early twentieth century.' The changing attitude was reinforced by developments in social psychology - notably in the American Charles Cooley's *Human Nature and the Social Order* (1902) - which, in Dewey's phrase, conceived 'individual mind as a function of social life'. Even Freud, who started from a firmly rooted theory of biological instinct, came latterly to see the importance of the social environment.

But not all were satisfied with the Fabian purview or the Fabian rate of progress. H. G. Wells, who so interestingly represents a facet of modern rationalistic political thinking, was struck by the wastefulness of contemporary conditions, the Victorian formlessness, and welcomed the forces tending to 'rationalize' and systematize, those which tend

## PART ONE

to promote industrial co-ordination, increase productivity, necessitate new and better-informed classes, evoke a new type of education and make it universal, break down political boundaries everywhere and bring all men into one planetary community. (*Experiment in Autobiography*)

The effects of this, in terms of immediate personal relations, Wells approvingly defines as a 'progressive emancipation of the attention from everyday urgencies ... conceptions of living divorced more and more from immediacy'. Though he deprecated any repudiation of the 'primaries of life' - personal affection and the like - he admitted the desire to control them in order to 'concentrate the largest possible proportion of my energy upon the particular system of effort that has established itself for me as my distinctive business in the world. Modern conditions admitted the revolutionary question: "Ye you earn a living, you support a family, you love and hate, but what do you do?"' What he did he summed up: 'We originaive intellectual workers are reconditioning human life.'

The mechanical, abstract basis of community relationship could hardly be more clearly illustrated. We can see why D. H. Lawrence had to ask:

Why do modern people almost invariably ignore the things that are actually present to them ... They certainly never live on the spot where they are. They inhabit abstract space, the desert void of politics, principles, right and wrong, and so forth ... Talking to them is like trying to have a human relationship with the letter X in algebra. (*'Insouciance'*, 1928)

The reconditioning process involved an appreciation of the planned world state as the answer to Victorian untidiness. Fabian interpenetration was rejected as a 'protest rather than a plan'. Wells thinks in terms of large administrative units rather than of the adaptation of existing governmental machinery. 'I listened to *Arms and the Man* with admiration and hatred. It seemed to me inorganic, logical straightness and not the crooked path of life': Yeats's comment is equally applicable to Wells's utopian schemes.

Many others took up the notion of the planned, particularly as the moral climate concerning personal responsibility for misfortune and poverty changed so that, as Professor Titmuss puts it: 'Inquiry [moved

#### THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

from the question "who are the poor" to the question "why are they poor".' (*Essays on 'The Welfare State'*). The progress of events – war, unemployment, economic depression – favoured the concentration on social and economic problems. Alfred Marshall, in his *Principles*, had already urged that there was 'no moral justification for extreme poverty side by side with great wealth'. Maynard Keynes, in the twenties, resisted the hereditary 'lethargy' of the orthodox view of *laissez-faire*:

It is *not* true that individuals possess a prescriptive 'natural liberty' in their economic activities. There is *no* 'compact' conferring perpetual rights on those who Have or on those who Acquire. The world is *not* so governed from above that private and social interest always coincide ...

(J. M. Keynes *End of Laissez-faire* 1926)

## PART ONE

...born out of the despair of world war and civil war, of social unrest and economic chaos, the desire for a complete break with the past, for starting human history from scratch, was deep and genuine. In this apocalyptic climate dadaism, futurism, surrealism and the Five-year-plan-mystique came together in a curious amalgam. Moved by a perhaps similar mood of despair, John Donne had begged: 'Moist with a drop of Thy blood my dry soule.' The mystic of the nineteen-thirties yearned, as a sign of Grace, for a look at the Dnieper Dam and a three per cent increase in the Soviet pig-iron production.

The age of anxiety evoked, in some hearts, a desire for the comforts of a simplifying formula or of a closed system, like Marxism, providing all the answers. R. H. S. Crossman refers in his introduction to *The God that Failed* to the attractions of an 'unquestioned purpose', the peace of intellectual doubt and uncertainty in subjecting one's soul to the 'canon law of the Kremlin'. Symptomatically, many disillusioned communists have turned to the Catholic church. Marxism as a serious force amongst intellectuals did not survive the post-war political behaviour of Russia; disillusionment had already been expressed before the war by writers like Orwell and Gide, though war-time exigencies temporarily silenced doubts. Nevertheless, the concern for social improvement which was one of the motive forces of the 'pink decade' continued, in psychological as well as economic terms. 'Security', as defined by Beveridge, rather than simply 'wealth' - the cash-nexus - becomes politically important. 'Want, Disease, Ignorance, Squalor, and Idleness' were the giants against which Beveridge tilted: the terms in which Ignorance was tackled represent, even if rather tritely, the extent to which we have moved beyond the cynicism of educating our masters:

In the development of education lies the most important, if not the most urgent, of all the tasks of reconstruction. The needs of civilized man are illimitable, because they include the wise, happy enjoyment of leisure!

The section in which this appears is headed, symptomatically, 'Social Conscience as Driving Force'.

The attempted organization of the state in terms of community

## THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

'needs' rather than for individual 'exploitation' has been paralleled in a number of other fields, where two somewhat contradictory principles have been at work: a socio-political egalitarianism and a scientific assessment of the importance of the group - particularly the primary group - in human contentment. Notions of permissiveness, to replace the older more authoritative patterns and influenced, perhaps, by a model derived from free association techniques in psycho-therapy, are much mooted. The resultant gain in personal freedom, however, has been matched by new manifestations of group tyranny. Modern psychology stresses group dynamics rather than individual behaviour, the total configuration rather than the isolate. Group therapy appears alongside individual treatment; group methods involving 'projects' are recommended in schools to replace the old individualistic competitive pattern. The comprehensive experiment in education urges the benefits of social intermingling in the same breath that it plays up the needs of the Meritocracy. Business men with advanced views proclaim industry as fulfilling a social as well as an economic function. The notion of 'adjustment' to society comes to play an important part as a value concept. Diseased aspects of society or a variety of other external causes, rather than individual wickedness, have for long been blamed for increased delinquency and crime; as Barbara Wootton puts it in her *Social Science and Social Pathology* (1959), 'the logical drive, in modern social science, away from notions of individual responsibility is very powerful'. As a social psychologist, like J. A. C. Brown, can write that 'the social group is the basic unit of society, not the individual' (Brown, *Psychology of Industry*, 1954).



democracy would extinguish that liberty of the mind to which a democratic social condition is favourable; so that, after having broken all the bondage once imposed on it by ranks or by men, the human mind would be closely fettered to the general will of the greatest number.

(*Democracy in America*)

At the same time, warnings against the totalitarian implications of state interference have grown apace since 1945. There has been 1984 and *The Yogi and the Commissar*. Karl Popper's *The Open Society and Its Enemies* reasserted liberal values, and his *Poverty of Historicism* protests against notions of historical inevitability. F. A. Hayek's *Road to Serfdom* is anti-Left in attitude; and when, in 1951, Michael Oakeshott replaced Harold Laski in the chair of Political Science at the London School of Economics, so long associated with socialist views, a philosopher in the Burke tradition replaced an English Marxist. The situation, as they say, is yet fluid.

### *Problems of popular culture*

The problem de Tocqueville saw has not, contrary to some expectations, been assuaged by the new literacy of the masses and their consequent political and social emancipation. The commercial development of various media of mass communication has fostered further that trading spirit which de Tocqueville diagnosed as having already affected literature by 1840. Since the aim, cynically overt or sentimentously wrapped up, is so often quick profits, the tendency has been to appeal at a low level of public taste on the assumption that this will bring about the largest quantitative return.

The case for the new age of industrial democracy has been stated by John Dewey: he is pointing out how learning is no longer a 'class matter':

... as a direct result of the industrial revolution ... this has been changed. Printing was invented; it was made commercial. Books, magazines, papers were multiplied and cheapened. As a result of the locomotive and telegraph, frequent, rapid and cheap intercommunication by mails and electricity was called into being ... The result has been an intellectual revolution. Learning has been put in circulation ... Stimuli of an intellectual sort pour in upon us in all kinds of ways.

(*School and Society*, 1900)

## THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

His near contemporary, Henry James, would hardly have agreed that these advantages necessarily produced that intellectual renaissance Dewey seemed to be expecting. And the more relevant diagnosis seems to be that implicit in F. R. Leavis's remark: 'It is as if society, in so complicating and extending the machinery of organization, had lost intelligence, memory, and moral purpose.'

The coming of universal literacy, following the Education Act of 1870, indeed, produced no such anticipated advances in rationality as the utilitarian theorists had prophesied. Indeed, our current educational dilemmas merely serve to highlight our inability to find an adequate substitute for the old culture of the people - expressed in folk song and dance, rustic craft and natural lore - which industrialism has destroyed. Where the secondary modern curriculum has been concerned, for instance, neither the encouragement of that 'practical' bent said to characterize those of inferior intellectual capacity nor the more 'democratic' suggestion of the common core curriculum meets the case satisfactorily.

If the ethics of business enterprise with its consequent emphasis on material consumption are accepted, advertising has a necessary place in the economy; yet its effect in creating stereotypes, in stimulating the baser aspects of human nature – fear of social nonconformity, snobbery, resentment at the demands of work – must rank high in any assessment of deleterious influences on the twentieth-century consciousness. (One firm alone, Unilever, spent £83 million on advertising in 1957; by contrast, the government has just congratulated itself on raising the grant to national galleries and museums for the purchase of works of art and of historical interest from £125,000 to just over £335,000 per annum.) In the same way, the various forms of popular literature – crime or love stories – are to be condemned, not because they incite to violence and rape, but because the attitudes they involve in important matters of human relationship and moral choice are obstructive to finer or more subtle responses. The expectations about human behaviour aroused by the ordinary work of popular fiction or popular magazine story involve grossly oversimplified stereotypes which, to addicts, must to some extent interfere with their ability to understand those with whom they have to live in close personal contact, as in family life. At the very least, they debase the medium of social intercourse, language, and when that happens, 'the whole machinery of social and individual thought and order goes to pot', as Ezra Pound puts it.

Again, there is a good deal of evidence to show that the cinema and television foster a kind of escapist day-dreaming which is likely to be emotionally exhausting and crippling to apprehensions of the real world. Twentieth-century technical developments have produced a variety of mass media of communication – the cinema, the television, the wireless – of, as yet, unmeasured potency, though it is already clear that the radio and television are of great political effectiveness. As important is the fact that night after night a selection of programmes of inane triviality sterilize the emotions and standardize the outlook and attitudes of millions of people. And these, it is necessary to remind ourselves, are the 'educated' and literate descendants of the people who produced the folk song and the folk tale, who built the parish churches and nourished Bunyan.

The whole problem of the effects of bad art has indeed become one of

#### THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

incalculable importance in our times, though little advance has been made in diagnosing more specifically since I. A. Richards wrote in *Principles of Literary Criticism* (1924),

At present bad literature, bad art, the cinema, etc., are an influence of the first importance in fixing immature and actually inapplicable attitudes to most things. Even the decision as to what constitutes a pretty girl or a handsome young man, an affair apparently natural and personal enough, is largely determined by magazine covers and movie stars.

The girl who is going to fall in love knows all about it beforehand from books and the movies ... she knows exactly how she feels when her lover or husband betrays her or when she betrays him: she knows precisely what it is to be a forsaken wife, an adoring mother, an erratic grandmother. All at the age of eighteen. (D. H. Lawrence)

Growth, then, is fixated. Mr Hoggart is diagnosing something similar when he notes that so much popular music consists of

strictly conventional songs; their aim is to present to the hearer a known pattern of emotions; they are not so much creations in their own right as structures of conventional signs for the emotional fields they open.

(*The Uses of Literacy*)

Constant Lambert, in his *Music Ho*, made the same point. To use Lawrence's terminology, such 'idealization' implies the death of the dynamic personality. It has seemed to many critics of the twentieth century that it is precisely the function of great literature to foster growth, to break down such stereotypes: in Dr Leavis's view, to speak out for 'life'.

Part of the trouble, of course, has been the increasing 'rootlessness' of the modern world - one which the modern 'Angries' have exploited:

'Was that,' my friend smiled, 'where you "have your roots"?'

No, only where my childhood was unspent,

I wanted to retort, just where I started. (Philip Larkin)

Greatly increased mobility has implied a lack of continuity of environment and a consequent superficializing of relationships. The antagonism between the generations, a theme as old as the gods, has become more overt and uncontrolled owing to the moral uncertainties of the older generation, the acceptance of adolescence as a time of 'revolt', and the insidious exploitation of young people for commercial and political reasons by affording them a spurious 'importance'; hence the development of the teen-age market. Symptomatic of the moral rootlessness is the kaleidoscopic progression of fashions, intellectual and otherwise, which characterizes our age:

## THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

The generations are extraordinarily short-lived. I can count up the intellectual fashions that have taken and held my students for a brief space. When I began in 1907 there was a wave of social idealism. Then ... suffrage, then syndicalism, then the war ... then Freud ... It's lost labour to refute these things - they just die out in time. (A. T. Hobhouse)

ing and does something to nullify the charges made — this one can grant. Yet, some writers and critics might reply, the new complacency sidesteps the assumption on which their work is based, that great literature is not peripheral, but remains, after the decay of organized religion, one of the few means through which we can appraise the nature and quality of our lives and is therefore vital to any strenuous attempt to define the nature of the good life. Indeed, it cannot be a matter of indifference that within our period practically no writer of major stature has failed to lament an isolation enforced on him by public apathy or even hostility. Nor, if literature is accepted as a presentation of 'felt' life, is it possible to brush aside as mistaken the testimony of its most powerful practitioners on a matter so fundamental as their relationship with their audience. For the nature of their analysis is of a very different sort from that of Johnson's easy and unselfconscious appeal to the 'common voice of the multitude, uninstructed by precept and unprejudiced by authority', or Dryden's complacent comment on his Elizabethan predecessors: 'Greatness was not then so easy to access, nor conversation so free, as it now is.' It may be that this is the price of democratization; it is no use, however, burking the fact that there is a price and that it is a serious one. Today, there is none of that interpenetration of artistic, social, and political life that characterized the Augustan age. And this at a time when the implications of C. P. Snow's 'scientific revolution' of 'electronics, atomic energy, automation' with its repercussions for work and leisure are being forced upon us as part of the foreseeable future.

Indeed, the pleading to which I have just referred could in itself be regarded as symptomatic of a weakening of consciousness, if not always necessarily of conscience. The notion of 'Mass Civilization and Minority Culture' has been attacked on the grounds of its inadequate formulation of the complexities inherent in 'mass' civilization. It would be as relevant to note that the 'minority', in the literary field alone, subdivides, proliferates, and disagrees. Bloomsbury's all too self-contained aestheticism, *Scrutiny*'s reassertion of the puritan, ethical virtues, and 'Eng. Lit's.' academic cohorts intent on the claims of scholarship, indicate a serious cleavage in what is still exiguous opinion. *Scrutiny* (1932-52) has contained major revaluations over a wide range of literature in addition to challenging repudiations of

'aesthetic' and 'academic' values manifest, one in the belle-lettrist tradition and the other in scholarship uninformed by critical sensibility, and of the 'associational process' which accompanies both. This brought it into conflict with Bloomsbury, which countered with charges of a 'scientific' intrusion into the proper work of aesthetic criticism, and with certain academics, who flung charges of inadequate learning against a few of *Scrutiny's* historical reassessments. In the meantime, the 'minority' weeklies and monthlies suffer a debilitation of standards which is manifest in the staggering judgements too often perpetrated in their pages. That this is not exactly a new phenomenon – witness the late nineteenth-century craze for Marie Corelli in unexpected places – does not warrant our failing to see in, say, the astonishing reaction to Colin Wilson's first book and the all too general acceptance of the 'angry decade' at something of its own valuation, unhappy portents.

### *The writer's response to his age*

The high degree of social and experiential awareness on the part of the modern writer enables us, without much difficulty, to relate social and intellectual background to the nature of literary preoccupation in our times. The matter can be approached through a realization that such 'awareness' manifests itself in very different guise in the great creative artist from what it does in, say, the social scientist, whose increased importance has been noted above. What the writer ideally commits himself to, in effect, is a process of defining the implications of experience as a prerequisite to the right ordering of personal and social life. Particularly is he the enemy of those abstractions which have clogged our consciousness as a result of the rationalist, positivist tradition. Thus he pursues his sense of the 'real' beneath the level attainable (as yet, at least) by the scientific sociologist; where the latter conceptualizes, the former, at his best, attempts to employ a more unified interplay of feeling and intellect, one which defines itself through the emotive complexities of language. He *feels into* situations rather than subjects them to rational and therefore extraverted analysis. He is essentially the practitioner of *Verstehen*!

Lawrence, indeed, in the name of that ultimate spark of spontaneity, the essential uniqueness, the essential untouchable naïvety at the centre of all true human beings, rejects both the false 'individu-



ality' of the liberal tradition and the increasing socialization of his times. His triumph was to see them as joint manifestations of the same basic outlook, involving the elevation of the 'ego or spurious self the conscious entity with which every individual is saddled' – the conceptualizing self, not the unified sensibility. In essence, too, this was his case against the positivist assault. In reaction against the abstraction of the intellect, the failure of 'reason' to capture adequately the sheer flux and flow of experience, there has been a counter-assertion of the need to convey emotional immediacy, a grasping after the moment, a subjective insistence on the force of inner feeling, what Dr Holloway, in his *Survey*, describes as the Romantic preoccupation.

T. S. Eliot's notion of the 'dissociation of sensibility', whatever it may indicate about certain movements of consciousness in the seventeenth century, reveals a diagnostic impulse of the twentieth-century poet in positing an unhealthy split between 'thought' and 'feeling'. Eliot's summing-up of Donne's sensibility: 'An idea was an experience; it modified his sensibility' implies a contemporary criticism of the conceptualizing ego. Part of its tyranny has been over the tool of the artist, language: so that Yeats repudiates the Ibsenite tradition, the drama of ideas, as that of those who 'write in the impersonal language that has come, not out of individual life, nor out of life at all, but out of the necessities of commerce, of parliament, of Board schools, of hurried journeys by rail'; and this 'death of language, this substitution of phrases as nearly impersonal as algebra for words and rhythms varying from man to man, is but a part of the tyranny of impersonal things'. Yeats, in praising Synge for being 'by nature unfitted to think a political thought', has in mind the same sort of criterion as has Eliot in appraising Henry James for having too fine a mind for it ever to be violated by an idea.

Yet, in accepting Eliot's diagnosis of 'dissociation', we are still in a world where the 'idea' is acknowledged – even if as something to 'touch and stroke', to 'feel' rather than to inter in conceptualization. What he – and Lawrence, for that matter – advocate is the *unified* sensibility; the aim is to catch 'the whole man alive' in terms of the feeling intellect, not the surrender to pure emotion. There have, however, been more extreme manifestations of irrationality – in line with a movement 'which in its various hues may be called irrational-

lism, vitalism, pragmatism or pure empiricism – all of which Santayana diagnoses as 'extreme expressions of romantic anarchy':

Immediate feeling, pure experience, is the only reality, the only fact ... Truth, according to Mr Bergson, is given only in intuitions which prolong experience just as it occurs, in its full immediacy; on the other hand, all representation, thought, theory, calculation, and discourse is so much mutilation of the truth, excusable only because imposed upon us by practical exigencies.  
(*Winds of Doctrine*, 1912)

D. H. Lawrence, with his protests against 'idealization' and his assertion of the poetry of 'the immediate present' which has 'no perfection, no consummation, nothing finished' asked:

The ideal – what is the ideal? A figment. An abstraction. ... It is a fragment of the before and after. It is a crystallized aspiration, or a crystallized remembrance: crystallized, set, finished. It is a thing set apart, in the great storehouse of eternity, the storehouse of finished things.

We do not speak of things crystallized and set apart. We speak of the instant, the immediate self, the very plasma of the self.  
(Preface to *Poems*)

Though his practice, in the main, belied his theory, for in Lawrence the intelligence always accompanies the feeling, nevertheless such formulations point to an influential notion of experience as a continuum rather than as something divisible into discrete entities. William James, the pragmatist, from whom the notion of 'stream of consciousness' partly derives, thus defines consciousness:

... consciousness, then, does not appear to itself chopped up in bits ... It is nothing jointed; it flows. A 'river' or 'stream' are the metaphors by which it is most naturally described. In talking of it hereafter, let us call it the stream of thought, of consciousness, or of subjective life.

(*Principles of Psychology*)

Psychological atomism, inherent in associationist ideas, has been challenged by 'gestalt' theories. The relationship between mind and world becomes one of 'transaction' in John Dewey's sense of the term, not 'interaction' with its implications of discreteness. To William James, as we see, experience, reality constituted a continuum.

(It is relevant to remember that Henry James, after receiving his brother's book, confessed to having been a pragmatist all his life.)

I found myself compelled to *give up* logic, fairly, squarely, irrevocably ... It has an imperishable use in human life, but that use is not to make us theoretically acquainted with the essential nature of reality ... I find myself no good warrant for even suspecting the existence of any reality of a higher denomination than that distributed and strung along and flowing sort of reality we finite beings swim in: That is the sort of reality given us, and that is the sort with which logic is so incommensurable. (op. cit.)

These tendencies, important in the development of 'stream of consciousness' fiction, were reinforced by Bergson and his assertions of the superior claims of intuition over intelligence in the apprehension of reality; the artist 'becomes the flag-bearer of intuition in its interminable struggle against logic and reason'. Where the use of words is concerned,

The truth is that the writer's art consists above all in making us forget that he uses words. The harmony he seeks is a certain correspondence between the movements of his mind and the phrasing of his speech, a correspondence so perfect that the undulations of his thought, born of the sentence, stir us sympathetically; consequently the words, taken individually, no longer count. There is nothing left but the flow of meaning which pervades the words, nothing but two minds, without the presence of an intermediary, which appear to vibrate sympathetically. The rhythm of speech has, then, no other object than the reproduction of the rhythm of thought.

Bergson praised music as the finest of the arts, and notions of *leit-motiv* and counterpoint greatly affect writings in the earlier years of the century - for example, those of Virginia Woolf and Huxley in this country and Proust abroad. The analogy is often repeated - Forster calls music the novel's 'nearest parallel'.

The Freudian unconscious, too, represents a continuum unmodified by the abstracting power of logical thought; and in an ill-guided moment, Freud referred to the unconscious as 'the true psychic reality'. The dream reveals its functioning as nearly as the 'censor' will allow; and the dream displays a curious blending and

## THE SOCIAL AND INTELLECTUAL BACKGROUND

intermingling of experiences, a telescoping of time and place which only the significantly named technique of 'free association' can, by delving below the normal levels of logic and rationality in waking life, expound. When free analysis fails, a form of symbolism is brought into operation which implies a continuity between the individual consciousness and the life of the race; and Freud linked this symbolism with that found in 'fairy tales, myths, and legends, in jokes and in folklore'.

The prevalence of such notions encouraged a number of efforts to transcend the abstracting, configurating force of the rational ego. In essence they provoke a series of 'raids on the inarticulate', the basic function of which is to seek an answer to the questions, 'Who am I and what is the nature of my experience?' They represent, that is, extreme varieties of the romantic mode. The most successful, because the most intelligently controlled, can be noted in Lawrence's attempt to probe below 'the old stable ego of the character', noted in a letter commenting on *The Rainbow*.

Those who employed a form of stream of consciousness technique, Dorothy Richardson, James Joyce, to some extent Virginia Woolf, and the inferior hangers-on, like Gertrude Stein, the Dadaists, the Futurists, the more naïve symbolists and surrealists in writing and in painting, all stem from the same root, even if the fruits they brought forth vary immensely in richness. In a world of increasing socialization, standardization, and uniformity, the aim was to stress uniqueness, the purely personal in experience; in one of 'mechanical' rationality, to assert other modes through which human beings can express themselves, to see life as a series of emotional intensities involving a logic different from that of the rational world and capturable only in dissociated images or stream of consciousness musings (The 'beats' and 'angries', in somewhat different terms, repeat in the post-war world the essential element of sexual repudiation.)

Two comments can perhaps be made. The notion of 'experience' as a 'transaction' between subject and object implies the abandonment of the two-world theory inherited from Greek disquisitions between 'appearance' and 'reality'. This may explain the concern for surfaces which has characterized a good deal of the writing of the last twenty years - 'I am a Camera'. The appearance is the reality. The modern writer and the scientist both agree at least to the extent that the

## PART ONE

life as Process and Flux, and both admit a degree of personal choice in the handling of 'experience'.

The other point is that one sees in such reassertions of the psychic balance against the influence of mechanization the rift which lies at the heart of our modern consciousness. It is true that the extremest forms – surrealism, surrender to the passing emotion – are as life-destroying as the disease they seek to cure. In a 'much-divided civilization', one, moreover, where the claims of technology are becoming increasingly insistent, the role of the greatest writers, where intellect is suffused with emotion and emotion controlled by intelligence, points a way to 'unity of being' – or, as the modern idiom has it, psychic wholeness and health. In such a fusion, intuitive insight and moral control coalesce. Obviously, it is necessary to insist (I quote Dr Leavis), 'a real literary interest is an interest in man, society, and civilization'.

## NOTES

1. Cp. W. E. Houghton, *The Victorian Frame of Mind, 1830-1870*.
2. Cp. The rationalization of the coal mines by Gerald Crich in *Women in Love*. It may be that what Lawrence was getting at was 'Taylorism' or 'scientific management', which was a near-contemporary industrial manifestation. On the whole question of modern industrialism and its implications for work satisfaction and human relationships, the reader is strongly recommended to read Georges Friedmann's *Industrial Society*.
3. Professor Webb's article in the sixth volume of the *Guide* warns against over-emphasis on the homogeneity or seriousness of the Victorian reading public. Yet Miss Dalziel, in her *Popular Fiction 100 Years Ago* (1957), considers that there are grounds to support Mrs Leavis's contention, made in *Fiction and the Reading Public* (1932), that there has been a deterioration in the quality of popular literature over the last hundred years, though those grounds are not quite the ones Mrs Leavis herself expresses.

---

PART

II



# THE LITERARY SCENE

JOHN HOLLOWAY

*Lecturer in English, the University of Cambridge,*

## *Introductory*

THERE are certain things which the reader should bear in mind throughout this Survey, as fundamentals in the literary scene of the last sixty or seventy years. The first is that this has been a period in which, as a result of developments in the religious, political, economic, military, and other fields, men have more and more lost faith in certain traditional ways of seeing the world. This is not a change which began in 1900. Something like it is a great feature of the cultural life of the whole nineteenth century. It has gone conspicuously further, however, in the period which concerns this chapter: a period which has seen some writers reach an ultimate point along the line of bewilderment and disillusion, and others (or indeed, the same ones at another stage or in another phase) making a new start, and ~~beginning~~ <sup>bringing</sup> out the terms of life afresh.



in part relied, half-indifferently, upon the stock literary judgement, the best-seller, and the polite-verse anthology, but which had forgotten that literature could touch life at both its deepest, and its most exhilarating.

These are familiar ideas. They have already been put forward by some of the more notable critical or social studies of our time,<sup>1</sup> and the whole question is taken further on pp. 429-41 of this book. Less often commented upon (if commented upon at all) is something which has arisen strictly within the field of serious literature and serious thinking about it, and which has given these wider facts about the mass nature and the commercialized nature of modern society a quite special importance. This is, that the period under review is one in which most important new work in literature has lent itself especially little to general consumption, or to a relaxed taste, or a taste influenced by non-literary interests. The main body of outstanding work written in the last half-century has been written under a special kind of influence which has necessarily made that work unfamiliar and difficult. This has been the influence of contemporary literature abroad; and, in the case of poetry especially, of a foreign school of poetry, that of certain late nineteenth-century French writers, whose work was uniquely condensed and obscure.

Comparison with the mid nineteenth century may make this point clearer. Poets like Tennyson and Rossetti, prose writers like Arnold, novelists like George Eliot were not of course devoid of acquaintance with foreign writing: such a suggestion would be absurd. But their interests were not concentrated on, or even much directed to, truly contemporary and *avant-garde* authors abroad. Moreover, knowledge or interest is one thing, and seeking to learn massively on fundamental questions of writing, to naturalize new basic techniques and insights, is another. These are the processes which, over the last two generations, have so often been important. Relatively speaking, the mid-Victorian period was one in which English literature pursued a self-contained course. Certainly, this contrast may be over-simplified; it is not a black and white contrast. On the other hand, in seeing the period of this survey as one of major influence from abroad, we see in it something which has been recurrent in the development of our literature over centuries. More than once in the past, a period of comparative native independence

## THE LITERARY SCENE

has been succeeded by a period of major influence from continental Europe; this has been assimilated, and once again our literature has temporarily become more self-contained in its development. Indeed (to anticipate the whole argument of this chapter), it is on just this note of partial assimilation, and increasing independence, that this survey will close.

### *The opening scene*

With these guiding ideas in mind, it is time to come to some details which may throw the changes of the last seventy years into relief; and to begin with, to reconstruct as a starting point something of the world, so different from our own, of the turn of the century.

Yeats, retrospectively in 1936, recalled the change at this very time. His tone does not invalidate what he says:

Then in 1900 everybody got down off his stilts; henceforth nobody drank absinthe with his black coffee; nobody went mad; nobody committed suicide; nobody joined the Catholic Church; or if they did I have forgotten.

(Introduction to *The Oxford Book of Modern Verse*, p. xi)

Girls' who married into the peerage (model wives, usually). Again, it means the great divorce scandals - Dilke, Parnell, Lady Colin Campbell. The third of these gave Frank Harris's scandal-journalism its first great opportunity and doubled his paper's circulation, all of them perhaps did something to strengthen the new preoccupations of Hardy's *Jude the Obscure* (1896), and certainly supplied the scene for Pinero's *The Second Mrs Tanqueray* (1893) and Wilde's ironically named *An Ideal Husband* (1895). It is against this richly varied background, and as in a real sense not only the critic but also the chronicler of this world; its chronicler with unrivalled fullness, insight, and humanity, that Henry James must be seen.

*The Spoils of Poynton* (1897) is James's dramatization of the conflict between what Arnold would have called the 'Barbarian' aspect of this plutocracy, and the 'Aesthetic' one: first the vulgarizing, Edwardianizing Mona Brigstock, with her aspirations to transform the house of priceless art treasures by installing a winter garden and a billiard room; second Mrs Gareth, the 'treasure hunter' as James called her, yet herself a vulgarian in conduct (albeit an elegant one) and conscious of the fineness only of fine 'Things'. James makes it clear enough that Poynton in no way stands for the traditions of a true and enduring aristocracy. It has no special claim to its 'Spoils'. They are spoils in the full, satiric sense; the work of another Lord Duveen. The fire which destroys the house at the end (it is one of James's few triumphs purely as a descriptive writer) is no mere re-using of the closing move of Meredith's *Harry Richmond* (1871) or Hardy's *A Laodicean* (1881). James is making clear, finally, the worth as he sees it of 'Spoils' in life.

By the same token, *The Awkward Age* (1899) is not a title which refers merely to the dawning womanhood of its heroine. It is the age as a whole which is awkward: the reign of a plutocracy (shoe magnates, aristo-bureaucrats, an upper class whose chief media of living are elegant talk and the *liaison*) in which an older, plainer kind of integrity is neither possible nor, save to the peculiarly astute, even recognizable. In several of James's more important short stories, the plutocracy of his time is studied from the point of view of the writer: over and over again James reveals his conviction, sometimes with bitterness, that the social world of his time at bottom had little to offer the artist save a velvet-gloved exploitation and the kind of hollow applause which destroyed his real life and real work. *The*

*Lesson of the Master* (1888) and *Brooksmith* (1891) show the writer betraying his art through eagerness for pretty wives and the social viceroy in which they mainly shone; *Broken Wings* (1900), a man and a woman writer who, for the illusory opulence of a life of country-house visits and the rest, have bartered away not only their best work but also their real lives as lovers. In *The Death of the Lion* (1894) the demands of the literary hostess upon her 'lion' are ultimately those of a homicide. *The Coxon Fund* (1894) shows the other side of the coin: literary patronage issues from a world without grasp or standards ('fancy constituting an endowment without establishing a tribunal - a bench of competent people - of judges') and can therefore do nothing but first select a largely bogus talent and then corrupt it. These two stories were both first published in *The Yellow Book* (1894-7): a fact which serves as reminder that James was nearer to the 'Aesthetic Movement' than one might now assume from the massive moral seriousness of his work; and that for him, aesthetic perfection and moral significance were not opposed but - as in truth they are - complementary aspects of a single reality.

The interest of James, in this context, does not quite stop there. That one after another of his stories is about story-writing itself is an index, perhaps, that the world in which he moved did not give him as rich a field of real life as he craved for on behalf of the novelist.<sup>3</sup> Deeply and strongly as he saw into that world and grasped its limitations, those limitations elusively grasped him as well. This survey is not the place to enter into a full evaluation of the varied body of James's work. The problem here is of how that work belongs to and reflects its period: its place in a general scheme. In regard to this it seems as if what is best in James's work points mainly back to his American origin; and that the British (or in part European) scene of the turn of the century, as he used it in his later works, gave him something which in part he could turn to good effect, but not wholly so. James's distinction lies in the quick yet strong intelligence which unerringly controls his work; in the clarity and nobility of his moral vision; and in his great sense of the richness and beauty of what at least is potential in human life. These qualities of intelligence, integrity, and idealism, this sense of what life can offer, are forcibly reminiscent of what was best in the culture of New England, Boston, Harvard, and New York in which James grew up. James's work

work is largely set in America; and in it these qualities are intact (*The Europeans*, 1878; *Washington Square*, 1880). His genuineness is completely and splendidly reassuring in the larger and more ambitious *Portrait of a Lady* (1881). The work of his closing years, however, cannot be seen in quite the same light. He saw deficiencies in the kind of complexity and refinement which characterized this later period; yet these very things seem to colour his later work. As his world becomes more multitudinously self-reflecting and variegated, a doubt more and more preoccupies the reader. The doubt is, whether James's many-dimensional kaleidoscope of surfaces is after all a true revelation of deeper life in the characters, or only a wonderful simulacrum of deeper life. Nor can that doubt but be strengthened by James's growing tendency to invest his interplaying surfaces with all the grandiosity of Edwardian opulence; his growing dependence on words for his characters and their doings like 'fine', 'lovely', 'beautiful', 'tremendous', 'large', 'grand' ('they insisted enough that "stupendous" was the word': *The Wings of the Dove*, 1902, chapter 34); and this not as part of a total view, admire-but-judge, but rather of characters whom he endorses out and out. In the end, one is inclined to conclude that James and Sargent were not near neighbours quite for nothing. Nor is to perceive this to deny James's exhilaration and indeed his greatness; but to recognize that he was of his time.

Conrad has, as his strongest link with James in literary terms, his sense of life as a sustained struggle in moral terms: an issue between good and evil, in the fullest sense of these words, which individual men find they cannot evade. But James and Conrad should be seen together in the period in which they wrote, because the latter, with the former, is registering, and searchingly criticizing, basic realities of his time. Moreover, Conrad's realities relate to those which pre-occupied James. *Nostromo* (1904), unquestionably Conrad's masterpiece, provides the definitive picture of how Western financial imperialism (that its roots are American makes no difference), profling to bring to an equatorial American society material advancement and an end to the picturesque banditry of the past, in fact brings only spiritual emptiness and an unnoticed compromise with principle, or progressive blindness to it.

It may seem wilful to link, to Conrad's richness of substance, deep humanity of insight, and comprehensive, almost faultless control,

the name of Kipling. Yet to see in Kipling only a vulgar Imperialist is crude. His values are largely the mid-Victorian ones of earnest effort and personal genuineness (*The Mary Gloster* or *MacAndrew's Hymn*, 1894). His chief aversion was to the smooth representatives of plutocracy who both censure and exploit the pioneering generation (*Gentleman Rankers*, 1892; *The Explorer*, 1898; *The Pro-consuls*, 1905). His chief fear, the point of *Recessional* (1897), was that the exploiters, the parasites, were winning. What limits his achievement is that he submits to the trend of his time. Even as a poet, he writes for the audience to which his journalistic years directed him, and the result is an embarrassingly buoyant heavy-handedness under which the finer distinctions disappear and the plainest issues of good and evil seem without weight. This applies also to his prose, though it must be remembered that in *Kim* (1901), at least, there is an immediacy, richness, and exactitude which put Kipling high among the chroniclers of British expansion.

Kim's Russian agents were in the Himalayas. Other writers were to sense, nearer home, some of the threats to the world of opulent liberalism. Conrad's *Under Western Eyes* (1911) depicts the nineteenth-century Russian police state with the brilliance of one who knew it at first hand; and is little less outstanding in dealing with the extremist exiles from it in Western Europe. In *The Secret Agent* (1907) it is not the terrorists themselves, but the (thinly disguised) Russian embassy and its agent provocateur which preoccupy the author. James's *The Princess Casamassima* (1886) cannot be seen as dealing successfully either with Bakuninism or with the life and mind of the London poor. But that James of all writers should have taken up the subject is itself illuminating; it is a forcible reminder of how widely the writers of the closing years of the nineteenth century were aware of all that existed in their society outside its circle of opulence. One can see, in this work, an awareness in James of those forces which were soon to bring sweeping social changes, and in the end, contribute decisively to the transformed social scene of two generations later. If the *fin de siècle* or Edwardian periods were opulent, it was an opulence which arose out of a sea of poverty. General Booth's *In Darkest England* (1890) began with an account of the opening up of Central Africa only to point out that there was a social jungle, with its three million slaves to destitution, at home. Hardy, in both his prose and verse

reflected the rural side of poverty and deprivation. Gissing (*The Unclassed*, 1884) revealed a London which seemed to have lost the variegatedness it had for Dickens, and to have become a sea of undifferentiated anonymity which destroyed all the individual's vital energies.

### *New influences in fiction*

One section of Gissing's most forceful work, *The New Grub Street* (1891), is especially helpful in throwing light on what was happening in English fiction towards the close of the century. In Chapter 10 of this book, several of the characters discuss the kinds of novel they would like to write. Among them, they stress the importance for fiction of new ideas in natural history (above all, Darwin) and religious thinking. This fact is helpful in that it is a brief reminder of how English fiction had for several decades been coming to deal with new and more 'intellectual' subjects; had been gaining, as with Hardy and indeed Meredith, a dimension which might almost be called philosophical. George Eliot's fiction offers a contrast with that of Dickens, or Thackeray, because of her comprehensive, systematic sense of society and the inter-relations within it: a sense which must owe something to her early study of the social sciences and contact with the circle of the *Westminster Review*. The trend had been going on for some time, and it remains important for a twentieth-century writer like Bennett. The debate in *The New Grub Street*, however, is about something else altogether, and this new factor is one which becomes more important towards the end of the century. As to what the fiction they would like to write, Gissing's characters are conscious that Dickens's treatment of common life is lacking in interest, because of his leanings towards humour and melodrama; they also consider Zola's treatment of common, everyday life as more intelligent, comprehensive, seemingly non-committal – as a contrast and superior alternative to Dickens.

Here, in this interest in the impact of the continental model, is a basic and enduring new dimension. Zola's *L'Assommoir* (1877) was the detailed model not only for the Victorian melodrama *Drink* (1879; arranged by Charles Reade) but also for George Moore's *A Mummer's Wife* (1886), the first serious attempt in English at fiction like Zola's; and to some extent though the influence of Dickens

is also asserting itself) for Maugham's first novel *Liza of Lambeth* (1897). Arnold Bennett's work displays not only the influence of the new, systematic, intellectual approach to fiction ('Herbert Spencer's *First Principles*, by filling me up with the sense of causation everywhere, has altered my whole view of life ... you can see *First Principles* in nearly every line I write', Bennett says in his *Journals* for September 1910) but the French influence as well. 'I ought during the last month to have read nothing but de Goncourt,' he wrote when *Anna of the Five Towns* was begun; or again, 'The achievements of the finest French writers, with Turgenev and Tolstoi, have set a standard for all coming masters of fiction' (*Journals*, Sept. 1896, Jan. 1899). James and Conrad, as will transpire later, in part belong to this story also.

The newer influences were not only French. It is not a long step from the realism of Flaubert or Zola to that of Ibsen; and when Ibsen decisively 'arrived' in the 1891 season of G. T. Grein's Independent Theatre Group,<sup>4</sup> Shaw not only decided that Ibsen's topical concern with current abuses was his most conspicuous achievement (*The Quintessence of Ibsenism*, 1891), but himself followed at once in the same direction as a writer. Admittedly, we do not now see this kind of topicality as Ibsen's chief merit: but the point at issue for the present is the importance of continental influences, and Shaw's response to Ibsen is another aspect of this. *Widowers' Houses* (1892) was staged the year after the Ibsen season (by the same director and company in the same theatre) and it was the first in a series of plays which were Ibsenite in dealing with questions and abuses of the day, though by no means in the Irish rhodomontade with which they did so. These included *Mrs Warren's Profession* (written 1893), *Man and Superman* (1903), and *Major Barbara* (1907); the two latter works reflecting Ibsen's own particular interest in problems connected with the 'New Woman'.

Ibsen was also the recurrent point of reference (reference largely, though by no means wholly, by opposition)<sup>5</sup> for Yeats as he developed his ideas of poetic drama in the 1890s and early 1900s. Long before James in a number of critical essays had struggled repeatedly with what he saw as the radical defect of the whole French school, its pre-occupation with the drab intricacies of mere material or sensual or narrowly sexual realities at the expense of genuinely humane and



spiritual insight. Moreover, James studied foreign literature deeply, but he was clear that learning from abroad had to go with continuing to learn from what had been done at home. He pointed to George Eliot as a writer who had achieved the massive and integrated richness of external or material facts of writers like Flaubert or Zola, without forfeiting realism in a richer sense, the realism which sees into psychology, character, and moral values.

On the other hand, he had stressed how Turgenev had also achieved this richer, more humane realism in some respects more successfully than George Eliot. It is important to see how the native strand and the foreign were working together. George Eliot was also singled out for just such praise in the first decisive Western European recognition of the greatness of Russian fiction, de Vogue's *Le Roman russe* (1886, translated 1913); and this work began to exercise an immediate effect on English thinking about fiction. George Moore wrote the Introduction for a re-issue of Dostoevski's *Poor Folk* (1894), and Edward and Constance Garnett's translations from Turgenev began to appear during the nineties. In Galsworthy's *Villa Rubicini* (1900) and Conrad's *Under Western Eyes*, the influence of Turgenev is clear; though Conrad's novel may in part satirize what it draws on. Tolstoy's influence dates also from this period, which is that of Arnold's essay on him (1887); his *Kreutzer Sonata* (1889) helped to intensify the questioning of the marriage institution in the 1890s, and his radical thinking on art and society were influential too. The vogue of Dostoevski came later, among the sufferings and disorientation of the 1914-18 war. All in all, the Russian impact was a profound one. It related to matters of technique, at one extreme, and of the spirit in which both art and life were conducted at the other.<sup>6</sup>

It is difficult to sum up in specific detail what was acquired from abroad by each individual writer. In James, French influence shows in such things as his reproving Trollope for lack of detachment in portraying character (Trollope was too much the Thackerayan 'puppet-master'); in his intense interest in self-conscious construction, controlled tone, and calculated effect ('Ah, this divine conception of one's little masses and periods in the scenic light - as rounded Acts'); or in his repeated imitation of how Flaubert in *Madame Bovary* (1857), say, shows the whole course of the novel from the standpoint of the central character. If James's immense admiration

for Turgenev can be localized in his work, it lies in the poetry, tenderness, and tact with which he handles some of his scenes – the heroine's tea-party in *The Awkward Age*, for example. Bennett, despite his admiration for the Russians, seldom has this deep feeling, restraint, and dignity; the humanity of his characters (*Riceman Steps*, 1923, illustrates this well) tends to be submerged in analysis of how they are the creatures of their environment. But Bennett's sense of half-impersonal historical continuity (notably in *The Old Wives Tale*, 1908), and his accumulation of factual detail to produce a dense and rich, if limited, context for the action, are achievements of no mean order, and clearly show the influence of Zola.

Conrad's rigid economy of style, his taut and sequacious construction, his effects that seem so carefully timed, have their counterparts in Flaubert or Stendhal rather than in any Victorian novelist. Lawrence in a letter of 1 February 1913 likens his own work to that of Cehov in contrast to 'the rule and measure mathematical folk' – Shaw, Galsworthy, Barker. He is in fact speaking of plays; but the parallel and the contrast are plain enough in his short stories also. Moreover, there is a poetry and symbolism, a poignant strangeness, and often a seemingly disjointed surface creating in the end a deep inner unity, which are plain in his work as they are also, in different terms, in that of Virginia Woolf or Ford Madox Ford. Such qualities have no clear counterpart in mid-nineteenth-century English fiction; though they have, undoubtedly, in Dostoevski. In the end, however, these suggestions must be taken as exploratory: the detailed work in these fields has still in large part to be done.

### *Tradition and experiment in poetry*

Late-nineteenth-century French literature had not been Realist only. If it had included Zola and the brothers Goncourt, it had also included Rimbaud and Mallarmé and Laforgue; and the early-twentieth-century movement in English poetry which came to terms with these writers should be seen as part of a whole continental impact. But there is a prior question: what sort of poetry occupied, as it were, the field? Upon what in English poetry did the influence of continental models impinge?

Just as in discussing developments in fiction it was important not to oversimplify the picture of the mid nineteenth century in England,

## PART TWO

and necessary to remember that that period included George Eliot just as much as it did Dickens; so it is important to remember the complexity and variety of the situation in poetry. Dr Leavis has said: 'Nineteenth-century poetry was characteristically preoccupied with the creation of a dream-world.' This points forcefully to much of the poetry of the later years of the nineteenth century.

Sunlight from the sun's own heart  
Flax unfolded to receive  
Out of sky and flax and art  
Lovely raiment I achieve  
Summer is time for beauty's flowering  
For the exuberance of day,  
And the cool of the evening,  
Summer is time for play,  
And for joy, and the touch of tweed.

That, without a word altered, is part poem from the closing pages of the *Oxford Book of Victorian Verse*, and part tailor's advertisement (c. 1950) from a Sunday newspaper. It brings out not merely what was worst in the verse of the later nineteenth century, but also how that tradition of bad poetry was something which created an established taste for itself: a taste, a taking-for-granted, which could later be exploited by the world of commerce because it was in no way essentially different from that world. One can glimpse, in the very possibility of amalgamating those two passages, some of the underlying causes why the poetry of Pound and Eliot should have seemed, to the man in the street and also to much organized literary taste, an affront to what was truly poetic.

Yet to think of the later nineteenth century as typically represented by 'Sunlight from the sun's own heart' and rubbish like it would be to oversimplify here; and later, when this survey moves forward to the period after Eliot, to render the task of comprehension and integration much more difficult. ('Not all of the poetry, or all of the poets', Dr Leavis added to his remark just quoted.) 'Dream-world' is a term which does not bring out the strength – though one must add at once that it was a modest strength – of much later nineteenth-century verse; and once that relatively sound and strong kind has been identified, it can be seen as a tradition of English verse which is firmly in being before the time of Pound and Eliot, and which

## THE LITERARY SCENE

runs steadily through, and after, the years in which they were making their impact.

This other tradition of verse displays a use of language which is unquestionably vernacular, but more deliberate (one might put it) than to be termed colloquial; an intimate, personal, yet unassertive tone; a modest lyric artistry; and a thoughtful receptivity before the poet's environment, especially nature seen in a somewhat domestic way, by the cottage not on the mountain. Later developments in English poetry will prove baffling to those who do not recognize the quality and provenance of this kind of verse, and its strength as a tradition in being at the close of the nineteenth and in the early twentieth century. Here it is in Hardy's *An August Midnight* (1899):

A shaded lamp and a waving blind,  
And the beat of a clock from a distant floor:  
On this scene enter - winged, horned, and spined -  
A longlegs, a moth, and a dumbledore;  
While 'mid my page there idly stands  
A sleepy fly that rubs its hands ...



sex and to cruelty which not infrequently seems disquietingly ambivalent. So devious, so various, are the signs that a way of life can no longer abundantly sustain a body of literature.

The new poetry which came into being from about 1910 did not modify the English tradition which has just been discussed, but departed sharply from it. This new poetry looked not to the countryside, but to the great city.<sup>2</sup> Already, in this fact alone, the complex story of its affiliations begins to emerge. From one point of view, Eliot's 1917 poems (*Preludes*, *Rhapsody on a Windy Night*) stand in a loose continuity with Laforgue, with Rimbaud's *Illuminations*,<sup>9</sup> and above all with the *Tableaux Parisiens* of Baudelaire, probably the first poet in Europe to take his stand as the poet of the '*Fournil-laite cité, cité pleine de rêves*' of which the poet can say '*tout pour moi devient allégorie*'. As Eliot said, '(Baudelaire) gave new possibilities to poetry in a new stock of images from contemporary life.'<sup>10</sup> The new poetry was also a city poetry, however, in a rather special sense. After all, verse like Hardy's 'A Wife in London' or Henley's 'London Voluntaries' was about city life. The new poetry goes much further. It is written by, and for, a metropolitan intelligentsia. This explains the polyglot, cosmopolitan interests which lie behind it, and of which its continuity with French poets<sup>11</sup> is only one part; for Pound's attention to the literature of the Far East, Eliot's Sanskrit and Hindu studies, are others.

Moreover, there is a further way in which this body of verse belongs not to the modern city in general, but rather to one distinctive group within it. To a greater or lesser extent it rests upon a repudiation of the broad city middle class, the commercial bourgeoisie. This was the class which for several reasons, but in particular for its failure to respond to the work of the Abbey Theatre, notably Synge, in Dublin during the 1900s, had disgusted Yeats. That modern poetry started with this repudiation of the broad city middle class affords a link between the new poets of the 1910s and those of the Aesthetic Movement of the 1890s, and helps one to see how it was natural enough that Pound's earliest verse should have *fin-de-siècle* qualities, or that like the nineties poets Pound should have had a special interest in Old French or Provençal. The poem emerges in early essays of Yeats like *What is Popular Poetry* (1900) written under the imm



Unaffected by 'the march of events',  
 He passed from men's memory in *l'an trentiesme*  
*De son eage*; the case presents  
 No adjunct to the M $\ddot{u}$ se's diadem.

The sub-title is *E. P. Ode pour l'Electi $\ddot{o}$ n de son Sepulchre*: that is to say, a dryly ironical imitation of Ronsard becomes the vehicle by which the minority poet will express his sense of failure in a society which is radically hostile to serious art ('a half-savage country'). But the astringent compression, the powerful suggestiveness of these widely ranging but tightly juxtaposed references to literature, mythology, and public life, pass beyond intellectual excitingness to achieve true and deep feeling. The 'elegance of Circe's hair' image, picked up again in the 'Muse's diadem', conveys Pound's service to a destructive enchantress; but this is, at one and the same time, true devotion to Penelope, his faithful mate and equal. Again, the poet is seen at once as the wily Odysseus and a crafty fisherman ('obstinate isles'), and also, through the terse reference implied in '*l'an trentiesme de son eage*', as the hapless, hopeless Villon. The mottoes on sundials which he misses are not only those about transience, but those about happiness too. His acute predicament emerges movingly from these seeming-fragments, dry and sophisticated.

But something has been omitted from this account of development. What has been said so far can largely explain *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* ('an attempt to condense the Jamesian novel', Pound called it),<sup>10</sup> and still more so the new astringency, bluntness, irony, many-sidedness, vernacular quality – and emotional charge – of such poems as Yeats's *The Fascination of What's Difficult*, or Eliot's *Mr Apollinax*. But Yeats's *The Second Coming* (1921) or Eliot's *The Waste Land* (1922) strike a new note, and one that contradicts Yeats's early ideas, or those of the French poets discussed above.

'On Margate Sands.  
 I can connect  
 Nothing with nothing.  
 The broken fingernails of dirty hands.  
 My people humble people who expect  
 Nothing.'



of French influence touched upon earlier (see the reference to Conrad, p. 61 above). The seeming casualness of tone and randomness of organization in this book are in fact remarkable displays of judgement and insight exercising themselves through technical artistry.

If this novel has an underlying defect, it is one to which one might also point in works by Arnold Bennett. Both novelists, inclined to seek a representation of life which is more complete, sensitive, and humane than what they found in de Maupassant or Zola, were a little inclined to do so on too easy terms. The result is a certain relaxing of detachment and control; a manipulatory holding up of the characters and their situation for comprehension, sympathy, a feeling of pathos even, which betrays the general influence of Dickens or Thackeray in the background. The Tietjens books probably lack the delicacy of perception and movement of indisputably great fiction. But in their large, loose organization, their outstanding resilience and vitality, and their comprehensive, unflinching grasp of a complex pattern of cultural change, they are very notable works; and they suggest that Russian fiction (with its assured achievement in displaying how near the order of art can come to the disorder of life, and how novels may have poignant compassion, sympathy, and insight without manipulation or straining for emotion) was once again exerting its influence upon English.

Virginia Woolf put this better. Speaking of the novels of Turgenev she said: 'They are so short and yet they hold so much. The emotion is so intense and yet so calm. The form is in one sense so perfect, in another so broken.'<sup>21</sup> In her own complex of affiliations, the Russian one is clear enough; but a complex it certainly is, and other links are clearer. Behind her emphatic repudiation of the pedestrian, in a sense the peripheral realism of Bennett or Wells,<sup>22</sup> lies not only a more sharply differentiated concern for art as such, but also a sense of the inexhaustible interest and significance and goodness of experience, even at its most immediate and transient, which connects her with G. E. Moore (in a work like *Principia Ethica*, 1903), and with Walter Pater. This side of Virginia Woolf, at its slightest, can be disconcerting. It leads occasionally to a kind of perky incompleteness in her criticism, and an almost dithery brightness in her fiction, in which there is even a streak of vulgarity ('somehow or other, loveliness is infernally sad': *Jacob's Room*, 1922).

Yet to say no more than that is to caricature. Her preoccupation with the immediate and always-changing surface of life is based upon substantial grounds. These are much the grounds which Bergson would have offered for the same preference; and it is noteworthy that her well-known remark in the essay on *Modern Fiction* (1919), 'life is not a series of gig-lamps symmetrically arranged; life is a luminous halo, a semi-transparent envelope' seems to be following a passage in Bergson's *Introduction to Metaphysics* (1904).<sup>23</sup> But if the lamps are Bergson's, the luminous halo and the envelope may come from Henry James's *Art of Fiction* (1884).

Another possible link, this time with painting, must also be noticed. Virginia Woolf's concern for surface impression and immediacy brings Monet to mind, and the infiltration of the Impressionist painter's vision at least into poetry is something which may be often traced in English poetry from the 1880s on: but she was also in the circle of Roger Fry, whose main achievement was to introduce English taste to the first generation of Post-Impressionist painters (Cézanne, Van Gogh, and the rest) in the famous London exhibitions of 1910 and 1912. Virginia Woolf is no Cézanne, but if Cézanne used the discoveries of earlier Impressionist painters in order to capture not the surface but the essence of his subjects, it is not altogether pointless to liken her to him. Her best work embodies a vision of how richly the immediacy of experience engages also what is substantial in experience; a sense reminiscent of James (though flimsy by comparison) that life's delicate surfaces reveal what T. S. Eliot has called 'the bottom and the horror and the glory' which can be just below them. Virginia Woolf brings to the more aesthetic or Impressionist side of her work an interest in human values which plainly shows the influence of her father, Leslie Stephen. The 'stream of consciousness' which her writing endeavours to capture (and for this purpose she was no inconsiderable technical innovator) reflects a genuine humanity, a real and compassionate concern for what makes life rich and what dries it up.

Finally, her position in these matters fits properly into its historical context. It is the position of the liberal intellect and mystic in the post-war world. Fullness of individual life stands over against social dominance. *Mrs Dalloway* (1925) is polarized between the abundant and unisistent life of the heroine, and the short not having of experience

of Sir William Bradshaw, the doctor who drives his shell-shocked patient to suicide. In *To the Lighthouse* (1927), life and the self-assertive negation of life interact within the experiences of Mr Ramsay, of his children, even of Mrs Ramsay herself.

If there is a lack in Virginia Woolf's work, it is that she has also the weakness of the liberal intellectual. It is a lack not of values but of confidence, ultimately of vitality. What she cares for is always made tentative and exploratory, and — she is typical of the period after 1918 in this — it survives within a perimeter of threatening violence, deeply feared and half-understood. The meaningless death of the hero of *Jacob's Room* in battle; the thread of tragedy and brutality running so close to life's most exquisite striations in *Mrs Dalloway*, the suppressed vindictiveness of *To the Lighthouse*, the spiritual deprivation, squalor, physical violence, that everywhere surround the village pageant in *Between the Acts* (1940), all at bottom reflect the plight of the liberal in the modern world. It is surely significant that the same two attitudes — a care for the immediacy of private living, a sense of its being surrounded and threatened by meaningless violence — combine prominently in the work of E. M. Forster. It shows that the plight of the liberal was one which could be diagnosed before 1914; and in Forster's works also, the pervasive sense is of how the good of life, ordinary kindly private living, is everywhere surrounded by unpredictable violence, the product of random change or of uncomprehending self-assertiveness. If Forster, in the end, is a less exciting but more reassuring novelist than Virginia Woolf, it is because, though he lacks her exuberant subtlety of sensuous perception, he never radiantly obscures what is central to his purpose by technical virtuosity. His integrity is always, sometimes even a little nudely, in view. Moreover, he ranges further than Virginia Woolf, and is more aware than she of how the goodness of private experience is something which the individual shares with others. *A Passage to India* (1922) has a humanity and modesty, a plain and strong sense of values, and at the same time a half-poetic imaginativeness, which put it far above his other works, and above anything of Virginia Woolf's also.

The works of Forster and Virginia Woolf represent an early phase in a probing and challenging of that polite liberal culture which, more and more, came to seem radically incommensurate with the challenges confronting it in the twentieth century. That it did so has

been a fundamental reality of the period, and a recurrent feature of its fiction. In the novels of Huxley, too, there is a sense of a world of cultivated people closely surrounded by a bigger world of horror and brutality: 'At this very moment ... the most frightful horrors are taking place in every corner of the world ... screams of pain and fear go pulsing through the air ... after travelling for three seconds they are perfectly inaudible'; 'The Black and Tans harry Ireland, the Poles maltreat the Silesians, the bold Fascisti slaughter their poorer countrymen: we take it all for granted. Since the war we wonder at nothing' (*Crome Yellow*, 1921).

But in Huxley the doubts have entered deeper than in Forster or Virginia Woolf. They impugn the centre itself; and leave in his works a paradoxical central emptiness, in that the writer seems still to believe in the elements of the culture he knows (music, art, rational conversation) but sees only a restless sterilized fatuity in those who transmit that culture. It is, indeed, the world of one part of the 1920s: that of the first jazz, the Charleston, the first sports cars. In Huxley's later novels (as in *Eyeless in Gaza*, 1936, where a dog falls from an aeroplane to bespatter the liveliest intimacies of two roof-top lovers) the sense of circumambient violence has become obsessive; and in the novels of Evelyn Waugh (e.g. *Decline and Fall*, 1928) a further stage still may perhaps be traced. Here, the social group is an élite of money rather than ostensible culture, but even so it is not far remote from Huxley's; yet now the elements of culture are themselves valueless. There is nothing for a world of absurd violence either to surround or threaten; the result is to make violence both ubiquitous and insignificant.

Wyndham Lewis's later work throws his earlier work into a new focus, and shows him not only as one of the major destructive critics of our time, but as seeing in fundamental terms what the writers just discussed saw in isolation or did not see so much as merely use.<sup>24</sup> In *The Apes of God* (1930) Lewis does little more than toy disgustedly with the social levels that also half repulsed Huxley. But in *The Revenge for Love* (1939) and still more in *Self Condemned* (1951), what threatens life is seen not as among the preoccupations of a class, but as having its roots deep in the modernity of the modern world, committed as this is to the rhythms of the great city and the machine. The machine, moreover, can take control of men's lives because in the end there is something of the mechanical even about men them-

selves; the idea is already clear enough in *Tarr* (1918) and in the outstanding short stories published in *The Wild Body* (1927). The same insights are prominent in Lewis's remarkable paintings. There are things to be said against his sprawling works and his largely (not wholly) negative vision, but it must also be said that Lewis is the only English writer who establishes his full comprehension of the basic realities of life in a mid-twentieth-century society, that of a mass civilization, wholly mechanized and essentially megalopolitan. His last important work, *The Human Age* (1955), is perhaps the most memorable picture, in the form of fable rather than realistic fiction, that we have of our own time.

Lewis was no isolated phenomenon: he was one of the great seminal creative group of whom the main figures were Eliot, Epstein, and Pound. His work, straddling literature and the visual arts, reproduced the range of interest of the group as a whole; and Pound's immediate recognition of his power (*Letters*, 9 March 1916) should be known:

Lewis has just sent in the first dozen drawings ... the thing is stupendous. The vitality, the fullness of the man! Nobody has any conception of the volume and energy and the variety ... It is not merely knowledge of technique, or skill, it is intelligence and knowledge of life, of the whole of it, beauty, heaven, hell, sarcasm, every kind of whirlwind of force and emotion.

Probably the most enigmatic associate of this group, however, remains to be mentioned. It was Joyce. Like Pound, Joyce has a link with the Aesthetic Movement of the nineties, and it shows in his early poems and in some of the most evocative passages of his early short stories (*Dubliners*, 1914). The independent reality of art is endorsed in *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*, which Pound published in *The Egoist* in 1916; but that work is also a searchingly realistic picture of intense emotion and decisive spiritual development. Moreover, although Joyce took his stand as a rebel against Irish life and the Roman Catholic religion which dominated it, this novel shows how deeply his own mind had been influenced by both. The combined variety and shabbiness of the social milieu, and the rich facility and inventiveness of language, point to Joyce's emergence from a distinctively Irish society; the pervasive sense of incessant sinfulness and incessant

redemption point to his roots in Catholicism. All these things retain their importance (indeed, they extend further) in his later fiction.

Joyce's admiration had also gone out to the realism that gave ample place to the sordid: he found it in Ibsen, and it led him to his own play *Exiles* (1918). Again, his frequent residences in France and consequent contact with French experimental writing, as also his connexions with Pound and Eliot, brought him to a turning away from logic, to a reliance upon laconic juxtaposition as the staple ordering principle of contemporary literature, and to a densening verbal texture, until the kaleidoscopic inter-relatedness and inter-suggestiveness of his work make it, in some respects, a clearer example of the linguistic idea of Symbolist writers than anything else in English.

Thus, many lines of origin and development help to create the difficulty of Joyce's case. Taken even at its simplest, there is a problem about the consciousness of reality revealed by his chief novel: *Ulysses* (1922). This work, first published in part in *The Little Review*, which Pound edited from 1917, carries realism to the length of an encyclopedic portrayal of one single day, pursued by the author with dogged yet inexhaustible vitality. The result is a unique picture of life, seen (paradoxically) with disillusion and delight at one and the same time. Joyce stands as the last and in some ways unique member of the most gifted of a line of novelists, running back through the previous century, who sought to depict the inner radiance of the most ordinary and commonplace in how men live. His wit and insight enter life at its littlest, its most trivial; yet his prurience can even seem to infect the writer (Lowell has called it 'dirty-mindedness'); but his vitality and many-sidedness maintain a true sense of human sympathy and genuine care for the very same time.

unhesitating medley of pastiche, quotation, extravaganza, dramatization, complex literary allusion, all interfuse with story and character and grotesque realistic immediacy so as to create the richness and heterogeneity of a new cosmos. *Ulysses* itself is an undoubted masterpiece: whether *Finnegans Wake* (1939), which pushes much further in the same directions, is a success, the present writer had best admit that he cannot say: the book is beyond him.

### *The search for values in poetry*

There is a diagnosis, a representation of life, in both Huxley and Joyce; though it is much more impressive in the latter than in the former. But literature can be something which is distinguishable from a representation of life. It can offer to re-invigorate the very forces which lend life validity. T. S. Eliot made clear his own concern for this function of literature in his essay on *The Pensées of Pascal* (1931). Here he implicitly contrasts his own position with that of 'the unbeliever' who

... is, as a rule, not so greatly troubled to explain the world to himself, nor so greatly distressed by its disorder; nor is he generally concerned (in modern terms) to 'preserve values' ...

*The Waste Land* (1922) is, from the point of view of its substance, an attempt, articulated with peculiar clarity, to diagnose the 'disorder'; to render its challenge inescapably insistent; and in its final section to deliver a 'message' emphasizing certain human values, on the strength of which the poet can add, 'Shall I at least set my lands in order?' Admittedly, there is something a little arbitrary or bookish about Eliot's solution, which suddenly makes its appearance from the Upanishads; but this is representative of a certain negativeness or distaste in the face of experience which runs widely through Eliot's earlier work.

Yeats goes far beyond the present train of thought. He does not have his roots in the Aesthetic Movement for nothing, nor for harm only; and if he had never written a line of 'prophetic' verse, he would still be a major poet for his great body of lyric and dramatic poems (*The Cold Heaven*, 1914; *An Irish Airman Foresees his Death*, 1919; *Leda and the Swan*, 1928; *Long-legged Fly*, 1939, are merely a few among many). Moreover, as perhaps the last of these poems makes

clear. Yeats's outlook and philosophy (and his philosophy of history) are sometimes present in his verse when they do not dominate it. Those who rightly see Yeats's knowledge of the Neo-Platonist tradition widely in both his later verse and later drama should bear in mind that Yeats chiefly valued the philosophy for the poetry, not conversely:

... ours is the main road, the road of naturalness and swiftness, and we have thirty centuries on our side. We alone can 'think like a wise man, yet express ourselves like the common people'. These new men are goldsmiths, working with a glass screwed into one eye, whereas we stride ahead of the crowd, its swordsmen, its jugglers, looking to right and left. 'To right and left' - by which I mean that we need, like Milton, Shakespeare, Shelly, vast sentiments, generalizations supported by tradition.<sup>23</sup>

Here may be seen Yeats's enduring sense of the poet as taking up a stance and sustaining a role. That in its turn should probably be seen as one aspect of Yeats's distinctive position: not an English but an Irish poet. Sometimes, as with Joyce, language could also for him be a rich and splendid and even intoxicating thing. Yeats's adaptation of the minority views of the French poets to the special conditions of Ireland, with its archaic Western peasantry that still had something of the Homeric about them, has already been noticed (p. 66 above). Essentially Irish too were his points of reference in history, from his early attachment to the Irish Heroic Age, to his later admiration of the eighteenth-century Ascendancy. *An Irish Airman Foresees his Death* brings out in how un-English a way Yeats naturally saw the events of the 1914-18 war which had so affected English poets; and if it is true that he, as much as any writer, saw the quality of nightmare in his own time, it is true also that he did so through distinctively Irish realities:



## PART TWO

doubt) by the period of 'Troubles' in Ireland which were a direct consequence of that war, coinciding with it and prolonged after it.

Yet if Yeats's more or less esoteric philosophy of history explains and dramatizes both good and evil in the world, it is not this philosophy which his work advances as a source of re-invigoration, so much as a direct sense, fiercely individual and immediate, of the ultimate validity of life itself; a validity of which the living moment is the sole and decisive warrant. This is the conviction which blazes out in *A Dialogue of Self and Soul* (1933):

What matter if the ditches are impure?  
What matter if I live it all once more?  
I am content to live it all again  
And yet again, if it be life to pitch  
Into the frogspawn of a blind man's ditch —

and in *The Gyres* (1939):

What matter though dumb nightmare ride on top,  
And blood and mire the sensitive body stain?  
What matter? Heave no sigh, let no tear drop,  
A greater, a more gracious time has gone;  
For painted forms or boxes of make-up  
In ancient tombs I sighed, but not again;  
What matter? Out of cavern comes a voice,  
And all it knows is that one word 'Rejoice!'

The 'cavern' may be the Neo-Platonic Cave of the Nymphs, but its message is not of return to the Heavenly world: it is of a Universal, joyous transformation and energy (a little like Rilke's *Wandlung*) within which both evil and good belong to a greater good. Moreover, this vital conviction, unposed for Yeats by the act of life itself, underlies all his findings when he looked to his own Irish scene for abiding points of reference and sources of vitality. Two more quotations will make this clear. The immediate all-deciding vigour of life is known as much to the beggar-woman in *Crazy Jane Grown Old looks at the Dancers* (1933):

God be with the times when I  
Cared not a thraneen for what chanced  
So that I had the limbs to try  
Such a dance as there was danced —  
Love is like the lion's tooth.

- as it is in *Ancestral Houses* (1928):

Surely among a rich man's flowering lawns,  
Amid the rustle of his planted hills,  
Life overflows without ambitious pains;  
And rains down life until the basin spills,  
And mounts more dizzy high the more it rains ...

Yeats's stature is not self-evident. He wrote enough for a number of his poems to be unimportant or unsuccessful, and an element of grandiose silliness appears in some of his ideas, parts of his life, and a little of his verse. His work exposes itself to cavil more openly than that of a more circumspect writer like Eliot. But the range and variety of what he has done in prose and verse, and its splendid vitality, humanity, and positiveness at its best, set beyond question his greatness as a writer, and his supremacy in this century as a poet.

### *Values in fiction*

Of all the writers of this century, D. H. Lawrence was the most impassioned and persistent in seeking to diagnose some of the psychic dangers besetting his society, and the potential sources of strength from which they might be combated. His position on the literary scene may, in external terms, be plotted easily enough:

I hate Bennett's resignation. Tragedy ought really to be a great kick at misery. But *Anna of the Five Towns* seems like an acceptance - so does all the modern stuff since Flaubert.

(Letter to A. W. McLeod, 6 October 1912)

Here is Lawrence's revulsion from the French Realist tradition. His indebtedness to the more spiritual realism of the Russian novelists shows in a letter to Catherine Carswell of 2 December 1916:

... don't think I would belittle the Russians. They have meant an enormous amount to me; Turgenev, Tolstoi, Dostoevski - mattered almost more than anything, and I thought them the greatest writers of all time.

(That by the date of this letter he could go straight on to condemn Russian fiction does not affect the issue.) He may, in loose terms, be connected with the same nonconformist Midlands as George Eliot.

though he was not intimate with anything comparable to the radical intellectual circles of her early years (see p. 58 above). But Lawrence has a clearer literary continuity with Hardy's less systematized and more poetic conception of the novel, and with the deep sense pervading Hardy's work of man's life as one with its environment in nature. Richard Jefferies's link with Lawrence is also strong: it involves not merely the Hardy-esque qualities of Jefferies, but the fact that the terse yet offhand rhythms, and the flexible, sarcastic, slightly truculent tone of much of Lawrence's polemical prose seem also to go back directly to Jefferies.<sup>26</sup>

While Hardy was preoccupied with a rural world in decline, however, Lawrence saw one in the more characteristically modern condition of transformation to industry and urbanism. This runs steadily through *The Rainbow* (1915). Little by little, the Brangwen circle move out from a life bounded by the rhythms of the traditional farmer's year, into more modern worlds: to the local high school, to London 'into a big shop' or to study art, to a working-class town school, to a Teachers' Training College where folk-song and morris-dancing appear, their own ghosts, in the curriculum, to 'a fairly large house in the new, red-brick part of Beldover ... a villa built by the widow of the late colliery manager'. 'Out into the world meant out into the world.'

Thus *The Rainbow* registers how a wider, looser, more complex, more ambitious pattern of life came in; and recognizes also that the archaic springs of strength could no longer meet its needs. Most of what Lawrence was to write after *The Rainbow* conducts the search, in fictional terms, for a new source of vitality. What Lawrence, in fact, saw himself as discovering was that in any individual there is a unique and unexpugnable source of vitality lying deep in the psyche; and his concern with the intimacies of sex is best seen as a derivative from this belief, a conviction simply that in sex the central psychic forces can most abundantly flow and most easily and naturally assume their uninsistent yet powerful kind of control. Much of his outstanding later work may be seen as an exploring of the essential difference between the sham strength of those who lack this kind of integration, and the essential reality of those who have it. Particularly is this true of the short stories: for example, *St Mawr*, *The Captain's Doll*, *The Fox, Sun*, *The Virgin and the Gipsy*.



Lawrence becomes a master in fiction through the struggle to become master of himself. If self-absorption is an evil, he was not wholly free of it. A few months before the battle of the Somme he could write:

... I will not live any more in this time ... as far as I possibly can, I will stand outside this time; I will live my life, and if possible, be happy, though the whole world slides in horror down into the bottomless pit ... What does it matter about that seething scrimmage of mankind in Europe?

(Letter to Lady Ottoline Morrell, 7 February 1916)

And if *Women in Love* exposes the self-assertive determination of one human being to dominate another, one should have in mind that Lawrence can also write:

Frieda says I am antediluvian in my positive attitude. I do think a woman must yield some sort of precedence to a man ... I do think men must go ahead absolutely in front of their women, without turning round to ask for permission or approval from their women. Consequently the women must follow as it were unquestioningly.

(Letter to Katharine Mansfield, December 1918)

Above all, it is necessary to recognize that Lawrence's deep sense of how modern man may become rootlessly cut off from the proper springs of his vitality, is not a calm and magisterial diagnosis of weakness in others, but a brave and persevering response to the challenge of his own predicament:

We're rather like Jonahs running away from the place we belong ... So I am making up my mind to return to England during the course of the summer. I really think that the most living clue to life is in us Englishmen in England, and the great mistake we make is in not uniting together in the strength of this real living clue - religious in the most vital sense.

(Letter to R. P. Barlow, 30 March 1922)

Five years later Lawrence is still writing in much the same way:

It is our being cut off that is our ailment, and out of this ailment everything bad arises. I wish I saw a little clearer how you get over this cut-offness. ... Myself, I suffer badly from being so cut off. But what is one to do? ... One has no real human relations - that is so devastating.

(Letter to T. Burrow, 3 August 1927)

## THE LITERARY SCENE

It may be that this alienation from his own country ('the thought of England is entirely repugnant', he wrote in 1921; he never really abandoned this position and never returned save as a fleeting and dissatisfied visitor) lies behind another achievement in Lawrence which is close to his own weakness. If we value him as the writer who, more than any other in this age, has striven to affirm and renew life, we should remember that this was in response to his own tendency to indiscriminate exasperation and disgust, to something not unlike the 'doing dirt on life' that also disgusted him in his other phase. 'This filthy contemptible world of actuality' in a letter of 1 April 1917 is both echoed, and controlled, in the words of the Lawrentian hero of the last novel:

When I feel the human world is doomed, has doomed itself by its own mingy beastliness, then I feel the colonies aren't far enough. The moon wouldn't be far enough, because even there you could look back and see the earth, dirty, beastly, unsavoury among all the stars: made foul by men. Then I feel I've swallowed gall, and it's eating me inside out, and nowhere's far enough away. But when I get a turn, I forget it all again.

(*Lady Chatterley's Lover*, Chapter 16)



Ah, love, let us be true  
 To one another! for the world. ...  
 Hath really neither joy, nor love, nor light,  
 Nor certitude, nor peace, nor help for pain;  
 And we are here as on a darkling plain. ...

### *Developments in literary criticism*

The development of literary criticism in this period is a topic which receives detailed discussion later, and what is said here is by way of preliminary to that. Perhaps it is as well to indicate at the start, in broad terms, the two interests which have lain behind what has been new and forward-looking in criticism since Eliot began his career. Of these one has started from the fact that a literary work is nothing other than certain words in a certain order; and it has taken the form of a close and detailed concern with how the verbal texture of the work, through the exact quality and interplay of its details, creates the richness and depth of meaning of the whole work. This, as is suggested by the comparison between Eliot and Mallarmé (made on p. 67 above), largely derives from the ideas and theories about poetry of the late-nineteenth-century French poets and critics who have already been discussed.

The other guiding idea – the best critics have necessarily seen both in the closest inter-connexion – has spread much wider, and run parallel in fact to the writers' concern with how society has been disrupted and endangered. Reacting from the idea (as sometimes expressed by Wilde, say) that literature, being art, stood apart from life, critics have insisted that literary values were ultimately one with those of living itself. From this point of view, critical issues are inseparable in the end from general cultural ones. Serious writing has been seen as one of the major forces sustaining general cultural health; and the weakening of society, the decline of its standards of discrimination through the spread of either commercial or scientific values beyond their proper spheres, stood out as matters directly concerning the critic. Moreover, much that is distinctive of criticism in the modern period has developed along with the development of English literature as a major part of higher education (at school or university) in the humane, non-vocational 'cultural' sense (see pp. 36–7).



## PART TWO

It is Matthew Arnold who stands at the point of origin of this way of studying literature; and his reasons for stressing its value help to explain how criticism (with literature itself) has in fact been reaching forward to a new social role. 'More and more mankind will discover', Arnold wrote in 1880, specifically with the decline of religion in mind, 'that we have to turn to poetry to interpret life for us, to console us, to sustain us.' Some of the implications of this for the function of the critic emerge from what the most important of modern teacher-critics, F. R. Leavis, has said in the context of Arnold:

Many who deplore Arnold's way with religion will agree that, as the other traditions relax and social forms disintegrate, it becomes correspondingly more important to preserve the literary tradition.<sup>31</sup>

also in its *bêtes noires* (the military critic of *The Times*, 'the frivolous Professor Murray', the Poetry Society, Masfield, Landor, polite essayists like 'Alpha of the Plough', popular reviewing, literary weeklies, and the 'kept Press') Orage's work seems to radiate out almost equally towards Arnold, Eliot, and Leavis. When his work is better known, Orage may prove to be one of the decisive figures in the continuity of criticism over the last century.

## PART TWO

most individual or original, it has often been on lines independent from Eliot, and perhaps even taking up something in our past literature which was set in the background by his views, rather than brought into the foreground. Two contrasting and yet inter-relating trends have therefore to be distinguished. One is represented by a measure of deference to the attitudes which came from the period 1910-30 (and which were now sometimes seen in simplified form); the other by various more or less tentative efforts to write independently of those attitudes or to reach back to areas and traditions of our literature which they depreciated or condemned.

On the question of relative value, the answer is simple. The 1910-30 period was one of the great epochs of English literature. It stands with 1590-1612, or 1710-35, or 1798-1822. What has been written since then does not bear comparison with it for a moment. The trends which have been referred to, however, throw light not on the quality of recent development, but on its direction. They suggest, in fact, that Eliot and Pound must surely leave a permanent mark on English verse, but did not re-orientate it once and for all.

To turn, for example, to Auden, Spender, and the other 'political' poets of the 1930s though they were not writers of political verse only, is at once to encounter work which is very far from continuing the tradition of Pound and Eliot. Certainly, their concern about social and cultural disorder is reminiscent of *The Waste Land*:

In a battered street you hide away the appalling;  
 In a battered room there are made for a temporary use  
 The other rooms, the rooms where the lonely are battered  
 Shoveled like pebbles into tortuous shapes.

(*The Capital*, 1930)

and approach show clearly in the texture of their verse. Auden does not employ Pound's 'mode of superposition', but an organization which, in both logic and syntax, is like that of ordinary discourse. Moreover, his work draws on a very much narrower range of cultural reference, and offers a much narrower range of emotion, at least within the single poem. He reflects the new admiration for dryness, irony, easy vernacular diction, and self-deflation in verse but because he did not employ Pound's (or Eliot's) distinctive mode of organization, his verse lacks the exhilaratingly sudden transitions, and the cramped but poignant intensity, of those poets.

Indeed, Auden to some extent drew upon the very cast of thought - external, scientific, classifying - which lay behind the social organizations he condemned: perhaps the most distinctive feature of his verse is the almost uninterrupted succession of class-words (plural nouns, or singular nouns employed with plural force) which run through it. 'Streets', 'Factories', 'rooms', 'the appalling', 'the lonely', make this decisively clear in the passage quoted above. All this is to say that the continuity with Pound and Eliot was superficial rather than profound. Certainly, from 'Lay your sleeping head, my love' to *The Shield of Achilles*, there is a more lyrical side to Auden's work; one which grew more prominent in quantity, if not quality, as his later verse ceased to be political, and became personal and religious. But this spare lyrical poignancy, musical though vernacular, can in no way be referred back to Eliot. Influenced perhaps by Yeats, it points mainly to Hardy, and is a partial resumption of the tradition of verse discussed above on p. 63-4.

The work of Dylan Thomas often conspicuously conforms to Eliot's guiding ideas. These lines are from *A Refusal to Mourn the Death, by Fire, of a Child in London*:

Never ...

Shall I let pray the shadow of a sound

Or sow my salt seed

In the least valley of sackcloth to mourn

The majesty and burning of the child's death.

I shall not murder the mankind of her going with a grave

Nor blaspheme down the stations of the breath

With any further

Elegy of innocence and youth.



influence on later writers of verse, his influence has not been contrary to that of Auden so much as parallel to it. This is because Empson's recondite, contorted, and powerful poems (*Arachne*, say, or *High Dive*) have not been imitated. Later writers have taken their direction rather from those of his poems, like *Villanelle* and *Aubade*, where an adroit and suave easiness prevails – where, indeed, Empson is nearest to a kind of verse which Auden both practised, and identified as 'the fencing wit of an informal style'. The result has been that Empson at his most distinctive has been least influential; and most influential at his most Audenesque. John Wain, for example, has claimed to have followed Empson's lead; but this must be seen in the light of a characteristic poem of Wain's like *Who Speaks my Language?*:

Ah, no. It seems the simplest words take fright  
And shape themselves anew for every ear,  
Protected by a crazy copyright

From ever making their intention clear.  
And yet one cannot blame the words alone ...

The nearest parallel is not in Empson at all, but Auden, and it is decisively close:

Verse was a special illness of the ear;  
Integrity was not enough; that seemed  
The hell of childhood: he must try again.

(*Rimbaud*, 1940)

Empson's work, that is to say, has a very distinctive place for its intrinsic qualities, but as an influence it has contributed to the general direction of movement rather than made against it.

It thus transpires that recent verse has not been under the dominant influence of what was most distinctive and remarkable in Eliot and Pound. It has picked up many different threads of poetic development, including some from that immediate past with which they broke fairly sharply, and others from phases of English literature which they repudiated or ignored. Among other recent writers, Philip Larkin's respect for an early-nineteenth-century poet like Praed, and Donald Davie's tribute to the purity and decorum of eighteenth-century poets like Cowper, point in a similar direction. More important are Graves and Edwin Muir. The former has emerged more and more clearly

## PART TWO

'Valley of sackcloth', 'stations of the breath', 'mankind of her going', and several other turns of phrase in this passage bring to mind Eliot's 'words perpetually juxtaposed in new and sudden combinations, meanings perpetually *eingeschachtelt* into meanings' (see above, p. 67). But when he wrote this, Eliot was discussing a passage from Tournour, and pointing to the firm-set muscularity of its language. Thomas's conformity to Eliot's principle is superficial. In these lines it appears as a harmless idiosyncrasy of diction; often elsewhere as mere distracting cleverness. His strength (and it must be remembered that he was the most obviously gifted poet – the words imply clear reservations – to appear in the last thirty years) lay elsewhere: in a half-naïve, half-mystical, delighted sense of the livingness of man's environment and his oneness with it, which emerges in a few only of his poems, such as both those entitled *Poem in October*, and in *A Refusal ...* taken as a whole. But again, though in a different way, the case is one of a poet who conforms on the surface to Eliot's dicta, but is independent in substance; for this deeper and more genuine side to Thomas does not point at all towards Eliot, Pound, Donne, or the Synonymes, but – Hopkins and still more to Blake, whom Eliot

influence on later writers of verse, his influence has not been contrary to that of Auden so much as parallel to it. This is because Empson's recondite, contorted, and powerful poems (*Arachne*, say, or *High Dive*) have not been imitated. Later writers have taken their direction rather from those of his poems, like *Villanelle* and *Aubade*, where an adroit and suave easiness prevails – where, indeed, Empson is nearest to a kind of verse which Auden both practised, and identified as 'the fencing wit of an informal style'. The result has been that Empson at his most distinctive has been least influential: and most influential at his most Audenesque. John Wain, for example, has claimed to have followed Empson's lead; but this must be seen in the light of a characteristic poem of Wain's like *Who Speaks my Language?*:

Ah, no. It seems the simplest words take fright  
And shape themselves anew for every ear,  
Protected by a crazy copyright

From ever making their intention clear,  
And yet one cannot blame the words alone ...

The nearest parallel is not in Empson at all, but Auden, and it is decisively close:

Verse was a special illness of the ear;  
Integrity was not enough; that seemed  
The hell of childhood: he must try again.



## PART TWO

36. I have discussed this suggestion more fully in 'Notes on the School of Anger' (*Hudson Review*, Autumn 1957, and *The Charted Mirror*).

37. *A Draft of XXX Cantos*, 1933; *Cantos XXXI-XLI*, 1934; *The Fifth Decade of Cantos*, 1937; *Cantos LII-LXXI*, 1940; *The Pisum Cantos (LXXIV-LXXXIV)*, 1949; *Section: Rock Drill (Cantos LXXXV-XCV)*, 1957; *Thrones (96-109 de los cantares)*, 1960.

---

PART

III



# HENRY JAMES: THE DRAMA OF DISCRIMINATION

HENRY GIFFORD

*Senior Lecturer in English, the University of Bristol*

'I HAVE made my choice, and God knows that I have now no time to waste.' This memorandum of 1881, written for his own eye, reveals the essential Henry James in his power of lonely decision and his uncommon ardour. The particular choice was to live in England: a step often deplored but, given the peculiar genius of James, strictly logical. In taking it he overcame the last of his disabilities. Almost from infancy he had known his talent – that of 'the visiting mind', to gather impressions and to read aspects – but for making use of it he needed faith in his own lights. The elder Henry James, his father, thought little of 'mere' literary men, since any kind of 'doing' was a restriction on 'being'. William James teased and harassed his younger brother with cordial insensibility until at length – in 1905 – Henry rejected his point of view as too 'remotely alien' for the beginnings of appreciation. He waged a further struggle with his American environment. An essay in *French Poets and Novelists* (1878) speaks of Turgenev as 'having what one may call a poet's quarrel' with his native land. 'He loves the old, and he is unable to see where the new is drifting.' James recognized this 'poet's quarrel' as necessarily his own, though for him the conditions were even less favourable. Turgenev at least could rejoice in the wealth of type under his eye, whereas the American novelist had still like Hawthorne to content himself with coldness, thinness, and blankness. 'It is on manners, customs, usages, habits, forms, upon all these things matured and established, that a novelist lives...' In the second chapter of his *Hawthorne* (1879), James drew up a list of 'the items of high civilization' missing from American life: a court, an aristocracy, an established church; country houses, cathedrals, old universities and schools; the arts, a political society, a sporting class. Another kind of novelist – Melville, for instance, of whom James apparently knew nothing – may live immensely without these things, or on their sparest counterparts. But for James, with his

indefeasible sense of Europe, America gave too little suggestion. He coveted the 'deep, rich English tone' of George Eliot, and the density of Balzac's France. Instead, America offered too often scenes like this in *The Bostonians* (1886):

the desolate suburban horizons, peeled and made bald by the rigour of the season; the general hard, cold void of the prospect; the extrusion, at Charleston, at Cambridge, of a few chimneys and steeples, straight, sordid tubes of factories and engine-shops; or spare heavenward finger of the New England meeting-house. There was something inexorable in the poverty of the scene, shameful in the meanness of its details ... loose fences, vacant lots, mounds of refuse, yards bestrewn with iron pipes, telegraph poles, and bare wooden backs of places.

The activity these things betoken meant very little to James. He pleaded ignorance of the business world – which formed, on his own reckoning, nineteen-twentieths of American life. His family and friends were all among the 'casually disqualified', so that eventually, like White-Mason in *Crapy Cornelia* (1909), he would find himself shut out from 'the music of the future', together with

the few scattered surviving representatives of a society once 'good' – *rari nantes in gurgite vasto*.

But that predicament – seen in terms of 'social impossibilities' – was reserved for Edith Wharton to render. James's concern, growing over the years, is more profound. Like Hawthorne, he came to know the pains of the separated artist: the American writer who lived for discrimination and his own approval was forced to contend against the current of national life.

If his experience was narrow – and the James children had scarcely seen a clergyman, a military man, or a politician – he had the advantage of a 'formed critical habit'. There are times when 'critic' and 'creator' are for James interchangeable terms. The critical impulse, as T. S. Eliot long ago pointed out, was remarkably strong in him. We may accept from Mr Eliot that James stands nearer to Hawthorne than to any foreign novelist<sup>1</sup>; but what enlarges his scope beyond Hawthorne's, enabling him to read similar problems with more subtlety, was perhaps the study of Sainte-Beuve and Arnold. These latter dis-

played (what he might find also in George Eliot and Turgenev) the values of intelligence and irony and of the finely disinterested mind. The young Henry James, according to a letter he wrote in 1867, even had visions of himself as a Sainte-Beuve in English letters.<sup>2</sup> Doubtless it was Sainte-Beuve's marked novelistic sense – his desire to present the whole man in his proper setting – that appealed to James. *Partial Portraits* (1888) owe more than their title to Sainte-Beuve, two collections of whose 'portraits' James had reviewed earlier in the *Nation*. It may even be that there is a hint of derivation, however remote, in *The Portrait of a Lady*.

The American privilege, as James saw it then, was to 'pick and choose and assimilate and in short (aesthetically etc.) claim our property wherever we find it'. Deprivation at home caused a hunger to appropriate and claim possession. Fullness of life was something promised in books, as the small boy discovered from reading *Punch* on the hearth-rug in 'medieval New York'. There he saw the varieties of English life; subsequent visits to Europe beset him thickly with recognitions. Henry James had, like T. S. Eliot and Ezra Pound, the *instructed* imagination, proceeding from books to life and holding the two in mutual enrichment.



The 'necessity of his case' brought James to the international theme: a restless childhood divided between Europe and America fitted him perfectly for this kind of counterpoint. 'It was as if I had, vulgarly speaking, received quite at first the "straight tip" – to back the right horse or buy the right shares.' The 'mixture of manners', their contrast, the possibilities of a higher civilization than either hemisphere could show by itself – these interests held his attention from the beginning, and never wholly passed out of sight. The sense of Europe involved him, as it had involved Cooper, Hawthorne, and Melville, in a continuing dialectic between present and past, present and future, between innocence and experience, good and evil.<sup>3</sup> Usually he preferred to try 'the bewilderment of the good American, of either sex and of almost any age, in presence of the "European" order'. European bewilderment in presence of America he found less treatable: such attempts as *An International Episode* (1879), *Pandora* (1884), and *Lady Barbarina* (1884) could not be renewed indefinitely. There was in fact

a risk of monotony: they had too little to confront. Far more numerous, and generally more rewarding, are the studies of American innocence in a fascinating but more or less corrupt Europe. A brief comparison of *The Europeans* (1878) with *The Portrait of a Lady* (1881) will show what each end of the relation had to offer him.

In presenting the American scene to European eyes he needed to avoid 'the poor concussion of positives on the one side with negatives on the other'. Just this difficulty arose in the working of *Washington Square* (1880), which is a provincial story, *mœurs de province*, revealing a corner of the past, 'medieval New York', with a light, caressing irony. Though James's subject is a bad case of parental despotism, it receives something of an idyllic frame. *The Europeans* gains by bringing the European values – merely implied in *Washington Square* – into an active relation with those of Boston. Felix Young and the Baroness not only provide two differing registers of the scene, two projections of European intelligence: they must in their turn face criticism from the Wentworths, they too are weighed in James's fine balance. The author himself, as F. R. Leavis has demonstrated in his alert commentary,<sup>3</sup> does not directly intervene. His sympathies may well lean to the American order – homely, pious, frugal, earnest, candid – but nothing is made simple or schematic. We are called upon to appraise various notes. There is the note of Mr Wentworth and Mr Brand: New England sense of duty; the note of Gertrude Wentworth: a shy originality not altogether at ease in Zion; the note of the Baroness: European worldliness and lack of scruple; the note of Felix: a free intelligence at play, too ingenuous to be wholly European, too light for New England. The comedy of manners, then, defines tacitly an ideal of civilization, where wit shall be tempered with morality, and morality enlivened with wit.

James's own loyalties, it should be stressed, were to patrician New York.<sup>5</sup> On coming to Harvard he had felt a 'particular shade of satisfaction' in 'being in New England without being of it'. He is therefore the impartial onlooker at his comedy in this novel. Boston had struck him as still a rural centre: in the Harvard Law School he used to study his professors for 'type', and, Sainte-Beuve assisting, divined 'those depths of rusticity which more and more unmistakably underlay the social order at large'. That is the style of the Wentworths ('It's primitive,' Felix informs the Baroness, 'it's patriarchal; it's the

ton of the golden age'). The first encounter with Gertrude staying at home from church on a fine Sunday morning in springtime conveys this exactly. It is done by exhibiting 'the simple details of the picture' to form 'the items of a "sum" in addition'. 'A large square house in the country'; 'neatly disposed plants' over against a muddy road; doors and windows thrown open 'to admit the purifying sunshine' - here is order, confidence, a quiet joy in 'the abundant light and warmth'.

It was an ancient house - ancient in the sense of being eighty years old; it was built of wood, painted a clean, clear, faded grey, and adorned along the front, at intervals, with flat wooden pilasters, painted white.

The specification of eighty years is not wholly ironic. Almost the same span in *The Jolly Corner* (1908) provides the sense of continuity over three generations. Here it serves as a passport into the eighteenth century - General Washington had slept there. It belongs to the past in which James felt at ease; the more remote past was 'dusky' for him, the past of Hawthorne's House of the Seven Gables and of iniquitous feudal Europe. But the 'big, unguarded home' in its cleanliness and sobriety has no guilty secrets: it reflects faithfully its master, also 'a clean, clear, faded grey'.

James may have been helped to this vision by certain passages in Turgenev (behind which one discerns the second chapter of Pushkin's *Onegin*). Mr Wentworth is perhaps seen with the aid of George Eliot: a more sympathetic, an unselfish if still pedantic kinsman of Mr Casaubon. Certainly the notation is similar:

It seemed to him he ought to find [the materials for a judgment] in his own experience, as a man of the world and an almost public character; but they were not there, and he was ashamed to confess to himself... the unfurnished condition of this repository.  
(*The Europeans*)

Hence he determined to abandon himself to the stream of feeling and perhaps was surprised to find what an exceedingly shallow rill it was.  
(*Middlemarch*)

When a page or two later Felix offers to paint Mr Wentworth 'as an old prelate, an old cardinal, or the prior of an order', we may read



### PART THREE

is a Ladislav properly conceived – a convincing and not wearisome Bohemian (something George Eliot could never do). Such derivations often suggest themselves in James's work – there is a hint of another when he says that Turgenev's heroines 'have to our sense a touch of the faintly acrid perfume of the New England temperament'. The art of working the American scene depended on a faculty for relations: hence the critical vision turning to literature for perspective. What he required was the appropriate tone. One might say that his delicacy is Hawthorne's, his mild asperity – the light brush of satire – George Eliot's. But the 'very atmosphere of the mind' that 'takes to itself the faintest hints of life' was entirely his own. Henry James brought an abundant gift of consciousness, controlled in part by what he read, but never submitting to mere imitation.

In *The Europeans* his scrutiny of manners is serious but gentle. The novel was called by him a sketch: it has the brightness of the American air, and its values are put in with a light dexterity. Mr Wentworth's 'doctrine ... of the oppressive gravity of mistakes'; Gertrude's puzzling out of the unfamiliar concept, to 'enjoy'; the Baroness's attitude towards 'fibbing': these revelations of character and social ethos are in their essence playful. The Baroness quits the scene, a superior woman disabled by American rural worth. Like Lord Lambeth in *An International Episode*, and the Prussian Count in *Pandora*, she had expected to conquer. But American simplicity holds the field.

*The Portrait of a Lady* carries on the debate in much graver terms. The tone has utterly changed:

She could live it over again, the incredulous terror with which she had taken the measure of her dwelling. Between those four walls she had lived ever since; they were to surround her for the rest of her life. It was the house of darkness, the house of dumbness, the house of suffocation.

Isabel Archer's situation might be compared with Catherine Sloper's in *Washington Square*. Each is the victim of a domestic tyrant, each has been deceived in her generous affections. Isabel, of course, is the more finely aware, and that makes for a higher intensity. But she also matters more for James: her plight deeply engages. There is Ralph Touchett to focus our anxiety for her; and sinister apparitions

lurk along her path – Madame Merle at the piano that rainy afternoon, Osmond waiting in the villa which ‘had heavy lids, but no eyes’. The symbolism obtrudes: the ‘silent, motionless portal’ in the Albany house leading in her imagination to ‘a region of delight or of terror’; the reminder

that there were other gardens in the world than those of her remarkable soul, and that there were moreover a great many places which were not gardens at all – only dusky pestiferous tracts, planted thick with ugliness and misery.

The sense of Isabel’s predicament seems to be Hawthorne’s: her native innocence cannot brook the uncleanness of Osmond. ‘She was not a daughter of the Puritans, but for all that she believed in such a thing as chastity and even decency.’ It was Hilda of *The Marble Faun* – a trusting and exalted American girl in guilt-laden Rome – who told the priest in St Peter’s after confession: ‘I am a daughter of the Puritans’; and James regarded that scene as one of the great moments in Hawthorne’s novel.

Isabel, of course, stems from a proved social reality. She is the unique American girl, ‘heiress of all the ages’, and for her as for Milly Theale in *The Wings of the Dove* (1902), a novel that returns upon this theme, there must be ‘a strong and special implication of liberty’, to bring out the poignancy of her case. The American girl in Europe – ‘a huge success of curiosity’ who had ‘infinitely amused the nations’ – confronted the old order with an entire freedom: she was not ‘placed’ socially, and wealth made its own privileges. Ralph Touchett sees to it that Isabel receives wealth. Thereby he fosters her illusion of being superior to conditions.

Isabel’s self-regard, her habit of ‘treating herself to occasions of homage’, her ‘confidence at once innocent and dogmatic’, are grievously punished, and thus James may be seen to explore the American theme of spirit and refractory circumstance. At the same time he offers Isabel a choice between representative men: Lord Warburton the English magnate, Caspar Goodwood the New England entrepreneur, Osmond the American divorced from the native values by long residence in Europe, Ralph Touchett the American who has become in Mr Eliot’s sense ‘a European – something which no born European, no person of any European nationality, can become’. *The Portrait*

of a Lady is indeed brilliant on its social surface. Keen observation; the surest of touches in placing Osmond, Madame Merle, Henrietta Stackpole, the Countess Gemini, Lord Warburton; so much of control, intelligence, the large critical view and sense of relations: having all these, it is justly celebrated as a magnificent novel. In our gratitude for such mastery, we may not recognize the presence of an undertow, pulling James into a region where the intelligence can be blinded. Two jottings from his notebook scenario point this weakness:

Isabel awakes from her sweet delusion – oh, the art required for making this delusion natural! – and finds herself face to face with a husband who has ended by conceiving a hatred for her own larger qualities.

Ralph's helpless observation of Isabel's deep misery ...  
This to be a strong feature of the situation.

These notes give too much away. As a matter of fact, Isabel's 'sweet delusion' never is made quite convincing. Both her martyrdom and Ralph's 'helpless observation' seem things contrived, things James needed to bring about for the expression of some deep personal theme. His mind was fixed on suffering and renunciation.

\* \* \*

Popularity – never very certainly in his grasp – deserted James altogether in 1886, the year of *The Bostonians* and *The Princess Casamassima*. If *Daisy Miller* (1878) – an exhibition of the American girl made, as he admits, in poetical rather than critical terms – won him a fairly wide success, *The Bostonians* blighted his fortunes with the public at home. It happens that James's intentionally 'very American tale' started to run in the *Century Magazine* for February 1885 which was then publishing two other fictions deeply American: *The Rise of Silas Lapham* by W. D. Howells, and Mark Twain's *Huckleberry Finn*. Howells, the old friend and editor of James, had set his novel also in Boston, and what he produced – a clean square of local colour, rendered with acuteness and sympathy – couldn't fail to please the American reader looking out for the depiction of national type. Lapham, the simple and stubborn Yankee who found his fortune in a paint-mine on the old farm, was well understood by Howells, and the novel has survived much of his other work. *The Bostonians* – a daylight raid on an unsuspecting city, merciless and complete – is

brilliant in a manner quite beyond Howells (who has marked affinities with the author of, say, *Washington Square* or *A New England Winter* (1884)). Understandably, its brilliance did not appeal to Mark Twain. Although *Huckleberry Finn* shares at least one of James's preoccupations – the incorruptible young mind, and Huck is, like Maisie Farange, wiser than the adults – Mark Twain and Henry James differ in their knowledge, their irony, their divinations, and their beliefs. The spell of *Huckleberry Finn* arises from two things, Huck's intimacy with the river, and the native resource of his language. The world of the frontier was closed to James; and Huck's range of expression (so suggestive to later American novelists) could not be his: it wasn't his birthright. 'The lightning kept whimpering'; 'it was a steamboat that had killed herself on a rock' – the truly American force of such phrases is bound up with attitudes even hostile to James. (Mark Twain 'would rather be damned to John Bunyan's heaven than read' *The Bostonians*.) A very large side of American life James had to take on trust. All the camp-meeting background of Selah Tarrant is supplied, perhaps, from a book he once reviewed, Nordhoff's *Communitistic Societies*; and there is, of course, as F. R. Leavis has noted, a real debt in *The Bostonians* to Martin Chuzzlewit. Yet James's novel, even beside a nonpareil like *Huckleberry Finn*, at once folk-tale and poignant record of the American prime, doesn't appear what one might expect, artificial and 'genteel'. It is extremely animated, and it strikes hard.

James knew very well the intellectual tone of Boston (he made one year later a compensatory gesture in his portrait of Emerson); the absurdities of the lecture hall and the passions of female insurgence did not escape his eye searching for the 'salient and peculiar'. He noted 'the situation of women, the decline of the sentiment of sex' as an index to the whole society, and chose therefore to organize his drama of conflicting values around 'a study of one of those friendships between women which are so common in New England'. The battle for Verena Tarrant's soul between the implacable female zealot, Olive Chancellor, and the rude Southern knight-errant, Basil Ransom, enacts in passionate and personal form a conflict of ideas – between North and South, reform and reaction, the feminine and the masculine principles. The periphery is richly comic – a world of queer female missionaries under the gas lamps, of fraud and exaltation and

selfless service and crude publicity. But the centre is otherwise conceived:

There was a splendid sky, all blue-black and silver – a sparkling vault, where the stars were like a myriad points of ice. The air was silent and sharp, and the vague snow looked cruel. Olive now knew very definitely what the promise was that she wanted Verena to make ...

This might almost be the desolate world of ice and snow in which Gerald Crich dies. Lionel Trilling has read a Laurentian meaning into James's novel, and 'fear of the loss of manhood' may be among the promptings to James's imagination.<sup>6</sup> But more essentially – and here too he is akin to Lawrence – James is concerned with the will to dominate. Olive Chancellor is a more awful Hermione Roddice, white-hot and armed with a gospel.

*The Princess Casamassima*, a novel in which divination frankly replaces the inward knowledge of *The Bostonians*, is in certain ways a companion piece. Its thesis, however, remains somewhat abstract, and James's rendering lacks the complete assurance of *The Bostonians* (Miss Birdseye is given far more circumstantially than Lady Aurora). Again, a group with a fixed design (here they are anarchists) wish to make use of a gifted but immature being. Ransom's words to Verena – 'you are unique, extraordinary ... outside and above all vulgarizing influences' – are even more true of Hyacinth Robinson. But this latter is the conscious artist, and when he too betrays the cause, he does so not as a hustled captive to superior force like Verena, but of his own deliberate choice. Hyacinth's dilemma somewhat resembles that of Nezhdanov in *Idiot's Paradise*, whom James in a review of Turgenev's novel had characterized as 'drifting ... into a stream of occult radicalism' and then finding himself 'stagnant and sceptical and "aesthetic"'. Nezhdanov kills himself through a sense of his own ineptitude and unworthiness; Hyacinth, because the ideal no longer convinces him. Lionel Trilling in a most perceptive essay has sought to show that James hit off the revolutionary movement of his time with a 'striking literary accuracy', and that every detail of his picture could be 'confirmed by multitudinous records'. Even so, Hyacinth himself – who 'sprang up ... out of the London pavement' – isn't appropriate for the kind of novel – 'grainy and knotted with practicality and detail' – that Mr Trilling makes out *The Princess Casamassima* to be. He

springs (as Mr. Trilling also argues) from a necessity of James's own spirit. One has the sense that the author imposes a scheme upon his story, perhaps in part unrecognized by himself. 'The dispute between art and moral action', from which Hyacinth at last escapes into death, had its unhappy familial side for James. And the theme of the exquisite nature cut off in its first flowering was to return with Milly Theale.

James's possession of 'the great grey Babylon' (with some help from Dickens) proves how little time he had lost in assimilating the English scene. He was also alive to the drawbacks of his situation. Powerful and privileged Englishmen cared little for ideas: Lord Canterville's 'den' in *Lady Barbarina* was part office and part harness-room – 'it could not have been called in any degree a library'. James admired the massive confidence and unconcern of these people, but he became increasingly aware that they missed their opportunities. The young American sister-in-law in *A London Life* (1888)

marvelled at the waste involved in some human institutions – the English landed gentry for instance – when she noted how much it had taken to produce so little ... all that was exquisite in the home of his forefathers – what visible reference was there to these fine things in poor Lionel's stable-stamped composition?

James clung to the forms of English life, but his sense of alienation grew, in a society where art received every kind of empty homage: 'the line is drawn ... only at the importance of heeding what it may mean'.

In the last decade of the century he wrote numerous stories about the ordeal of the modern artist. These proclaim the duty of ~~of~~ abiding by the 'inspired and impenitent' choice. Two of his most deeply felt tales on this theme, *The Death of the Lion* and *The Middle Years*, came out in the volume called *Terminations* (1895). Only a few months before, James's desperate fling at the theatre had been ended by the miscarriage of *Guy Douville*. These five years of deluded endeavour betray something like a failure of nerve. He had dropped the writing of long novels after *The Tragic Muse* (1890) to win wealth and glory as a dramatist. He found neither: and it is difficult to see what he gained from the whole misadventure except perhaps 'the divine principle of the scenario', which enabled him to project an

entire novel in its articulation before rendering it. A novelist whose public begins to desert him is bound to meet the temptation of confronting them more directly, either through the theatre or, as Dickens did, through public readings. James wanted to receive acclamation in person. He swallowed his pride; he made too many concessions; he even put himself in the hands of George Alexander, who on relinquishing James took up Oscar Wilde. *Guy Domville* had some merits, as A. B. Walkley recognized. But 'fastidious, frugal quietism' does not make good theatre. Henry James returned to attempt the work of his life, with no illusions about his solitude.

\* \* \*

R. P. Blackmur has well said that 'James made the theme of the artist a focus for the ultimate theme of human integrity'. This engaged him very often during his English years: Laura Wing in *A London Life*, Rose Tranmore in *The Chaperon* (1891), Fleda Vetch in *The Spoils of Poynton* (1897) all face temptations of the wilderness, in which 'the free spirit' is put to proof. Nanda Brookenharn in *The Awkward Age* (1899) is left at the end to muster her courage and 'let Van down easily'; Maisie Farange endures in *What Maisie Knew* (1897) a culminating ordeal of moral responsibility to which only an angelic child would be equal. James cannot remit these fierce probations. The sins of greed, the rages of a ruling passion, prey on his mind. Mrs Gereth suffers 'the torment of taste'; the researchers in *The Aspern Papers* (1888) and *The Figure in the Carpet* (1896) that of an obsessed curiosity: the eyewitness in *The Sacred Fount* (1901), for whom 'the condition of light' involves 'the sacrifice of feeling', exposes the common case. All these figures are living in what might be Dante's hell. Mr Eliot was surely wide of the mark in referring once to James's 'idealization' of English society. *What Maisie Knew* fixes with unfaltering verve and scorn the barbarities of a world at once feral and ridiculous.

The three major explorations of moral responsibility which James now undertook - *The Ambassadors* (1903), *The Wings of the Dove* (1902), *The Golden Bowl* (1904) - are notorious for their difficulty - a difficulty which first declared itself in *The Sacred Fount*. The notation is almost excessively fine, the issues often appear tenuous, the atmosphere has been pumped 'gaspingly dry'. Readers who delighted in

the pictorial brilliancy of his earlier work and its neatness of style, must now grope in a world where for all the animation of James's figurative speech both meaning and action often hang in suspense; they must give unremitting attention to a new kind of discourse – the passional language of disembodied intelligences. And yet – is the later style really so cumbersome? F. O. Matthiessen examined the revisions made in *The Portrait of a Lady* for the New York edition:<sup>8</sup> almost every one is a gain in dramatic power and lucidity. A few random samples from *The Pension Beaurepas* illustrate this: I give the earlier version in brackets:

'Poor Mr Ruck [who is extremely good-natured and soft] who's a mush of personal and private concession ...'

Mrs Church [looked at me a moment, in quickened meditation] with her cold competence, picked my story over.

But if he ate very little, he [talked a great deal; he talked about business, going into a hundred details in which I was quite unable to follow him] still moved his lean jaws – he mumbled over his spoilt repast of apprehended facts; strange tough financial fare into which I was unable to bite.

The abounding images – in *The Golden Bowl* there is the Palladian church in the Piazza (ch. vii), the Pagoda in the garden (ch. xxxv), the 'tortuous stone staircase' of Prince Amerigo's moral sense in contrast to the high-speed elevator of Mr Verver's (ch. ii), and the over-worked device of the bowl itself – are all planted as 'aids to lucidity'. Often they give a patterning to the whole work. Their effect is that of the classical simile as Johnson saw it, which 'must both illustrate and ennoble the subject'. They yield always an explicit meaning: 'the breakage [of the golden bowl] stood not for any wrought discomposure among the triumphant three – it stood merely for the dire deformity of her attitude to them'. Such images must necessarily be inferior to those which, like the moon in a difficult chapter of *Women in Love*, compose meanings in no other way to be apprehended. They are expository, for the most part brilliantly contrived, but seldom, one feels, forcing their way up from the deepest levels of imagination.

*The Golden Bowl* in particular makes heavy demands on the reader's willingness to suspend disbelief. Princes and innocent millionaires and sublime little American girls, acting out between them a drama of wonderful intensity, stand a poor chance with the contemporary





of the villas on the New Jersey shore – loneliness and inanity written all over them – to the tragic plea on his last page, James displays a gift of divination which seldom fails him. Wells's book of the same time, *The Future in America*, for all its acuteness and verve, looks flimsy indeed beside James's deeply felt record of a signal experience.

The world war found him no better prepared than most of his contemporaries. At one moment he cried out in panic that 'the subject-matter of one's effort has become *itself* utterly treacherous and false – its relation to reality utterly given away and smashed'. He abandoned *The Ivory Tower*, which nevertheless showed the keenest sense of realities – the black dishonoured roots of colossal fortunes flaunted in contemporary Newport. James in this last phase of social understanding (attained through the experience of *The American Scene*) stands not very far from Conrad. Though the outward forms of the civilization he knew have largely decayed, his meaning is still actual; very little in the vast body of his work can be disregarded. He has become widely recognized as a pattern of the *classicist* ~~man~~ who exists to create values, to extend life, 'to be ~~simply aware~~ and richly responsible'. In the last of his Prefaces he ~~claimed the title of~~ the title of poet. There is nothing extravagant in this claim, for poets, no less than novelists, have much to learn from him. James is a master for all who prize (in ~~the~~ ~~James's~~ ~~words~~) 'certainty of touch and unhurried incision'.

### PART THREE

6. See his preface to *The Bostonians* in the Chiltern Library edition (London, 1952); reprinted in *The Opposing Self*.

7. In *The Liberal Imagination*.

8. See his appendix to *Henry James: The Major Phase*, entitled 'The Painter's Sponge and Varnish Bottle'.

9. Quentin Anderson in *The American Henry James* takes them rather as a 'divine novel', in which James sought to dramatize the religious views of his father. One may readily acknowledge Mr Anderson's insight into the delicacies of James's moral sense. It goes without saying that James like his father abhorred greed and domination; and we must treat with caution the view that his moral sense in these later novels surrendered to ambiguities. One can only enter here the plea that it is preposterous to conceive of father and son as standing perpetually in the same Swedenborgian pew. Mr Anderson has suffered the novelist's mind to be violated by an idea.

# FROM HEART OF DARKNESS TO NOSTROMO: AN APPROACH TO CONRAD

DOUGLAS BROWN

*The Perse School, Cambridge*

CONRAD's art has its limitations. It does not explore human relationship; it offers few triumphs of feminine portraiture; it lent itself to a good deal of plainly inferior work, and two or three even among the masterpieces are flawed – *Lord Jim*, for instance, and *Chance* and *Victory*. But there is no point in making much of the limitations, for Conrad's astonishing range of achievement is part and parcel of them. To testify to that variety, there are successively *The Nigger* (1897), *Lord Jim* (1900), *Heart of Darkness* (1902), *Typhoon* (1903), *Nostramo* (1904), *The Secret Agent* (1907), *Under Western Eyes* (1911), *The Secret Sharer* (1912), *Chance* (1913), *Victory* (1915), and *The Shadow-Line* (1917).<sup>1</sup> Consider what distinction of styles separates the affirmative eloquence of much of *The Nigger* from the discomposing astringency of *The Secret Agent*; what distinction of scale separates the epitomizing *The Secret Sharer*, and *Nostramo*. The Congo terrain of *Heart of Darkness*, the London streets of *The Secret Agent*, the South American province of *Nostramo*, and the Gulf of Siam and the shipboard life of *The Shadow-Line* call to mind the Polish expatriate, his adventurous and disordered youth and early manhood, seemingly at the beck of some compulsion to make terms with the sheer multiplicity of the world. In his own experience he knew both far-ranging styles of life and nature, and a strict commitment to one tested tradition – that of the mercantile marine. It was a unique equipment for a novelist; moreover, behind his subtle judgement of appropriate style and scale and method, lay his equally strict service of his artistic vocation, once the decision for that new *métier* was taken. It meant 'the intensity and strain of a creative effort in which mind, and will, and conscience are engaged to the full'.

So the organization of his novels and tales is not to be taken lightly: it expresses a scrupulous, sceptical intelligence. Several of the finest use a present moment, still not overture of its perspective, to

look back into past experience and recreate it, its immediacy still vivid but its meaning enlarged and clarified by distance. The recurring figure of the raconteur, his experience separated from the novelist's own; or the aligning of a series of distinct attitudes, deny the reader simple certitudes. *Nostromo*, supremely, exhibits this structural scepticism. Now it reflects back from a forward point in time, when consequences have become evident; now contemporary events reach us through a variety of distinct consciousnesses established at various points along the chronological route; now one style of appraisal – Decoud's, now another – Mitchell's; now meditation and now drama. Add the oppressive presence of darkness or shadow through so much of the novel, and we are kept steadily in mind of the insufficiency of anyone's comprehension. Reading, we lack orientation. Nobody is thoroughly understood, no situation is perfectly clear. And the scepticism tapers off – is it the sardonic manner? or the elliptical method? – into the enigmatic. It is to the point that the novel's pivotal figure, *Nostromo*, is an enigmatic figure.

It may be right to associate this facet of Conrad (1857–1924) with the expatriate wanderer. Other elements in his art express the commitment of the sailor. His artistic manifesto, the Preface to *The Nigger*, speaks of imaginative creation that shall address the senses irresistibly and so reach down to 'the secret springs of responsive emotions'. The process does not stop there; it calls into being our sense of our involvement in mankind. Conrad shares with George Eliot a concern for 'the latent feeling of fellowship', 'the subtle but invincible conviction of solidarity'. They share also the concern to give imaginative authority to the sense of obligation and rectitude, to the word 'ought' which surmounts the noise of the gale on Macwhirr's lips. So Conrad's best work gives full play to disquieting scepticism, yet celebrates fidelity and heroic discipline. It probes anxiously at traditional moral sanctions; it preserves something nearer to respect than to confidence; we move along a tightrope. Each vantage point in *Nostromo* questions or invalidates some other, no focus for authority emerges. Yet the sense of quest for some such focus prevails: the novel's structure insists upon it. It seems, on one hand, that no traditional or social code withstands the catalyst of the silver, or that other catalyst of solitude and darkness towards which repeatedly the narratives tend. But even the unillusioned cynic Decoud, who trusts

nothing but the truth of his sensations, finds he desires at the crisis to leave behind him a true record of his acts. It's a sort of desolate gesture to human solidarity. And there is always some note of compassion, or regard, for those in Sulaco who do live by 'some distinct ideal'. Conrad's preoccupation with betrayal is itself suggestive: betrayal in his world has social roots, it presumes a collaborative morality – people to fail, dues to forfeit. It is affirmative. Jukes's experience in *Typhoon* presents the sway between anarchy and discipline in plainer terms. On one side of him is Macwhirr's unshakeable commitment to the demands of his tradition: on the other, the typhoon's immeasurable and destructive potency. It saps resolve, and the sense of obligation, and self-respect. As the novels and tales lead out of the nineteenth century and into our own, we are made to feel more of the limited, contingent validity of moral claims and of collaborative endeavour. We are confined in a gleaming engine-room while natural forces beyond imagination wreak havoc on the deck above and threaten to overwhelm the ship. Or, with Jukes, we suffer 'the thick blackness which made the appalling boundary of his vision', or discover in the Placid Gulf of *Nostramo* 'the limitations put upon the human faculties by the darkness of the night'.

Conrad's art addresses our senses, then, and goes on from there. 'The yarns of seamen have a direct simplicity, the whole meaning of which lies within the shell of a cracked nut. But ... to him the meaning of an episode was not inside it like the kernel but outside, enveloping the tale which brought it out only as a glow brings out a haze.' This is Marlow, the protagonist of *Heart of Darkness*, whose memory pieces together and re-lives the journey into the Belgian Congo. The image is important. A kernel can be extracted and the shell discarded: and recently there has been a good deal of such extraction from Conrad's work – symbols, and Jungian motifs, and so forth. The effect is to falsify and simplify the truth and depth of his art, and not surprisingly the plain force of his tales often gets obscured too.<sup>2</sup> We are to attend, rather, to the luminous quality of the tale itself, its 'glow'; we are to depend on the evidence of our senses, and our power to respond delicately enough to the story-teller's arrangement of his scenes, and to his tone of voice. (Though he was Polish by birth, Conrad became a master of our speech. He learnt it from the talk of seamen first, as he learnt our language generally from manuals of navigation, entries in ships'

logs, as well as studies in our literature. He felt 'a subtle and unforeseen accord of my emotional nature with its genius'. His artistic austerity led him to present no more than was necessary. Even through the vast span of *Nostromo*, one comes to feel that a thorough sifting has already taken place. There is point in every paragraph, and though there is lightness and humour, there is no give in the prose. At every moment it matters whose voice we are listening to or whose tone is prevalent. And if the montage, the shifting viewpoints, impose a condition of uncertainty upon the reader, they also elicit an activity of clarification. Evidence confronts us and we are drawn to judge, and implicate ourselves in the consequences of judgement – or of incapacity to judge. Frequently the way of the narrative itself suggests this: as the Patna inquiry does, or the circle of auditors to whom Marlow relates his Congo ordeal as if testifying; as the manner of the young captains in *The Secret Sharer* and *The Shadow-Line* does, in no way solemn, yet seeming to bear witness before some ultimate tribunal. (*The Shadow-Line* is sub-titled 'A Confession'.) *Nostromo's* key figure – if such it has – Dr Monygham, lives under the same constraint.

Beyond question, *Nostromo* is Conrad's greatest achievement. Yet its very magnitude and cogency sometimes obstruct readers; and it does not yield the measure of its worth at one reading, though it offers rewards enough to be going on with. It has certainly not lacked critical advocacy and no detailed fresh appraisal would earn its place here.<sup>3</sup> An appraisal of *Heart of Darkness* perhaps may. It is a novel that can be read, considered, and re-read in a short time; and once engaged with, it is not likely to leave a reader alone until *Nostromo* and *The Shadow-Line* have had their say. It has received rather less than its due of respect and understanding although it is characteristic Conrad and includes passages that are by common consent among his very finest. Most important, and when due regard has been given to its dramatic fibre, it exhibits – like *The Shadow-Line* – a profoundly personal art: both tales handle distressing personal experience such as extends a man's knowledge of himself and of what the world is like. It is safe to say that Conrad's own Congo journey and its attendant breakdown were decisive in confirming him in his vocation as an imaginative artist. His own laconic remark prepares us for what the novel is about: 'before the Congo I was only a simple animal'.

Marlow's journey is an initiation into a fuller scale of human being. Jukes's ordeal, in *Typhoon*, relates to it, as do those of the later captains of ships. In *Nostromo* such ordeal is absorbed into and changed by a more extensive pattern, but it counts. In Sulaco, where yet more various political and economic forces are at work than make their presence felt in the Congo, Nostromo at first commits his whole identity to his public role. He is the common folk's mysterious chieftain, the creator and devotee of a cult of public fidelity. The ordeal of the pitch-dark night on the Gulf marks the point of his awakening to the nature of his city, and its silver, and his part in both. Like the adolescent in ritual, he goes out into the night and sleeps alone. In solitude he must forge an adult identity for himself. Then he puts on a man's strength and resolve and returns to his city. But Sulaco has the complex and entangling character of modern civilization, and in Sulaco Nostromo cannot escape what he has been, nor the pressures of the silver. They bear even more strongly and corruptingly upon the adult. Soon he is romanticizing his new manhood, his resentful duplicity, his subtlety, and his power. He plays alternately the hero and the villain of some adventure story of his own contriving. The enigmatic knight-errant of the silver-grey mare becomes a sort of corrupt Robin Hood: fittingly, he ends half highwayman, half cavalier.<sup>4</sup>

Adult manhood is not simple or unconfined in Conrad; confusions, tensions, disappointments, and corruption strengthen their hold. Growth brings to the Marlow of *Heart of Darkness* a radical discomposure of the self. But the feeling of growth and fuller participation in the human condition carries its own worth. Conrad appears to have altered little the biographical data from his own past. His creative energy goes into acts of selection and juxtaposition, into sensuous prose, and into the provision and use of Marlow: so securing a holdfast upon the discomposure, a detached view of the changing self.

'I don't want to bother you much with what happened to me personally,' he began. ... 'Yet to understand the effect of it on me you ought to know how I got out there, what I saw, how I went up that river to the place where I first met the poor chap. It was the farthest point of navigation and the culminating point of my experience. It seemed somehow to throw a





tone and arrangement. Arrangement, here, includes the company director – 'our captain and our host' – the lawyer, and the accountant, alongside the novelist, comprising Marlow's audience. For the codes and vocations of all these are implicated in the tale to come, and the novel sharpens in many ways our perception of such involvements.

Using style and arrangement like this, and by abundant sensuous life, the opening pages begin to connect many modes of exploration. We experience a movement towards the dead of night, and towards an indistinct region in which London – its lights brilliant on the water – and the Thames of now and of earliest history, and the Congo river, become one; and the various darknesses merge. Conrad purposes not only to penetrate the tenebrous moral and physical world of the Congo, and to trace the web that joins it to London's Thames, and joins its present with our past; his art is also to vibrate with the potentialities of the self that the exploration releases, to suggest the tremors suffered by the stable and complacent levels of judgement. Not that the tale is to become a mere image for the soul's 'night-journey' (after Jung): any more than the Leggatt encountered in the night of *The Secret Sharer* emanates from the psyche of the young captain. These are real meetings with people and the natural world, that so disturb the sensitive regions of the self as to require some new orientation. So far as *Heart of Darkness* records a journey into the darks of the self, those darks awaken at the touch of the actual Congo experience, and what it brings of confusion, fascination, guilt, the sense of nightmare. 'It seemed to throw a kind of light upon everything about me – and into my thoughts.'

what threatens the human order with tragedy appears as storm, and invites heroic resistance. The twentieth-century Conrad of *Nostromo* and *The Shadow-Line* expresses a profounder and more disturbing intuition of menace, under the image of becalmed or stagnant conditions, with the collapse of the power or the will to act. This is more insidious, it turns the mind in on itself to probe at the rationale of living and question its own identity. Decoud at the time of his suicide is the extreme term, pointing to nihilism. More positively there are the diary entries in *The Shadow-Line* and the hours just before the rain comes. *Nostromo* tends to reflect one focal image from episode to episode, as though the human condition in Sulaco is perpetually this: a lighter loaded with the silver that all factions and individuals adjust themselves to, suspended motionless in pitch darkness on a motionless Gulf. There are three figures abroad, Hirsch, impotent with fear, Decoud, impotent with nihilism, and Nostromo at the helm: a steersman whose whole identity has been bound up with public endorsement, and who can accomplish nothing in that Gulf. They are there to serve the instincts of acquisition or of power. And this 'Night of the Gulf' pervades the whole novel. It continues all the while, whatever men or factions may believe. This is what Charles Gould's activity amounts to in the end; and his wife's impotent grief – as the poignant chapter at the end of the book discloses. One reason why the narrative line has often to fall below the surface is to prevent the apparent form of men's doings from concealing the lighter on the Placid Gulf from us. Nostromo's hands seem still to be on that tiller when he lies dead.<sup>6</sup>

*Heart of Darkness* is heavy with brooding at the outset, and still and sombre gloom seems to be the agent, as much as the setting, of the unfolding experience. But just before the first uttered words draw everything together, 'the stir of lights going up and down' catches the eye. Energy and movement continue through the novel to stand over against inertia and stillness. Here, the ordered navigation of ships about their business momentarily sets off the dark places of the earth, and of history, and of human being – undeveloped or deranged. (Just so, the last light to go out in *Typhoon* before anarchy is unloosed is 'the green gleam on the starboard light', the navigation light for ocean traffic.) "And this also" said Marlow suddenly, "has been one of the dark places of the earth". The weight falls memorably on the

first three words. Marlow's mind is already active in the Congo and in the past: the brooding stillness promotes that activity. So the grim speculations upon the bygone Roman invasion of *our* interior, added to that 'also', seem to be both a pertinent tableau of the invasion of Africa, and a disconcerting shift in the point of view. At the same time Marlow's uneasy tone suggests memories so disruptive that he has now to re-live them *dévois*ly, and diminish the tremor by reference to common historical experience. What the experience has done to Marlow, how it has wounded him – this, as much as the journey itself, is Conrad's subject. The sardonic, the mordant, or the facetious note in the raconteur's manner preserves detachment: but there is something else. The caustic flippancy with which he recounts his predecessor's death, for instance, conveys some insecurity. For the fatal eruption of rage in that quiet Danish skipper hints at a transformation of the ego under the pressures set up 'out there' by the jungle and the trading milieu. It is another filament of the web; Marlow discerns himself in his predecessor; their roles are the same. The episode makes an embryo of things to come. Both the naval community and the African community disintegrate: 'The steamer *Fresleven* commanded left also in a bad panic, in charge of the engineer, I believe ... The village was deserted, the huts gaped black, rotting, all askew within the fallen enclosures ... The people had vanished.' It presages the eventual arrival at Kurtz's trading station; it offers the first sight of crazy physical destruction; and 'black' goes on to attach itself to one thing after another – another filament of the web. Marlow, replacing the Danish skipper, finds his way to the shadowed and deserted Company Offices, to the two women knitting black wool and 'guarding the door of darkness'. And so the web ensnares him. His interview with the doctor, if it adds an ingredient of observant humour, quickens our apprehension of quiescent unbalance. 'The changes take place inside, you know'

### PART THREE

dance of death and trade goes on in a still and earthy atmosphere like that of an overheated catacomb.'

The idleness of a passenger, my isolation amongst all these men with whom I had no point of contact, the oily and languid sea, the uniform sombreness of the coast, seemed to keep me away from the truth of things, within the toil of a mournful and senseless delusion. The voice of the surf heard now and then was a positive pleasure, like the speech of a brother. It was something natural, that had its reason, that had a meaning. Now and then a boat from the shore gave one a momentary contact with reality. It was paddled by black fellows. You could see from afar the white of their eyeballs glistening. They shouted, sang; their bodies streamed with perspiration; they had faces like grotesque masks - these chaps; but they had bone, muscle, a wild vitality, an intense energy of movement, that was as natural and true as the surf along their coast. They wanted no excuse for being there. They were a great comfort to look at. For a time I would feel I belonged still to a world of straightforward facts, but the feeling would not last long. Something would turn up to scare it away. Once, I remember, we came upon a man-of-war anchored off the coast. There wasn't even a shed there, and she was shelling the bush. It appears the French had one of their wars going on thereabouts. Her ensign dropped limp like a rag; the muzzles of the long, six-inch guns stuck out all over the low hull; the greasy, slimy swell swung her up lazily and let her down, swaying her thru masts. In the empty immensity of earth, sky, and water, there she was, incomprehensible, firing into a continent. Pop, would go one of the six-inch guns; a small flame would dart and vanish, a little white smoke would disappear, a tiny projectile would give a feeble screech - and nothing happened. Nothing could happen. There was a touch of insanity in the proceeding, a sense of lugubrious drollery in the sight . . . .

This has poetic force; and so has Conrad's command of *montage* and juxtaposition. A mordant commentary rises from within, needing no further expression, as episode and attitude draw power from contiguity. Consider as a sequence the scenes and impressions that follow immediately upon Marlow's arrival at the trading station. If there is a connecting thread, it is his instant reflection as the chain-gang moves

by: 'I foresaw that in the blinding sunshine of that land I would become acquainted with a flabby pretending weak-eyed devil of a rapacious and pitiless folly.' First, a scene of desultory mess: the half-buried boiler, the railway truck with its wheels in the air, the dilapidated machinery. Then the sound of blasting (quite purposeless, it soon appears) recalls the warship pouring out its shells. The chained gang of forced labourers comes very close, in one of the most incisive and pitiful paragraphs anywhere in our fiction. The eye fastens again on material disorder: a heap of broken drain-pipes, 'a wanton smash-up' in a quarry dug for no purpose and abandoned. Then, to draw these sights and sounds into the larger web of the novel, comes an extraordinary impression simultaneously of violent motion and infernal stillness in the African scene. Next, the pity owing to the human victims of this wanton smash-up is summoned by a painful closeness of vision to sick African labourers cast aside to die. Sounds of the objectless blasting go on. As the eye accustoms itself to the gloom of the grove, the 'black shadows' define themselves poignantly as individual human beings. To complete the sequence, there comes into sight the absurd, immaculate figure of the company's chief accountant. 'I saw a high starched collar, white cuffs, a light alpaca jacket, snowy trousers, a clean necktie and varnished boots. No hat. Hair parted, brushed, oiled, under a green-lined parasol held in a big white hand. He was amazing, and had a penholder behind his ear.'

The horror out in the grove gives place to an equal horror indoors, where the impeccably kept trading accounts deflect in turn every human claim. The scenes have the same quality of significant series. The emergence of that accountant, and all that transpires in his office, point up Conrad's creative relationship with Dickens, at the same time as they exhibit a sensuous animation, a rendering of the external, that seem uncanny. Appropriately, it is on this accountant's lips that Marlow first hears Kurtz's name. Kurtz seems to emanate from trade distorted into crass lust of gain; from 'the work of the world' distorted into a perfect accountancy of predatory spoliation; and from the presence there, in that room, of a dying agent. The later and more shameful horrors that gather about him adhere to his function, agent for the Company, who 'sends in as much ivory as all the others put together'. The manager's account of him comes next, and adjoins Marlow's finding the steamer he should command, wrecked and half-

dance of death and trade goes on in a still and earthy atmosphere like that of an overheated catacomb.'

The idleness of a passenger, my isolation amongst all these men with whom I had no point of contact, the oily and languid sea, the uniform sombreness of the coast, seemed to keep me away from the truth of things, within the toil of a mournful and senseless delusion. The voice of the surf heard now and then was a positive pleasure, like the speech of a brother. It was something natural, that had its reason, that had a meaning. Now and then a boat from the shore gave one a momentary contact with reality. It was paddled by black fellows. You could see from afar the white of their eyeballs glistening. They shouted, sang; their bodies streamed with perspiration; they had faces like grotesque masks - these chaps; but they had bone, muscle, a wild vitality, an intense energy of movement, that was as natural and true as the surf along their coast. They wanted no excuse for being there. They were a great comfort to look at. For a time I would feel I belonged still to a world of straightforward facts; but the feeling would not last long. Something would turn up to scare it away. Once, I remember, we came upon a man-of-war anchored off the coast. There wasn't even a shed there, and she was shelling the bush. It appears the French had one of their wars going on thereabouts. Her ensign dropped limp like a rag; the muzzles of the long, six-inch guns stuck out all over the low hull; the greasy, slimy swell swung her up lazily and let her down, swaying her thin masts. In the empty immensity of earth, sky, and water, there she was, incomprehensible, firing into a continent. Pop, would go one of the six-inch guns, a small flame would dart and vanish, a little white smoke would disappear, a tiny projectile would give a feeble screech - and nothing happened. Nothing could happen. There was a touch of insanity in the proceeding, a sense of lugubrious drollery in the sight . . .

This has poetic force: and so has Conrad's command of *montage* and juxtaposition. A mordant commentary rises from within, needing no further expression, as episode and attitude draw power from contiguity. Consider as a sequence the scenes and impressions that follow immediately upon Marlow's arrival at the trading station. If there is a connecting thread, it is his instant reflection as the chain-gang moves

by: 'I foresaw that in the blinding sunshine of that land I would become acquainted with a flabby pretending weak-eyed devil of a rapacious and pitiless folly.' First, a scene of desultory mess: the half-buried boiler, the railway truck with its wheels in the air, the dilapidated machinery. Then the sound of blasting (quite purposeless, it soon appears) recalls the warship pouring out its shells. The chained gang of forced labourers comes very close, in one of the most incisive and pitiful paragraphs anywhere in our fiction. The eye fastens again on material disorder: a heap of broken drain-pipes, 'a wanton smash-



### PART THREE

sensation of any given epoch of one's existence - that which makes its truth, its meaning - its subtle and penetrating essence. It is impossible. We live, as we dream - alone.'

He paused again as if reflecting, then added -

'Of course in this you fellows see more than I could then. You see me whom you know.'

It had become so pitch dark that the listeners could hardly see one another.

There are limits to what can be communicated of the farther reaches of Marlow's memories, except obliquely. And part of the obliquity is this way the prose has of giving the resurgence of Kurtz and his fascination in a style of absurd vehemence. 'The man presented himself as a voice.' 'What carried the sense of his real presence was his ability to talk, his words.' The horror of Kurtz is in part an evil done upon style: upon the decorum and usefulness of language - that lucidity of speech that makes for reasonings and clear perception. During the journey downriver we find that at any moment the ordinary detail of work to be done, or the sensory facts of wilderness and river, may re-establish their equilibrium. And other vital parts of the horror of Kurtz too, may be defined with sardonic vigilance. The extravagant rhetoric is no artistic accident: it gives part of the memory's response to the experience itself, and it indicates the quality of the fascination which so subtly disturbs Marlow's own moral categories at that time with its menacing and yet. In him, too, during the ordeal, and drawing him towards the corrupted trader, it is a rhetoric to bolster egotism, even at the hideous price of proposing something 'moral' about Kurtz's final deed. The final scene concerning him suggests something unappetizing in the direction and purpose given to life by the functioning or malfunctioning of economic forces at work beneath the pretension of a civilizing mission, and by the 'wanton smash-up' of primitive communities. It is Conrad's achievement to communicate a profound sense of savagery, independently of any traditional, romantic notion of savagery, essentially, against human dignity. The black market of diseased and cast-off African workers first call it into play, and that grotesque parody of what collaborative work ought to be, the chain-gang. And in Kurtz himself we get the monstrous assertion of the self against traditional morality, integrity in human dealing, and law. The diversity of race

and nation drawn into the novel's web, and the interlocking responsibilities of warships, soldiers, traders, and seamen, provide authority for the claim thrown out as if accidentally - 'All Europe contributed to the making of Kurtz.' The predatory lust that possesses him takes support from the objects of the Company he serves, and that Company is felt in a ghastly way to be active on behalf of all acquisitive Europe, requiring its civilized ivory luxury, and disengaging the human ties in pursuit of wealth for power, power for more wealth, without end.

This is not all that needs to be said of the darkness, the horror, that Marlow encounters; but this is its plain force, and to minimize it is to read glibly, in Kurtz's own fashion. Other darknesses, too, inhabit the jungle interior, and something especially sinister seems to emanate from the collision between what the traders are, and bring with them, and what they find already there. And again, inhabiting those voids of rhetoric and anxiety on Marlow's later pages is the sense of delusion, of nightmare. There is an abyss at hand, the human tenure of any moral categories feels insecure. We are nearing the darknesses and solitudes of *Nostromo*, the shadow of Koh-ring and the uncharted seas of *The Secret Sharer* and *The Shadow-Line*. In *Heart of Darkness*, this particular insecurity seems partly to lurk in the wanton disregard of the smaller, traditional morality, operative in the charted places. These suggestions, then, are present, but the plain meaning stands. The novel's first movement opened with the grim tableau of the Roman expeditionary force penetrating our own interior. The movement ends with the return from the African interior of the Eldorado expedition. Conrad never wrote a page more laconically savage.

But the rivets are quite another matter. By contrast with the ivory and the darkness there is the salvage of the steamer, the order of work and purpose. The need of ships to be under way, in other Conrad tales, is to enable seafaring activities and skills to be exercised in purposeful collaboration. So here, the work of repair. 'Waiting for rivets' Marlow 'stuck to his salvage night and day'. Those rivets are a characteristic triumph: the symbolism proposes itself perfectly naturally. The salvage briefly restores the social bonds that rapacious folly disrupts, and it resists the paralysis all round it. Marlow doesn't relinquish the sardonic manner altogether, but respect prevails. A man

When the sun rose there was a white fog, very warm and clammy, and more blinding than the night. It did not shift or drive; it was just there, standing all round you like something solid.

It is the kind of experience we have at the scene of Decoud's suicide, and again as Mrs Gould suffers her own death-in-life desolation at the end of *Nostromo*. Its last form is the embodied intuition of 'a sense of finality' just before the rain falls in *The Shadow-Line*. But even upon the horror of that paralysis there supervenes 'the seaman's instinct alone survived whole in my moral dissolution'. The contrary forces stand over against each other: that of the gulf, the typhoon, the wilderness, beyond the scope of moral certitudes and obligations, isolating and dissolving personal consciousness; and that of traditional human codes, reciprocal service, vocation, the sense of the human bond. On either side they stand at the culmination of Marlow's journey, and the needle still swings between them in Conrad's next major achievement: 'Both the typhoon and Captain Macwhirr presented themselves to me as the necessities ...'<sup>8</sup>

There is a fine ease about the later parts of Conrad's best work, which is the earned ease of genius. One thinks of the last stages in the relationship of Leggatt and the young captain in *The Secret Sharer*; of the pages just before the final onslaught of the typhoon; of the handling of Ransome towards the end of *The Shadow-Line*. Having worked so hard for his imagined world, having so profoundly gauged and charted its significances, Conrad has finally only to log accurately and in order the physical and the spiritual facts. So it is with the coming upon Kurtz himself at last, the nocturnal orgy, the return journey, and the superb scene of Kurtz's death. That outing at dead of night, and the orgy, draw all the filaments of the web visibly together. This is the dance of death and trade: like the lighter on the Placid Gulf in the greater novel, this is what has happened throughout, manifestly or covertly. Everyone seems to be a part of it: the manager, the pilgrims ('squirting lead in the air out of Winchesters held to the hip' so that we remember the crass violence of those warships), the Africans, Marlow, Kurtz himself, even the Company's head offices - 'the knitting old woman with the cat ... a most improper person to be sitting at the other end of such an affair'.

The achievement of the closing pages is more equivocal. The



# HARDY, DE LA MARE, AND EDWARD THOMAS

H. COOMBES

GEORGIAN poetry derives unduly, that is to say with a minimum of significant modification, from early- and later-nineteenth-century romantic poetry. From that poetry it mostly took over the weaker characteristics such as vague emotion, inexpressive sing-song rhythms, emphasis on surface verbal music for its own sake, and the tendency to fantasy or dream without any very strong human interest. We can usefully make discriminations, but it remains generally true that the Georgians allowed themselves only a limited range of feelings and mostly stereotyped techniques. Hardy, de la Mare, and Edward Thomas (who is often associated with the Georgians though he never appeared in Edward Marsh's Georgian Books) stand out by their refusal to wear the label of a category.

Of the three poets of permanent value to be here considered, Walter de la Mare (1873-1956) is the most readily assimilable to nineteenth-century techniques and habits of thought and feeling, but to say this is not to question the individuality of his poetic gift. And if, as is likely, the factor of 'escape' must come into our final estimate of de la Mare, we shall nevertheless be wise not to insist on 'reality' as in all conditions a fixed and all-redeeming criterion. It is indisputable that most of his poetry evades reality in various important ways. Yet precisely because of his evasion, his gifts being what they were, he created a body of exquisite minor poetry.

He was, of course, perfectly aware of the dream-like quality of his poetry; he cultivated fantasy, he aimed consciously at entrancement. But he was not wholly aware of the hazards for a poet in postulating, as he repeatedly does, a dichotomy between 'the day's travail' and 'the garden of the Lord's' in which he is enchanted by the dream that brings poetry:

Ev'n in the shallow, busy hours of day  
Dreams their intangible enchantments weave,

Happy childhood, harsh adult world, happy recollections of childhood, pleasure and profit in dreaming, beauty and transcendental worth of nature, the duty to love: this seems a reasonably fair account. An innate tenderness saved de la Mare from the danger Yeats saw in such a creed:

We had fed the heart on fantasies,  
The heart's grown brutal from the fare.

But the habit did involve for him a certain narrowness of sympathetic response as well as repetition and monotony. And though his general delight in flowers, trees, insects, birds, streams is unquestionable, his apprehension of the natural world is nothing like so full or delicate as Hardy's or Edward Thomas's.

There is validity in the common view of de la Mare's poetry as 'making the actual magical and the magical actual': the issue here is one of the magic of dream and of the child's world. This does not mean that it is a poetry of the nursery, though much of it does in fact delight children. Many readers feel 'that beneath the murmur of childish voices we hear a more ancient and wiser tongue, the language of myth and fairytale, dream and symbol'.<sup>1</sup>

There is little need here to point to de la Mare's skill in creating atmosphere idyllic or foreboding (*Nod*, *The Tailor*, *At the Keyhole*, *Never-to-be*), or the aptness of his rhythms in various kinds of narrative and situation (*The Dwelling-Place*, *Off the Ground*, *Nicholas Nye*), or the wistful or humorous fancies (*Sam*, *The Quartette*, *Where*), or the small pathetic pieces (*The Silver Penny*, *All But Blind*, *Fare Well*); these are plain for all to see. But his habit of mind, impelling him to handle his themes in a particular way, does involve him too often in a dependence on a 'verbal magic' which is overmuch a matter of dexterity with vowels and consonants. And in moving about his world - green shadows, cool clear water, slim hands, unfolding buds, starry tapers, steps on stairs, dark hair and shining eyes, moths at evening, dew, faint shrill cries of birds, sailors' bones, tranquil dreams, dying fires, woods, musicians - we do need to discriminate between the genuine poetry and a routine use of the properties.

Our concern as adult readers is finally with adult poetry, with those poems in which an interesting play of mind accompanies the enchanted atmosphere and the word-music. *Old Shellover* is one of

### PART THREE

many poems, slight but real, which do not wholly rely on power to charm with mystery. The snails and the scene have their own small reality, and a touch of feeling implicit in the dialogue makes the poem just that little more than a 'pretty fancy':

'Come!' said Old Shellover.  
'What?' says Creep.  
'The horny old Gardener's fast asleep;  
The fat cock Thrush  
To his nest has gone,  
And the dew shines bright  
In the rising moon;  
Old Sallie Worm from her hole doth peep;  
'Come!' said Old Shellover.  
'Ay!' said Creep.

*The Witch* tells how her pack of spells and sorceries, as she slept under the churchyard wall, was plundered by the dead who thereupon assumed the shapes of wild creatures. The poem is lively with crisp action and has genuinely created atmosphere; everyday 'unromantic' terms - 'jerked it off her back', 'squats asleep' - play their part in a final effect of 'romantic' economy:

Names may be writ; and mounds rise;  
Purporting, Here be bones:  
But empty is that churchyard  
Of all save stones.

Owl and Newt and Nightjar,  
Leveret, Bat and Mole  
Haunt and call in the twilight,  
Where she slept, poor soul.

Sometimes, as in *John Mouldy*, atmosphere is subtly achieved with a minimum of supernatural story. Mould in a cellar has moved the poet to a creation lightly but convincingly sinister:

I spied John Mouldy in his cellar,  
Deep down twenty steps of stone;  
In the dark he sat a-smiling,  
Smiling there alone.

He read no book, he snuffed no candle,  
The rats ran in, the rats ran out;  
And far and near, the drip of water  
Went whispering about.

The dusk was still, with dew a-falling,  
I saw the Dog Star bleak and grim,  
I saw a slim brown rat of Norway  
Creep over him.

I spied John Mouldy in his cellar,  
Deep down twenty steps of stone;  
In the dark he sat a-smiling,  
Smiling there alone.

Here a variety of elements, of facts and things with widely dissimilar associations, have been brought into unity. The subject has engaged the poet; the word-music serves imagination.

*The Ghost* and *The Song of the Mad Prince* are two of those poems in which the poet aims at expressing more profoundly personal emotion. Both deal with love and loss. In the first of them a dialogue between the man and the ghost, movingly dramatic within the 'wistful' range, is followed by the characteristic de la Mare 'magic':

Silence. Still faint on the porch  
Brake the flame of the stars.

In context the self-conscious poeticality is effective enough, but then the gloom is laid on heavily, and the poem ends with 'vast Sorrow', and the ghost of the loved one has become almost an occasion for indulgence in the 'sweet cheat' of illusion. The reality of sharp personal feeling has in the end been evaded. In *The Song of the Mad Prince* the idealization is purposive and seems a quite natural movement of feeling in the totality of the poem:

Who said, 'Peacock Pie'?  
The old King to the sparrow:  
Who said, 'Crops are ripe'?  
Rust to the harrow:  
Who said, 'Where sleeps she now?'  
Where rests she now her head,  
Bathed in eve's loveliness?  
That's what I said.





evocations of childhood it is never the magic that he emphasizes. His sense of change and of bereavement was exceptionally acute; furthermore he was dogged by a view of life which could afford him no illusory comforts. And the power of these agencies in his life was the stronger because his interest in humanity and in phenomena was great and lasting. He was a humane, sensitive man who could not entertain any suggestion of a Deity other than an indifferent or a malevolent one, and who did not believe in any form of personal survival as it is usually understood; who yet had deep loves in his life and who keenly observed and seriously pondered. Out of his beliefs and the tensions generated between his beliefs and his intimate feelings sprang his poetry, first-rate and third-rate alike.

Perhaps his one escape is to be found in the pertinacity with which he held to his conception of a Vast Imbecility or a neutral Spinner of the Years or a sightless Mother presiding over a mankind endowed (or cursed) with sentience; this pertinacity led him often into heavy protests, portentous and uttered with a prosy clumsiness which, while unquestionably sincere, is too simply explicit to impress deeply:

## AN ENQUIRY

### A Phantasy

*Circumdederunt me dolores mortis. — Psalm xviii*

I said to It: 'We grasp not what you meant,  
 (Dwelling down here, so narrowly pinched and pent)  
 By crowning Death the King of the Firmament:  
     The query I admit to be  
     One of unwonted size,  
 But it is put to you sorrowingly,  
     And not in idle-wise.'

Or he was betrayed — if the phrase is appropriate to writing that was so completely deliberate — into anecdotes and episodes which reveal a perverse preoccupation with 'life's little ironies' and a prepossession with gloom: the young Parson in *The Curate's Kindness* has succeeded in persuading the Guardians of the Workhouse to annul the regulation separating man and wife, but the narrator is dismayed when he hears about it:

### PART THREE

'I thought they'd be strangers aroun' me,  
But she's to be there!  
Let me jump out o'wagon and go back and drown me  
At Pummery or Ten-Hatches Weir.'

And it is a fixed, unalive cynicism that calls in despair for a return of human impercipient:

Ere nescience shall be reaffirmed  
How long, how long?

Sometimes the language corresponds in luridness or inflation to the melodrama of the subject; at other times it is merely metrical and low-pitched rhymed prose. A failure in self-criticism leads him sometimes into humourless solemnities and bathos.

Yet the bent of Hardy's mind is ultimately conditioned by a sympathy for human and animal suffering and usually even the banalities, in their context, have saving sincerities. There are, moreover, many poems (*The Sleep-Worker*, for instance) which, though we may consider their prompting idea to be unduly partial, show a steady progression of thought which is impressive.

The case that Hardy makes out for 'pessimism' in the *Apology to Late Lyrics and Earlier* (1922) cannot at any rate be dismissed on the ground of insincerity: 'What is today,' he writes, 'in allusion to the present author's pages, alleged to be "pessimism", is, in truth, only "questionings" in the exploration of reality, and is the first step towards the soul's betterment, and the body's also.' He claimed that his poems were 'a series of fugitive impressions', and not the expression of anything like a systematized view of life. This is certainly true of a limited number of the poems, but if they are taken altogether most readers will feel that there was a certain amount of self-deception in the claim.

But despite being based too often on a view of life which seems to inhibit a free responsiveness, Hardy's poems provide an abundance of people and incident and perceptions; they are the work of a man who is also a novelist. Eye and ear are delicate and vigilant: he notes 'the smooth sea-line with a metal shine', and May's 'glad green leaves ... Delicate-filmed as new-spun silk'. In *Old Furniture*, where he thinks with characteristic affection of the hands that have owned



observation and kindness to living things, at the same time envisaging with detachment his 'bell of quittance'; the poem is full of particular perceptions played off beautifully against the idea of death. In *An Ancient to Ancients*, tone and movement are more formal, but there remains a distinctive pathos in his account of the changes of fashion in dancing, opera, painting, poetry. *His Visitor* pictures the ghost who has 'come across from Mellstock while the moon wastes weaker' to revisit her home; disappointed by the changes she sees, she leaves 'to make again for Mellstock to return here never And rejoin the roomy silence ...': the tone is low-pitched and the rhythms (though regular) unemphatic, and the feeling comes from the quiet manner of conveying the sense of the importance to the ghost of the domesticities whose changes now trouble her. The feeling, it should be said, is comparatively unsubtle, as it is in *Beeny Cliff, March 1870-March 1913* and in *Five Students*, two other moving 'middle-range' poems with a poignant significance for the writer.

What justifies the use of 'wonderful' near the beginning of the previous paragraph is the extraordinary power and originality with which Hardy records in his best poems a tragic sense derived from intense personal experience. In these poems we have the stoicism which has not involved any evasion of the felt multiplicity and force of life. There is none of the simplifying division into ideal and actual which Hardy was prone to fall into, no over-spiritualization of women. The actual in these poems is imbued by the fineness of Hardy's spirit with a profound significance. Most, though not all, concern a man-woman relationship. All are an outcome of intensely pondered experience. There is simultaneously a vivid evocation of the past and a vivid rendering of the feeling of the present moment.

The grey bleakness of loss is conveyed as strongly in *Neutral Tones*, written in his twenties, as in *The Voice*, written in his seventies, though the earlier poem has a note of bitterness not present in the later one. Both poems make wonderful use of the natural scene: in the first, 'the pond edged with greyish leaves', and in the second

the breeze, in its listlessness,  
Travelling across the wet mead to me here

are powerful agents of feeling.



to remember vividly is at the same time, inescapably, to embrace the utterness of loss.'

*During Wind and Rain* is hardly less fine and moving, though less intensely personal, than *After a Journey*. Here again the past is vivid in consciousness. In each of four stanzas a warmly recalled moment or scene is brought sharply up against a refrain-like line whose burden is 'the years', and this is followed by a last line which gives with great force and immediacy a detail of the wild autumn day now before the poet. The deliberation of the stressing in the final line of the poem,

Down their carved names the rain-drop ploughs,  
clinches, with precisely that implication of mortality, the poet's confrontation of reality in the beauty and vividness of art.

The epic-drama, *The Dynasts* (1903-28), has been claimed by some admirers to be Hardy's greatest work. But while it is impressive by its manifestation of the peculiar strength and quality of its author's character, it seems in its magnitude to be more a matter of determined accumulation for preconceived ends than of impulsion from Hardy's deepest emotional being.

It is one of the triumphs of Edward Thomas (1878-1917) that with the character and temperament he possessed he could move quite away from the kind of shadowiness that marks de la Mare's poetry, and also out of the landscape that Hardy too often colours with his own greyness of spirit, into an open and fresh air. When we call him a poet of minute particularity and fidelity we have in mind both phenomena and mood. His poetic output, compared with that of Hardy and de la Mare, is small, but a high proportion of it bears his characteristic excellences. The fact that he did not start writing poetry until he was thirty-five accounts in part for a degree of self-awareness and self-criticism that served him well. He knew from the start that there were certain things he wished to avoid in his poetry, and it was because he was an original poet with the original poet's disturbing power that editors to whom he submitted poems were almost unanimously discouraging.

Reviewing Robert Frost's *North of Boston* in 1914 Thomas wrote: 'These poems are revolutionary because they lack the exaggeration of rhetoric.' This is a way of saying that he welcomed a departure from at least some of the aspects of nineteenth-century poetry. His own poems were alleged, by friends during his lifetime and by many

critics after his death, to lack 'form'. He was felt to be disturbingly different from the typical Georgian poets (several of whom he was friendly with). His refusal to take the influential Edward Garnett's advice to 'chisel' *Lob* is characteristic of his steady perseverance in the way he wanted to go. We can now see Edward Thomas as a poet of great distinction, English in a profound sense, a voice that is contemporary in the middle of the twentieth century.

It is only on the superficial ground of broad similarity of subject matter that Edward Thomas can be assimilated to the Georgians. Nature and the countryside, though intensely and exquisitely appreciated for their own sake, are mainly in his poetry an occasion for exploring and presenting his mood and character and a whole mode of experiencing; while his best love poems are quite personal. The presentment is quiet, delicate, and strong, and the quality of the man profoundly interesting.

He had the gift of putting character, mood, attitude to life, into a seemingly small situation, into a moment's perceiving. And the records he unassumingly offers will enhance the more our own power of experiencing because he is in close and vitalizing touch with the natural world. He can give us enlightenment on *simony and beauty*.

This poem is entitled *A Tale*:

There once the walls  
Of the ruined cottage stood  
The periwinkle crawls  
With flowers in its hair into the wood  
  
In flowerless ~~hills~~  
Never will the bank ~~fall~~  
With everlasting flowers  
On fragments of blue plates, to tell the tale.

A small poem, as serious though not as powerful as Wordsworth's *A Slumber Did My Spirit Seal*. The cottage and scene are actual and now; but what they tell is not simply the tale of themselves but *the* tale of man's life, of nature and change, of *disappearance* and also of relics that are emblems of endeavour. Thomas perceives a depth in the seen. In another small poem, *The Hollow Wood*, a goldfinch flits and feeds on thistle-tops at the edge of a wood, while other birds pass to and fro inside the wood: we can ~~abstract~~ *abstract* an idea-feeling if we



### PART THREE

wish from the juxtaposition in the poem of the known and bright with the strange and dark. But what is essentially communicated is a way of seeing and feeling that has depth and innerness while still remaining fresh and physical.

'Forest' or 'wood' is a recurring symbol in Edward Thomas, and its introduction is invariably a spontaneous and unforced item of the experience he is describing. With its various significances - obscure regions of human experience not wholly susceptible to rational explanation, or the gulf 'where nothing is But what is not', or thoughts of death - it is connected in Thomas's poetry with his well-known melancholy. But he does not simplify and narrow down; his poetic analysis of his feeling is finer than (say) the typical Victorian or Georgian piece in being immeasurably more than an expression of regret or sorrow or apprehensiveness. There are no inert or merely weary poems in Thomas. He never fails in sharp sensuous perceiving and rarely in a precision of phrasing which retains a hauntingly natural manner.

In *The Gypsy* he goes home at night after the Christmas fair and market, carrying with him the image of what he has seen and heard:

Not even the kneeling ox had eyes like the Romany,  
That night he peopled for me the hollow wooded land,  
More dark and wild than stormiest heavens, that I searched and  
    scanned  
Like a ghost new-arrived The gradations of the dark  
Were like an underworld of death, but for the spark  
In the Gypsy boy's black eyes as he played and stamped his tune,  
'Over the hills and far away' and a crescent moon.

The feeling of a dark unknown immensity is very powerful, but it is not all-conquering: against the blackness and the words of the tune (suggesting an ever farther recession) there are the spark, the strength of stamping, the new moon. Even in the most stark among the poems, *Rain* for instance -

Rain, midnight rain, nothing but the wild rain  
On this bleak hut, and solitude, and me  
Remembering again that I shall die ...

- and in the poems, such as *Lights Out*, where he seems near to surrender, there is no defeat and no flaccidity. A sensitiveness of move-

ment and an exactness of statement show the poet to be in full and alert control.

In many of the poems it is a subtle intermingling of diverse sense-impressions and delicate observations that is largely effective in conveying a feeling of elusive experience which the poet has nevertheless firmly caught. *Ambition* has an extraordinary interplay of images of energetic life with a sense of silence and emptiness. *The Brook* has child paddling and man seated, butterfly on stone, silent bird and silent man, a horse galloping and a horse at rest. The dualities in Thomas's poetry – clear and misty, near and far, sound and silence, present and past, movement and stillness, thought and sensation, and so on – are never posited by the poet. We may or may not note them consciously as we read, but they have their effect in a seemingly inevitable whole.

What is in fact subtly organized poetry sounds often like the poet speaking easily but with beautiful precision, revealing an inner life by a remarkably sensitive account of the outer world. The second half of *March* follows on a vivid rendering of a bitterly cold day of hail and wind, with the sun now near the end of the day filling earth and heaven with a great light, but no warmth:

... What did the thrushes know? Rain, snow, sleet, hail,  
Had kept them quiet as the primroses.  
They had but an hour to sing. On boughs they sang,  
On gates, on ground; they sang while they changed perches  
And while they fought, if they remembered to fight:  
So earnest were they to pack into that hour  
Their unwilling hoard of song before the moon  
Grew brighter than the clouds. Then 'twas no time  
For singing merely. So they could keep off silence  
And night, they cared not what they sang or screamed;  
Whether 'twas hoarse or sweet or fierce or soft;  
And to me all was sweet: they could do no wrong.  
Something they knew – I also, while they sang  
And after. Not till night had half its stars  
And never a cloud, was I aware of silence  
Stained with all that hour's songs, a silence  
Saying that Spring returns, perhaps to-morrow.

To appreciate this in all its rich significance, it would of course be necessary to see it with the first half of the poem. But the extract may show how the feelings and perceptions, the thankfulness that overcomes the distress of the cold, the exquisite way the silence comes into his consciousness, the sense that the Spring of the poem is happiness (without ceasing to be Spring), are given – to use Thomas's words about Frost – 'through fidelity to the postures which the voice assumes in the most expressive intimate speech'.

His language is quite free from stale poeticalities. It frequently has, it is true, words common in 'romantic' poetry of nature and love and disillusion – sweet, solitary, once, strange, hidden, vainly, happy – but they are never simply exploited for their stock emotional content; they are *used* as an essential item, modifying and modified by other items. He makes good use also, with a sort of homely vividness, of phrases which were deemed unpoetical by many of his contemporary readers: his thrushes *pack* into an hour their 'unwilling hoard of song'. It is ultimately his complete lack of condescension, his openness to impressions, which give his language (like his rhythms) a certain easy breadth; the breadth contributes to a total complexity born of a rare union of fastidiousness and democratic sympathy, including humour:

Women he liked, did shovel-bearded Bob,  
Old Farmer Hayward of the Heath, but he  
Loved horses. He himself was like a cob,  
And leather-coloured. Also he loved a tree.

A certain robustness-with-shrewdness, like that which he portrays with such a light touch in Old Jack (to use one of Lob's several folk-names), is an ingredient of his own character:

He is English as this gate, these flowers, this mire.  
And when at eight years old Lob-lie-by-the-fire  
Came in my books, this was the man I saw.  
He has been in England as long as dove and daw ...

*Old Man*, *The Glory*, *The Other*, are among the finest of many poems that present a self-questioning which does not preclude a wealth of outgoing feeling, and a reaching for fulfilment which we feel cannot for him be dependent upon any possible creed or any group-support. The nature of the statement and the self-searching



# THE LITERATURE OF THE FIRST WORLD WAR

D. J. ENRIGHT

*Johore Professor of English, University of Malaya in Singapore*

THOUGH Wilfred Owen and Siegfried Sassoon may not have contributed to the establishment of what we call 'modernism', the poetry of the First World War has a clear right to be considered part and parcel of modern poetry. It would be strange were this not so, for the experience of the War was emphatically one which could not be conveyed in debilitated nineteenth-century poetic conventions. Owen's poetic antecedents and personal tastes were of the nineteenth century; he was in no sense a conscious innovator of the kind of T. S. Eliot or Ezra Pound or even the Imagists; he was not a literary intellectual, he was probably unaware of any poetic crisis, quite possibly he had read neither the Jacobean nor the Metaphysicals. Simply, the War, a great non-literary event, forced him, as a poet and an honest man, to find another way of speaking.

The compulsion behind this War poetry, that is to say, was one of subject-matter. This is particularly true of Sassoon, whose style when one becomes aware of it, is unashamedly old-fashioned. In the more successful War poetry, the style capitulated to the subject-matter; in the best of it, and predominantly in Owen's work, the style was *in* the subject-matter.

Since the reputations of the War writers are by now variously established, this essay will largely take the form of an anthology accompanied by a minimum of commentary. We begin with a brief comparison between Rupert Brooke (1897-1915) as old-style war poet and Wilfred Owen (1893-1918) as new-style war poet, which, though hackneyed, is still useful. For one thing, the comparison serves as a simple illustration of a basic difference between early-twentieth-century 'traditional' poetry and modern poetry: the abandonment by the latter of nice-mindedness, of prescribed 'romantic' paraphernalia, of the conception of poetry as 'dream'. But the



I and II; indeed, the octave concerns the past life of the dead, rather affectedly described but not perverse. The sestet describes water which has frosted over, and seems to have nothing to do with the octave.

Sonnet V, *The Soldier* (amusingly summed up in a student's comment in the Asian library copy before me as 'frank and unashamed peace of patriotism'), I quote in full, as it is certainly Brooke's most celebrated poem and probably still more widely read than Owen's *Strange Meeting*.

If I should die, think only this of me:  
That there's some corner of a foreign field  
That is for ever England. There shall be  
In that rich earth a richer dust concealed;  
A dust whom England bore, shaped, made aware,  
Gave, once, her flowers to love, her ways to roam,  
A body of England's, breathing English air,  
Washed by the rivers, blest by suns of home.

And think, this heart, all evil shed away,  
A pulse in the eternal mind, no less  
Gives somewhere back the thoughts by England given;  
Her sights and sounds; dreams happy as her day;  
And laughter, learnt of friends; and gentleness,  
In hearts at peace, under an English heaven.

In its simple-minded flamboyant way, it seems successful enough, a pleasant period piece, 'frank and unashamed'. But a second reading suggests that a little shame could well have leavened the frankness. The reiteration of 'England' and 'English' is all very well; but an odd uncertainty as to whether the poet is praising England or himself - 'a richer dust' - remains despite that reiteration. Moreover, the 'mysticism' of the sestet, whereby the treasures enumerated in the octave are to be given back ('somewhere', to somebody), is hardly more convincing, though obviously better educated, than the pathetic desiderations found in the 'In Memoriam' column of any local newspaper.

In short, Brooke's war poetry is typically pre-War poetry. And what has been said above is no more than was said, with far more authority, by a number of poets within a short time of Brooke's death. Charles Sorley (1895-1915; he died six months later, but those months had been spent on the Western Front) had said: 'The voice

of our poets and men of letters is finely trained and sweet to hear ... it pleases, it flatters, it charms, it soothes: it is a living lie.<sup>1</sup> He made the radical criticism of Brooke's work: 'He has clothed his attitude in fine words: but he has taken the sentimental attitude.' And in a sonnet Sorley makes an explicit rejoinder to Brooke's 1914 sequence:

When you see millions of the mouthless dead  
Across your dreams in pale battalions go,  
Say not soft things as other men have said,  
That you'll remember. For you need not so.  
Give them not praise. For, deaf, how should they know  
It is not curses heaped on each gashed head?  
Nor tears. Their blind eyes see not your tears flow,  
Nor honour. It is easy to be dead.

Sorley's attitude to the conflict – an attitude which grew stronger in later writing, where the conflict came to seem one of soldiers against politicians rather than nationality against nationality – was already far more thoughtful, humane, and accurate than Brooke's:

... in each other's dearest ways we stand,  
And hiss and hate. And the blind fight the blind.

Relevant on this point is Sir Herbert Read's (b. 1893) remark in *Annals of Innocence and Experience*:

It must be remembered that in 1914 our conception of war was completely unreal. We had vague childish memories of the Boer War, and from these and from a general diffusion of Kiplingesque sentiments, we managed to infuse into war a decided element of adventurous romance. War still appealed to the imagination.

A little later it was to appeal, violently, to the senses, and the old imagination was blown to pieces. There are the few poems of Arthur Graeme West (1891–1917) to show how that imagination was exploded:

Next was a bunch of half a dozen men  
All blown to bits, an archipelago  
Of corrupt fragments ...

(*Night Patrol*, March 1916)

In a letter written early in 1917 Owen comments, '... everything unnatural, broken, blasted; the distortion of the dead, whose unburiableness



### PART THREE

bodies sit outside the dug-outs all day, all night, the most execrable sights on earth. In poetry we call them the most glorious.' Finally there is Robert Graves (b. 1895), in *Goodbye to All That*, reporting conversation with Siegfried Sassoon in November 1915:

... he showed me some of his own poems. One of them began:

'Return to greet me, colours that were my joy,  
Not in the woeful crimson of men slain ...'

Siegfried had not yet been in the trenches. I told him, in my old-soldier manner, that he would soon change his style.

In considering the real poetry of the War, or the poetry of the real War, we may most conveniently begin with Siegfried Sassoon (b. 1886), the one major war poet (one would not include Robert Graves or Edmund Blunden, b. 1896, in the category of war poets) to survive the War.

The great compulsion here, as to a lesser extent in Owen's work, was to communicate reality, to convey the truth of modern warfare to those not directly engaged in it. For this was the first modern war, in respect of destructive power; at the same time it was (for the British people at least) the last of the old wars in which the civilian population were at a safe distance from the destruction. As Professor de S. Pinto reminds us, by 1916 a change had taken place in English society whereby a vertical division, cutting across class distinctions, separated the Nation at Home from the Nation Overseas (i.e. the armies on the Continent). Inevitably civilian attitudes were, to use Herbert Read's term, largely Kiplingesque. Information and correction were necessary, and all the more so in view of the romantic lies of the politicians, the nobility-in-absentia of the newspapers, and the vicarious altruism of the profiteers. The common soldier could not speak for himself, and the casualty lists apparently did not speak plainly enough. Thus the writers in the trenches felt it a duty, not simply to write poems or prose, but to write about the trenches.

The mood in Sassoon's early verse of

War is our scourge; yet war has made us wise,  
And, fighting for our freedom, we are free

(*Absolution*)



### PART THREE

more powerful, or more permanently powerful, had the mode of satire been more controlled, more calculated, and had Sassoon drawn these victims less sketchily, we must yet admit that in the best of his poems it is the spontaneity, the lack of calculation, which impresses us. They were so clearly written out of honest rage and decent indignation.

Perhaps it is significant that since the War Sassoon has only written so forcefully when remembering it. One of his best pieces was provoked by the erection of the great War Memorial near Ypres, *On Passing the New Menin Gate, 1927*:

Who will remember, passing through this Gate,  
The unheroic Dead who fed the guns?  
Who shall absolve the foulness of their fate, -  
Those doomed, conscripted, unvictorious ones?  
Crudely renewed, the Salient holds its own.  
Paid are its dim defenders by this pomp;  
Paid, with a pile of peace-complacent stone,  
The armies who endured that sullen swamp ...

There is also the satirical collection, *The Road to Ruin*, written in the early thirties: a prefigurement of similar ambitions, euphemisms, and lies, leading to another great war, with greater weapons and more radical destruction. The opening poem describes the Prince of Darkness standing with his staff at the Cenotaph, 'unostentatious and respectful', and praying, 'Make them forget, O Lord, what this Memorial means ...' The best is probably *An Unveiling*:

The President's oration ended thus:  
'Not vainly London's War-gassed victims perished.  
We are a part of them, and they of us;  
As such they will perpetually be cherished  
Not many of them did much, but all did what  
They could, who stood like warriors at their post  
(Even when too young to walk). This hallowed spot  
Commemorates a proud, though poisoned host.  
We honour here' (he paused) 'our Million Dead;  
Who, as a living poet has nobly said,  
"Are now forever London" ...'

Its effectiveness is much increased by memories of the poet's earlier piece on the New Menin Gate and of Brooke's *Soldier*, reincarnated in the form of a civilian casualty list.







### PART THREE

The shrill, demented choirs of wailing shells;  
And bugles calling for them from sad shires,

though a very different kind of glory from the official one. The when we arrive at the sestet of the sonnet, the bitterness of the opening has faded, and what prevails is the quiet restrained sorrow appropriate to a tragic close. (The quietness of tone may prevent us from noticing what a risk Owen took in his last line, how narrowly brought it off.)

It is instructive to set side by side a poem of Owen's and one Sassoon's, the originating impulses of which were clearly similar:

The Bishop tells us: 'When the boys come back  
They will not be the same; for they'll have fought  
In a just cause: they lead the last attack  
On Anti-Christ; their comrades' blood has bought  
New right to breed an honourable race,  
They have challenged Death and dared him face to face.'

'We're none of us the same!' the boys reply.  
'For George lost both his legs; and Bill's stone blind;  
Poor Jim's shot through the lungs and like to die;  
And Bert's gone syphilitic: you'll not find  
A chap who's served that hasn't found *some* change.'  
And the Bishop said: 'The ways of God are strange!'  
(Sassoon: 'They')

I mind as 'ow the night afore that show  
Us five got talking, - we was in the know, -  
'Over the top to-morrer; boys, we're for it.  
First wave we are, first ruddy wave; that's tore it.'  
'Ah well,' says Jimmy, - an' 'e's seen some scrappin' -  
'There ain't more nor five things as can 'appen; -  
'Ye get knocked out; else wounded - bad or cushy;  
Scuppered; or nowt except yer feeling mushy.'

One of us got the knock-out, blown to chops.  
T'other was hurt like, losin' both 'is props.  
An' one, to use the word of 'ypocrites,  
'Ad the misfortoon to be took be Fritz.

## THE LITERATURE OF THE FIRST WORLD WAR

Now me, I wasn't scratched, praise God Amighty  
(Though next time please I'll thank 'im for a blighty),  
But poor young Jim, 'e's livin' an' 'e's not;  
'E reckoned 'e'd five chances, an' 'e 'ad;  
'E's wounded, killed, and pris'ner, all the lot,  
The bloody lot all rolled in one. Jim's mad.

(Owen: *The Chances*)

'*They*' is one of the poet's most effective outbursts, but as a poem it is weakened by the too-amenable Bishop: Sassoon has shot, right through the heart, a sitting duck. We feel less indignant than the poem wants us to feel. *The Chances* – one of the very few successful English 'proletarian' poems, incidentally – is an altogether richer piece, a poem which will hold even though every bishop should take a vow of pacifism or silence. The humour in the speaker's style – with the implied modesty of one who has no intention of 'preaching' – lays the reader open to the full onslaught of the last short sentence. As for anger: that is not in the poem, it is in the reader.

Blunden quotes a friend's description of Owen: '... an intense pity for suffering humanity – a need to alleviate it, wherever possible, and an inability to shirk the sharing of it, even when this seemed useless. This was the keynote of Wilfred's character ...' It is also the keynote of his poetry. An instance is the fine lyric, *Futility*, as bare and cool and natural in its English as the poetry of Edward Thomas:

Move him into the sun –  
Gently its touch awoke him once,  
At home, whispering of fields unsown.  
Always it woke him, even in France,  
Until this morning and this snow.  
If anything might rouse him now  
The kind old sun will know.

Think how it wakes the seeds, –  
Woke, once, the clays of a cold star.  
Are limbs, so dear-achieved, are sides,  
Full-nerved – still warm – too hard to stir?  
Was it for this the clay grew tall?  
– O what made fatuous sunbeams toil  
To break earth's sleep at all?



### PART THREE.

And the note sounds, more explicit, in the last stanza of *Insensibili* beginning 'But cursed are dullards whom no cannon stuns':

By choice they made themselves immune  
To pity and whatever moans in man  
Before the last sea and the hapless stars;  
Whatever mourns when many leave these shores;  
Whatever shares.  
The eternal reciprocity of tears

— a passage sufficient in itself to prove that Owen is a poet, not a war poet alone. His use of assonantal rhyme should be remarked on here: deriving from his reading of French poetry, it afforded the measure of formal control he desired without the too melodious and (in view of his subject-matter) inappropriate chime of pure rhyme. Simultaneously, and notably in *Strange Meeting* and *Exposure*, it contributes a telling music of its own, ominous in its intonations:

Watching, we hear the mad gusts tugging on the wire,  
Like twitching agonies of men among its brambles.  
Northward, incessantly, the flickering gunnery rumbles ...

In August 1918, his convalescence over, he returned to France, feeling that life there could not be harder to bear than 'the stinking Leeds and Bradford war-profiteers now reading *John Bull* on Scarborough Sands'. There was a more positive reason for his readiness to go back to the trenches: 'there', he wrote, 'I shall be better able to cry my outcry'. It was this compulsion to speak so as to be understood which guarded him against his Keatsian taste for rich sensuous language. In a letter to Sassoon, he declared: 'I don't want to write anything to which a soldier would say *No Compris!*'

When Owen was killed on 4 November, among his papers was found a draft preface to a future volume of poems. It is the best commentary on the work he left:

This book is not about heroes. English poetry is not yet fit to speak of them.

Nor is it about deeds, or lands, nor anything about glory, honour, might, majesty, dominion, or power, except War.

Above all I am not concerned with Poetry.

My subject is War, and the pity of War.

The Poetry is in the pity.



### PART THREE

Isaac Rosenberg (1890-1918) was the other indubitable poetic loss incurred in the War; he was killed at the age of twenty-eight. Though his work is undigested, it is still impressive: isolated lines blaze with energy and colour. For example, the image of the 'dead heart' in *Midsummer Frost* -

A frozen pool whereon mirth dances;  
Where the shining boys would fish

- or the opening of *Day*:

The fiery hoofs of day have trampled the night to dust;  
They have broken the censer of darkness and its fumes are lost in light.  
Like a smoke blown away by the rushing of the gust  
When the doors of the sun flung open, morning leaped and smote the  
night ...

'Scriptural' and 'sculptural' are the adjectives by which Sassoon describes Rosenberg's muscular use of language.<sup>4</sup> True, the lines quoted are undisciplined, but one would not demand discipline at the age of twenty-two. His best-known poem, *Break of Day in the Trenches*, is a more mature and integrated work, yet less individual, perhaps a little too 'white with the dust' of the trenches.

I have not included Edmund Blunden and Robert Graves in the province of war poets, though memories of the War have haunted their poetry ever since. They must feature here as the authors of the two finest prose works to deal with the War. Blunden's *Undertones of War*, an established classic, is a work gentler in tone than those we have been chiefly concerned with (it was written in 1928), with literature and the English countryside never very far away, yet accurate and detailed in observation of the War scene and its human figures. *Goodbye to All That*, Robert Graves's 'autobiography' written at the age of thirty-three, dealing largely with his War experience, is the lively sort of writing we have come to expect from the author, racy without being careless, crammed with short stories and brilliant character sketches, a little too casual and almost callous at times, but continuously readable. With these first-class accounts we must group Sassoon's *Memoirs of an Infantry Officer*, a more painful work characterized by sensitive and minute documentation; and two shorter pieces by Herbert Read, *In Retreat* ('A journal of the retreat of



# THE LATER POETRY OF W. B. YEATS

GRAHAM MARTIN

*Lecturer in English Literature, Bedford College, University of London*

THERE seem to be two distinct kinds of difficulty in Yeats's major poems. One, the focus of much discussion, is the relevance of Yeats's beliefs to his verse, and the sometimes cryptic symbolism with which – some claim and some deny – he succeeded in expressing these beliefs. The second has received less attention, and is certainly less easy to identify. Yeats's major work (i.e. from 1918 to his death in 1939) appeared during a period in which the combined influence of Eliot's poetry and criticism was more and more felt to have superannuated the tradition out of which Yeats grew. Whatever the rights of this view, there is no doubt that to go to Yeats from the Eliot 'quatrain' poems – if I can use them to pinpoint one pervasive influence on a modern reader – entails as thorough a revision of critical expectancy as to go from Pope to Wordsworth. In what follows, I have tried to approach Yeats with this particularly in mind.

The first section of this chapter discusses 'Meditations In Time Of Civil War', the poem in which Yeats most fully expresses his attitude to the common nightmare of his time: in Pound's phrase, to the 'botched civilization'. This allows a useful contrast with Eliot; but more importantly, it details the way in which a specifically Irish event is the stimulus to Yeats's meditation on the common theme in terms which have an honourable nineteenth-century pedigree. Yeats's romantic inheritance is not simple. When in about 1903 he began to re-formulate his poetic idiom in a way that was soon to impress the young Ezra Pound, he seems to be reaching forward into the new century. 'My work has got more masculine. It has more salt in it' ... 'the error of late periods like this is to believe that some things are inherently poetical' ... 'I believe more strongly every day that the element of strength in poetic language is common idiom.'<sup>1</sup> But he is also reaching back into the deeper meanings of the complex relationship between the romantic artist and society which the late Victorian period of his youth had simplified and narrowed. The Irish

situation was to provide in his life, and by metaphor in many poems the arena in which Yeats recapitulated that relationship with unique intensity.

In the second section, I have concentrated on two issues: the question of Yeats's 'philosophy', on the way in which ideas enter into his poems, and the kind of importance – limited in my view – which they have; and the particular quality of feeling many of his lesser poems evoke. This seems to me to be sufficiently unlike any other twentieth-century poet to require some stress. The complex, self-aware, meditative poems like 'Among Schoolchildren' and 'Sailing to Byzantium' are very fine, but it is difficult not to feel that they owe something of their prominence in Yeats's criticism to the fact that they are mostly easily discussed in the critical tradition represented by, for example, Cleanth Brooks's *The Well Wrought Urn*. 'Those men that in their writings are most wise Own nothing in their blind, stupefied hearts'<sup>2</sup> – that is quite commonly Yeats's comment, and, in the twentieth century, not the least either of his challenges or of his claims to greatness.

\* \* \*

'And no one knows, at sight, a masterpiece  
And give up verse, my boy,  
There's nothing in it.'  
... Don't kick against the pricks.  
Accept opinion. The 'Nineteen' died from game  
And died, there's nothing in it.

There was certainly not much in it for Yeats – 'one hundred a year ...' he noted of his early years 'and I was not very economical'<sup>4</sup> – and without Lady Gregory, without the Irish movement as a whole, it is unlikely that he would have achieved his precarious independence: with it, however, he was able to do anything to learn from Mr. Newman. 'The age demanded'. As much as the 'Nineteen' had the 'down of the wise',<sup>5</sup> even in a hypothetical world where in 1865, he was old enough to have had the 'down of the wise' in the twentieth century than those suggested by his younger admirers. 'New from the future' – the poem's message is

### PART THREE

William Morris, I dreamed of enlarging Irish hate, till we had come to hate with a passion of patriotism what Morris and Ruskin hated... We were to forge in Ireland a new sword on our old traditional anvil for the great battle that must in the end re-establish the old, confident, joyous world.<sup>26</sup> With memories like these, it is not surprising that the tone of Yeats's dealings with the 'filthy modern tide' has little in common with the mordant commentaries of Eliot and Pound. And in all of Yeats's mature poems, it is *tone* – in an exact sense – that one immediately notices.

What shall I do with this absurdity –  
O heart, O troubled heart – this caricature,  
Decrepit age that has been tied to me  
As to a dog's tail?

('The Tower', 1927)

A tree there is that from its topmost bough  
Is half all glittering flame and half all green  
Abounding foliage moistened with the dew;  
And half is half and yet is all the scene;  
And half and half consume what they renew,  
And he that Attis' image hangs between  
That staring fury and the blind lush leaf  
May know not what he knows, but knows not grief.  
(*'Vacillation'*, 1932)

Come, fix upon me that accusing eye.  
I thirst for accusation. All that was sung,  
All that was said in Ireland is a lie  
Bred out of the contagion of the throng,  
Saving the rhyme rats hear before they die.  
Leave nothing but the nothings that belong  
To this bare soul, let all men judge that can  
Whether it be an animal or a man.

(*'Parnell's Funeral'*, 1934)

No dark tomb-haunter once; her form all full  
As though with magnanimity of light,  
Yet a most gentle woman; who can tell  
Which of her forms has shown her substance right?  
(*'A Bronze Head'*, 1939)

Self-mockery, visionary exaltation, contemptuous defiance, elegy – Yeats's consistently public tone accommodates an extraordinary range of feeling. It presupposes a listener of even wider experience than that humanistic figure, 'the normal active man',<sup>8</sup> that the poet set himself to express in 1909 when he began to wither into the creative disillusionment of his major work. To write like this out of 'a botched civilization'<sup>9</sup> certainly argues a very surprising command of his own experience, and even when contemporary barbarism is his theme, it is still Yeats's *command* that one principally notices.

The cloud-pale unicorns, the eyes of aquamarine,  
 The quivering half-closed eyelids, the rags of cloud or of lace,  
 Or eyes that rage has brightened, arms it has made lean,  
 Give place to an indifferent multitude, give place  
 To brazen hawks. Nor self-delighting reverie,  
 Nor hate of what's to come, nor pity for what's gone,  
 Nothing but grip of claw, and the eye's complacency,  
 The innumerable clanging wings that have put out the moon.

I turn away and shut the door, and on the stair  
 Wonder how many times I could have proved my worth  
 In something that all others understand or share;  
 But O! ambitious heart, had such a proof drawn forth  
 A company of friends, a conscience set at ease,  
 It had but made us pine the more. The abstract joy,  
 The half-read wisdom of daemonic images,  
 Suffice the ageing man as once the growing boy.

(*'Meditations In Time Of Civil War'*, 1923)

Yeats is writing in the syntax and idiom of ordinary discourse – elaborated only at moments of intensity, and then very slightly – of an experience which on the face of it seems likely to make ordinary discourse impossible. Even though, as he states in the earlier verses, this estranging vision evokes 'monstrous familiar images' which 'bewilder [and] perturb the mind', the mind continues to act, to define, to persuade. 'Brazen hawks' and 'the innumerable clanging wings' point towards nightmare, but the effect – hawks are not made of brass, brazen usually applies to hussies, wings do not clang – of conscious trope is not to draw us into the experience of an alienated mind, but to warn (perhaps to remind) us of the possibility. The



### PART THREE

one unites us with the 'I' of the poem, over against his prophetic insight: on the one hand, the hawks, urgent and dreadful; but on the other, the precisely judged 'indifferent multitude'; and again, 'the eye's complacency' balances 'grip of claw', the critical observation is intensified, not obliterated by the monstrous mage.<sup>10</sup>

Yeats wrote 'Meditations In Time of Civil War' during the summer of 1922 - the war broke out in June - and, significant enough in his country's history, the event had a particular meaning for the poet. He had already (certainly by 1922, but the following passage was probably drafted in 1916-17) come to accept the fact that 'the dream of my early manhood, that a modern nation can return to Unity of Culture, is false; though it may be we can achieve it for some small circle of men and women, and there leave it till the moon bring round its century'.<sup>11</sup> He had, that is, given up hope that Ireland would produce, and that he would contribute to, an art both major and popular. What remained was the limited achievement of writing for

drawn their journalists and their leaders for the past ten years – have suffered through the cultivation of hatred as the one energy of their movement, a deprivation which is the intellectual equivalent to a certain surgical operation. Hence the shrillness of their voices. They contemplate all creative power as the eunuchs contemplate Don Juan as he passes through Hell on the white horse.<sup>13</sup> The function of the Abbey was to supply 'loftier thought, Sweeter emotion';<sup>14</sup> to dramatize 'the Ireland of men's affections [as] self-moving, self-creating'.<sup>15</sup> '...in the work of Lady Gregory, of Synge, of O'Grady, of Lionel Johnson, in my own work, a school of journalists with simple moral ideas could find right building material to create a historical and literary nationalism as powerful as the old and nobler. That done, they could bid the people love and not hate.'<sup>16</sup> The journalists, however, refused to be taught, and it was the recognition of this, forced upon Yeats by the reception of Synge's *Playboy*, and later, by the Hugh Lane controversy, that provoked him to the new powers of expression, evident in *The Green Helmet* (1910) and *Responsibilities* (1914). (In the latter volume, the significant group of poems is Nos. 2 to 8: see Yeats's note on the 'three public controversies',<sup>17</sup> with which he associated them.)

By 1922, all this deep personal and artistic significance was a matter of accepted history; but to foresee the failure of a dream, and to live through a consequence of that failure are different things. In 1916, for example, Yeats could describe the bloody Easter Rising which destroyed a good part of O'Connell Street, as having given birth to 'a terrible beauty'.<sup>18</sup> But the violence of the Troubles had a different aspect.

Now days are dragon-ridden, the nightmare  
Rides upon sleep: a drunken soldiery  
Can leave the mother, murdered at her door,  
To crawl in her own blood, and go scot-free;  
The night can sweat with terror as before  
We pieced our thoughts into philosophy,  
And planned to bring the world under a rule,  
Who are but weasels fighting in a hole.

('Nineteen Hundred and Nineteen', 1921)

Yeats felt responsible for the Troubles as he had not done for the Rising, and an acute sense of guilt is at the poem's heart:

### PART THREE

We, who seven years ago  
Talked of honour and of truth,  
Shrick with pleasure if we show  
The weasel's twist, the weasel's tooth.

As the over-emphasis indicates, the shock goes deeper than he is able to control, and in the poem's argument – that the particular catastrophe mirrors both a metaphysical condition ('Man is in love and loves what vanishes, What more is there to say?') and a historical process (see poem vi) – there is a complementary vagueness. The opening stanzas, for example, assert a bond between the 'ingenious lovely things' of art, and 'a law indifferent to blame or praise': 'the nightmare' of violence and terror destroys both, and for Yeats, these are newly significant interconnexions. But the poem leaves them unexplored, concentrating instead on the plight of 'He who can read the signs', and upon his emotions of moral outrage and despair.

'Meditations' is an advance on this. The political catastrophe appears not as an unexplainable revelation of man's state, but as the inevitable period to a whole phase in Irish history. The 'I' of the poem is less a person (confused by double loyalties) than a poet with a clear function, the unambiguous witness not of 'many ingenious lovely things' but of 'life's own self-delight'.

There are seven sections to the poem. In the first, 'Ancestral Houses', Yeats evokes only to discard a familiar image for Unity of Culture, the house-and-garden of eighteenth-century Anglo-Ireland.

... now it seems  
As if some marvellous empty sea-shell flung  
Out of the obscure dark of the rich streams,  
And not a fountain, were the symbol which  
Shadows the inherited glory of the rich.

The very excellence of past creations has exhausted the creative energies, and the present impulses have yet to crystallize. In poems ii to iv, he erects symbols appropriate for a poet isolated by destructive social change. In poems v and vi, he shows his response – part-envy, part-revulsion – to the actual business of war. Finally, in poem vii he prophesies the threatening future which 'the indifferent multi-



PART THREE

'The Stare's Nest By My Window'

The bees build in the crevices  
Of loosening masonry and there  
The mother birds bring grubs and flies.  
My wall is loosening; honey-bees,  
Come build in the empty house of the stare.

We are closed in, and the key is turned  
On our uncertainty; somewhere  
A man is killed, or a house burned,  
Yet no clear fact to be discerned:  
Come build in the empty house of the stare.

A barricade of stone or of wood;  
Some fourteen days of civil war;  
Last night they trundled down the road  
That dead young soldier in his blood:  
Come build in the empty house of the stare.

We had fed the heart on fantasies,  
The heart's grown brutal from the fare;  
More substance in our enmities  
Than in our love; O honey bees,  
Come build in the empty house of the stare.

The prison is both actual and metaphorical, a place as well as a condition of mind, and these two meanings co-exist without interfering with each other. Correspondingly, the lines hold two distinct attitudes in a single tension: the fear of inner collapse in 'My wall is loosening'; and the creative purposefulness of 'build', 'mother-birds', and 'house'. The subsequent stanzas develop this contrast, and the last one generalizes it. The firm syntax, the detailed report, the ballad refrain work an effect wholly opposite to that of the Eliot lines; they protest against the condition of 'We are closed in', rather than state its fullness, so that the isolation of Yeats's prison becomes not a paralysis, so much as an opportunity for diagnosis and judgement. Moreover, the war - literal cause of the imprisonment - is the appropriate occasion for these thoughts. It involves the poet because the utopian 'fantasies' which brutalize the heart lead through war to 'That dead young soldier in his blood'. The poet's 'We' involves him in that death (contrast the 'we' of the Eliot lines), and

this gives conviction to his prayer. Yeats's 'O honey-bees, Come build...' grows from the metaphor which demonstrates his sickness. The invocation is not applied to the situation, it is his intimate response to it. Comparably, Eliot's 'Dayadhvam' is part of the diagnosis, an Olympian comment.

Now the argument which links the various poems in 'Meditations' identifies culture, with the poet as witness, with the fountain of 'life's own self-delight'. Just as the 'golden grass-hoppers and bees' of 'Nineteen Hundred and Nineteen' are, in comparison with the 'honey-bees' of the above verse merely beautiful objects; so, in the later poem, 'culture means no longer 'many ingenious lovely things ... That seemed sheer miracle to the multitude', but the self-moving self-creating energies of life itself.

Surely among a rich man's flowering lawns,  
Amid the rustle of his planted hills,  
Life overflows without ambitious pains;  
And rains down life until the basin spills ...

... Mere dreams, mere dreams! Yet Homer had not sung  
Had he not found it certain beyond dreams  
That out of life's own self-delight had sprung  
The abounding glittering jet ...

The poem shows that two kinds of change threaten the poet's ability to give proper voice ('Homer') to this meaning. First, there is the obsolescence of the old social forms which throws the poet upon his own resources of personal symbol - 'My House', 'My Table', 'My Descendants', and

An ancient bridge, and a more ancient tower,  
A farmhouse that is sheltered by its wall,  
An acre of stony ground,  
Where the symbolic rose can break in flower [if it can]

This change the poet has to accept, because 'if no change appears in the world; only an aching heart Conceives a changeful work of art'. The real source of life is 'the obscure dark of the first moment' of history, and the poet must remain sensitive to this. It is because he does, that the calamity outlined in the quoted stanza of 'The Secret of the Vast' is also a source of new life.

But there is another change which the poet cannot turn to account: the portentous vision of poem vii *I see Phantoms of Hatred and of the Heart's Fulness and of the Coming Emptiness*. Faced with 'Nothing but grip of claw, and the eye's complacency', with a future 'indifferent' not simply to the delicacies of art, but callous, insentient, uninvolved in life itself, the poet can find no possible identity. His towered isolation becomes therefore the refuge of 'life's own self-delight' from 'the coming Emptiness'.

And I, that count myself most prosperous,  
 Seeing that love and friendship are enough,  
 For an old neighbour's friendship chose the house  
 And decked and altered it for a girl's love,  
 And know whatever flourish and decline  
 These stones remain their monument and mine.

'Seeing that love and friendship are enough', 'The mother birds bring grubs and flies' – if we think of *The Waste Land* these may seem simple formulas; but they do not emerge from any turning away from the contemplated present; and the strength which makes them convincing is not simple. The central appeal is underwritten by the clear statement of what 'poet' and what 'culture' mean in this situation. Yeats is evoking in terms of his particular experience a traditional protest,<sup>20</sup> less subtly than Eliot, but with a satisfying freedom from hesitation and ambiguity. *The Waste Land's* use of literature as a means of definition and perspective ('a broken Coriolanus'), and so a shorthand statement of attitude, often gives questionable status to covert 'personal' judgements, to feelings that the poet seems unwilling to declare. Yeats, on the other hand, as the closing lines of poem vii suggest, includes his own failure in the total analysis. Similarly, his 'We had fed the heart on fantasies' is wholly candid: one sign of his own involvement in the whole historical event.

But the main point is not whether or not Yeats is more 'positive' than Eliot – whose strength in *The Waste Land* is, after all, in being 'negative', in showing what happens when you go beyond the limit of 'brazen hawk' into the experience it points to – but in the different response to the contemporary nightmare. For Yeats, there are established positions, and his response to the threat is to state these. That is not to say that he comes to the event with a ready-made answer:





PART THREE

But scorn is a relationship, and the tension between the flawed reality and the ideal Unity of Culture was enough for Yeats to work on. In that relation, Yeats could write 'as a man speaking to men' – in, at any rate, a richer, more immediate relation than any other poet of the century.

\* \* \*

Yeats's identification of the poet with the affirmation of 'life's own self-delight' offers a useful perspective on his work as whole, and in particular, on those poems which seem to attempt a different complexity. There is, for example, 'The Second Coming' (1920).

... Things fall apart; the centre cannot hold;  
Mere anarchy is loosed upon the world,  
The blood-dimmed tide is loosed, and everywhere  
The ceremony of innocence is drowned;  
The best lack all conviction, while the worst  
Are full of passionate intensity.

... The darkness drops again; but now I know  
That twenty centuries of stony sleep  
Were vexed to nightmare by a rocking cradle,  
And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,  
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?

As often with Yeats's prophetic or visionary poems (where the reciprocal relationship of 'a man speaking to men' is qualified by the poet's special 'disposition to be affected *more than other men by absent things as if they were present*; [his] ability of *conjuring up in himself passions*, which are indeed far from being the same as those produced by real events')<sup>23</sup>, these lines suggest something unsettled in the poet's final attitude. Louis MacNeice ascribed this ambiguity to the fact that 'Yeats had a budding fascist inside himself'<sup>24</sup> and therefore heralded 'the rise of this tide ... with a certain relish'. But this is to confuse Yeats-and-his-reader with Yeats-and-his-subject. The poem's intensity depends primarily upon our familiarity with ideas like 'the Second Coming ... a rocking cradle ... Bethlehem'.<sup>25</sup> Yeats, that is, in order to express 'his vision of absent things' lays hold of the only available public language, and adapts it in a number of bold para-

doxes. The magus foresees, but it is the poet who urges, and here, at the polemical level,<sup>26</sup> lies the difficulty. The poem's tone is not coherent. Beside the memorable restraint of 'The best lack all conviction, while the worst Are full of passionate intensity', the rhetorical attack of the final lines is crude – it exploits the previously established relationship – and with this in mind, it is possible to feel that the famous 'The ceremony of innocence is drowned' is a discreeter example of the same exploitation. There is more anxiety than insight in the line. The poet claims an assurance that he does not feel – this is one way of putting it; and – crucial in a polemical poem – what he is not sure about is whether the sanctities invoked in 'sleep ... vexed ... cradle' can or cannot withstand the future.

It is helpful to relate this uncertainty, if not to the actual details of 'A Vision', then certainly to the question of its determinism, a point which Yeats had not settled in 1919, if indeed he ever did settle it. (The 1925 edition implies a complete determinism, but the 1937 edition develops one of the original suggestions into an explicit allowance of free-will.) By means of the first line 'Turning and turning in the widening gyre', the poem invokes this 'determinism' at one level only to effect a moral protest at its implications at another. Like so many political statements, the poem both hopes and fears at once. This ambiguity recurs in a poem like 'The Gyres' (1938), or 'The Statues' (1939), and its extreme form is the desperate idealizing of the 'heroic' Irish in the late writing. Yeats seems to have combined a very powerful sense of immediate history with a restricted historical equipment for relating present insight to the determining past. The evidence for the historical patterns of 'A Vision' is almost entirely drawn from the arts, and while this may help to organize and project a chosen structure of loyalties and predispositions, it is not much help when it comes to predicting the probable future. In 'The Second Coming', Yeats has tried to generalize his immediate foreboding into a historical statement, but since the historical idea ('gyre') is itself ambiguous, it simply ratifies the confusion of fear and hope from which the poet begins. This is then transmitted in the uncertain tone, and unjustified variation of intensity in the rhetoric. Uncertain of his own position, Yeats turns, so to speak, on his listeners. There should not, finally, be any question as to where Yeats stands in relation to the rough beast. The companion poem to his pro-

### PART THREE

phesy is, after all, the restrained and assured 'A Prayer for My Daughter' (1919).

A more straightforward unevenness in the third section of 'The Tower' (1927) shows again that 'ideas' in Yeats are sometimes his way of refusing to think out his position. In this poem, he is stating his final attitude about old age and approaching death.

Now shall I make my soul,  
Compelling it to study  
In a learned school ...

and at 'learned', we naturally refer back to the earlier declaration. What is the relation between the two 'learnings'?

And I declare my faith:  
I mock Plotinus' thought  
And cry in Plato's teeth,  
Death and life were not  
Till man made up the whole,  
Made lock, stock, and barrel  
Out of his bitter soul,  
Aye, sun and moon and star, all,  
And further add to that  
That, being dead, we rise,  
Dream and so create  
Translunar paradise.  
I have prepared my peace  
With learned Italian things  
And the proud stones of Greece,  
Poet's imaginings  
And memories of love ...

When Yeats begins to sound like 'the annual scourge of the Georgian anthology' (T. S. Eliot), it seems fair to protest. What is the basis of this swashing dismissal of Plotinus and Plato?—a quasi-religious idiom ('rise ... create ... paradise'), a clerical boom ('I have prepared my peace'), and a comically unembarrassed display of culture-totems ('proud stones', etc.). Take away these trappings, and there is not much left, certainly not a philosophy, so that it needs to be stressed that the attitude with which the poem (as distinct from the poet) faces death is very different.



### PART THREE

... Endure that toil of growing up;  
The ignominy of boyhood; the distress  
Of boyhood changing into man;  
The unfinished man and his pain  
Brought face to face with his own clumsiness;  
The finished man among his enemies ...

(*'A Dialogue of Self and Soul'*, 1929)

Assume the pain of growth, carry it through the detail of experience, and we get this concentrated statement: 'endure ... toil ... ignominy ... distress ... pain ... clumsiness ... enemies'. In the poetry of 'thinking', idea and detail interact; each alters the other, exists in terms of the other. But in Yeats, the detail of experience does not question, it illustrates the ideas (as the poems on the Troubles show), which have, so to speak, been decided upon outside the poem. Adopt, then, another assumption about 'growing up', and we get these famous lines:

That is no country for old men. The young  
In one another's arms, birds in the trees  
— Those dying generations — at their song,  
The salmon-falls, the mackerel-crowded seas,  
Fish, flesh, or fowl, commend all summer long  
Whatever is begotten, born, or dies.

(*'Sailing to Byzantium'*, 1927)

It is not the greater complexity that is my point, but the different idea — growth as a rich blind trustfulness — the point of view with which in some argument, one might oppose undue insistence on the 'toil of growing up'. It is by debate, argument, the confrontation of different ideas and so of the different experience each idea engages that Yeats arrives at his most varied insights. And it is the inclusive generalizations of 'thought' ('gyres', 'translunar paradise') which involve him in simplification and ambiguity.

Another group of poems which bear on this occurs in *Michael Robartes and The Dancer* (1920), where the enemy of life is not the historical process, or the 'indifferent' future, but what Yeats calls 'thought' or 'opinion'. He remarks elsewhere that 'A mind that generalizes rapidly, continually prevents the experience that would have made it feel and see deeply',<sup>28</sup> and 'thought' in those poems is the neurotic hypertrophy of this condition. The amusing title poem (1920) announces the theme:

He ... and it's plain

The half-dead dragon was her thought,  
That every morning rose again  
And dug its claws and shrieked and fought.  
Could the impossible come to pass  
She would have time to turn her eyes,  
Her lover thought, upon the glass  
And on the instant would grow wise.

She You mean they argued *[My italics]*

This maladjustment of 'thought' and experience links the subsequent poems on love, in which some abstracting fantasy interferes with the relationship, with the better-known political poems.

Maybe the bride-bed brings despair,  
For each an imagined image brings  
And finds a real image there;  
Yet the world ends when these two things,  
Though several, are a single light,  
When oil and wick are burned in one;  
*('Solomon and The Witch')*

Hearts with one purpose alone  
Through summer and winter seem  
Enchanted to a stone  
To trouble the living stream.

*('Easter 1916', 1916)*

Did she in touching that lone wing  
Recall the years before her mind  
Became a bitter, an abstract thing,  
Her thought some popular enmity ... ?  
*('On A Political Prisoner', 1920)*

My mind, because the minds that I have loved,  
The sort of beauty that I have approved,  
Prosper but little, has dried up of late,  
Yet knows that to be choked with hate  
May be of all evil chances chief.  
... An intellectual hatred is the worst,  
So let her think opinions are accursed.

*('A Prayer for my Daughter', 1919)*

As the various dates show, Yeats has here brought together unpublished and previously published poems which apply a common

insight to different situations and relationships. The insight is not explored, nor is it fully realized in any one instance, but provides rather the organizing centre for a number of experiences of introspection or observation. A poem of a decade later shows how such a key-emphasis can resurrect itself, still 'undeveloped', yet just as vital:

I know not what the younger dreams –  
 Some vague Utopia – and she seems,  
 When withered old and skeleton-gaunt,  
 An image of such politics.  
 Many a time I think to seek  
 One or the other out and speak  
 Of that old Georgian mansion, mix  
 Pictures of the mind, recall  
 That table and the talk of youth,  
 Two girls in silk kimonos, both  
 Beautiful, one a gazelle.

(*In Memory of Eva Gore-Booth and Con Markiewicz*, 1929)

Here it is not a metaphor so much as the beautifully managed cadences of the final lines (from 'Pictures') that judges 'such politics'. For dreams of the 'vague Utopia' – and 'vague' is the important word – Yeats offers the precise alternative of his delicately stated feeling for what has gone. This is the stress: the actuality of human interchange, however, transient or imperfect, is of 'the living stream', and therefore a test for the questionable truths of 'thought'. Whether the result is heroic, degrading, or even a spiritual certainty, 'thought' distracts from, where it doesn't deform, the difficult intricacy of life. It is at best a superior compensation for failing to live, and with this in mind, the force of saying that Yeats's poetry works from ideas rather than through them should be clear.

A related impulse is important in the unique series of occasional poems which extend from about 1912 till Yeats's death. Yeats's 'modernity' may properly begin with *The Green Helmet* (1910) – though its anticipation in one or two poems (subsequently added to) in *The Seven Woods* (1903) is clear; see for example 'Never Give All The Heart' first published in 1905 – but his first unquestionably great poem is 'In Memory of Major Robert Gregory' (1918). One difference between this poem and, say, 'To A Shade' (1913) has been well underlined by Professor Kermode. It is the first poem fully to incorporate

Yeats's romantic inheritance.<sup>29</sup> But it is also the first in a long line of occasional celebrations and laments: 'All Souls' Night' (1921), 'A Prayer For My Daughter' (1919), 'Coole Park and Ballylee, 1931' (1932), and 'The Bronze Head' (1939), and this coincidence is important. 'The self-conquest of the writer who is not a man of action is style',<sup>30</sup> and the style of these poems – formal, elaborate, yet easy and humane – can be said to state Yeats's responsibility as a poet to the central human experiences they commemorate.

He had much industry at setting out,  
 Much boisterous courage, before loneliness  
 Had driven him crazed;  
 For meditations upon unknown thought  
 Make human intercourse grow less and less;  
 They are neither paid nor praised.  
 But he'd object to the host,  
 The glass because my glass;  
 A ghost-lover he was  
 And may have grown more arrogant being a ghost.  
 ('All Souls' Night')\_

The stanza is the poetic expression of what Yeats in 'A Prayer For My Daughter' calls 'courtesy': it reconciles the criticism of 'arrogant' with the appreciation of 'boisterous courage'. The sensitive adjustments of feeling depend wholly upon the changes in pace which the elaborate verse and rhyme scheme makes possible. The directness reacts with the formality so that the first is not blunt, and the second not stiff. The poet disappears, so to speak, into the poetry, and the poetry into the permanent experience of what Blake called 'the severe contentions of friendship'.

If one senses the writer's 'self-conquest' in the style of all these occasional poems, it is even more evident in the actual structure of the Gregory elegy.

I had thought, seeing how bitter is that wind  
 That shakes the shutter, to have brought to mind  
 All those that manhood tried, or childhood loved  
 Or boyish intellect approved,  
 With some appropriate commentary on each;  
 Until imagination brought  
 A fitter welcome; but a thought  
 Of that late death took all my heart for speech.



'We are not required to accept as true the statement that Yeats had intended a longer poem,' wrote Peter Ure in his explication of the poem. 'All is device and formality, a mask on the face of grief.'<sup>31</sup> But this, with its suggestion of hidden tears, a suppressed catch in the throat, is a little misleading. The point of the final trope is to dissolve the 'personal' voice with which the poem has been speaking into anonymity, without losing the sense of an actual relationship between the writer and the dead man. The poet's business is to express not his own feelings, but other people's as if they were his own: 'whatever's written in what poets name The book of the people'.<sup>32</sup> The elegy needs an obituary voice, that is still not 'official'. The effect of the last stanza after what has preceded it is to achieve this adjustment of attitude, this difficult generality. The presentation of Robert Gregory who is 'a man of action' and 'all life's epitome' takes place in this context; the projection of the romantic figure who burns his life out is by means of the poem accommodated to the 'damp faggots' of ordinary living - Yeats's term in this poem for himself and for the continuity he is affirming.

The formal elaboration of these poems expresses, then, an important part of their meaning: the terms on which we share in the commemorated experience, but even in much simpler poems, rhetorical device is prominent, and it serves a similar purpose. One can express this roughly by saying that many of Yeats's poems express a familiar general emotion, but in a strange, even an eccentric way. Yet the difficulties are superficial; they do not belong to the experience, so much as guard it from misunderstanding or too-easy acceptance. The experience is very often 'what oft was thought', but the expression sheers off the encrustations of habitual response, and protective staleness. Feeling in Yeats is, in general, not complex: i.e. not realized with all the contradictions and qualifications which any particular emotion actually involves; but 'simple': 'disengaged, disembroiled, disencumbered, exempt from the conditions we usually know to attach to it'.<sup>33</sup> The process of disengagement is undertaken in several ways. There is the discreet wit in phrases like: 'that discourtesy of death', 'casual comedy', 'popular rage', 'civil rancour'<sup>34</sup> - where one word discriminates the general emotion suggested by the other. The effect is to invite one's cooperation in the critical refinement (cf. Pope's and Dryden's similar fondness for the construction). More

generally, there is the rhetorical syntax which plays off 'artificial' against 'natural' speech rhythms; and the use of dramatis personae or Masks, and of named occasions and situations for the particular experience. To take a familiar example:

'Easter 1916'

I have met them at close of day  
Coming with vivid faces  
From counter or desk among grey  
Eighteenth-century houses.  
I have passed with a nod of head  
Or polite meaningless words,  
Or have lingered awhile and said  
Polite meaningless words,  
And thought before I had done  
Of a mocking tale or a gibe  
To please a companion  
Around the fire at the club ...

The lofty opening rhythms quickly give way to the loose 'casual' movement of the later lines, and this follows the contrast of the 'vivid faces', and the commonplace gossip which the poet retails about them. But before that happens, there is the memorable dissonance of 'faces/houses', forcing its way against the secure 'day/grey', like some flattened seventh in a full statement of the key. The clash has its point. It underlines the heroic opening - by slightly departing from it, that is, it makes an individual statement of this note. The note is essential; the very title demands it; but of course, Yeats's view of the heroism of Macdonagh and Macbride and Connolly and Pearse is very specific and he only adapts the banal emotion of the political tub-thumper because he wants it on his own terms. Admittedly, there are not as clear or satisfactory as they might be: but 'terrible beauty', whatever its failings, sufficiently shows how Yeats wanted on his own terms his view of 'the heroic emotion'. The title, then, is a firm appropriation to Yeats's own definition: it is not just a piece of information, but part of the poem's language.

Another example is the first poem of *Supernatural Songs*, 'Visit to the Tomb of Balcan and Ashkan' (1934), a title whose strangeness immediately contrasts with the opening familiarity of 'Yeats, you have found me in the purple-dark night/With open book you see

me what I do'. But Ribh is not a character, and if he is a Mask, this is not because he delivers any special necessary meaning. What he says makes its own point:

... when such bodies join  
 There is no touching here, nor touching there,  
 Nor straining joy, but whole is joined to whole;  
 For the intercourse of angels is a light  
 Where for its moment both seem lost, consumed.

Here in the pitch-dark atmosphere above  
 The trembling of the apple and the yew,  
 Here on the anniversary of their death,  
 The anniversary of their first embrace,  
 These lovers, purified by tragedy,  
 Hurry into each other's arms; these eyes,  
 By water, herb, and solitary prayer  
 Made aquiline, are open to that light.  
 Though somewhat broken by the leaves, that light  
 Lies in a circle on the grass; therein  
 I turn the pages of my holy book.

The natural leaves interfere with the supernatural light; but this light is a metaphor for an ideal love-in-nature. Ribh's eyes see by the light, but *what* he sees is not 'the intercourse of angels', but his 'holy book'. The effect is to interpenetrate the categories of real and ideal fulfilment in an extraordinarily delicate relationship; to convey Ribh's ponderings about the completion beyond death of the full relationship life denies to the lovers without suggesting compensatory nostalgia, or spiritual voyeurism about a love he never experienced. The poem's outworks - Ribh, Baile, Aillinn - make the experience strange, not because it is difficult, complex, and mysterious (as, for example, the rejections and projections of Eliot's 'Marina' are) but because it must be very exactly defined. It is the essential heart of the condition which the poem conveys, and in order to insist on this its language (again the title is part of the language) prunes away implication and suggestivity. Yeats's claim that his mind was 'sensual, concrete, rhythmical'<sup>35</sup> is not more important than the complementary statement '...I, whose virtues are the definitions Of the analytic mind'<sup>36</sup> - and the analysis progresses towards general emotions exactly defined. Even where the emotion is 'complex', Yeats



# PART THREE

5. 'The Fisherman', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 167.
6. *Essays* (1924), pp. 307-8.
7. The dates given for these and subsequently mentioned poems are those of the first publication - in some cases earlier by several years than the date of the collection in which the poem finally appears in *Collected Poems*. See Allan Wade, *A Bibliography of the Writings of W. B. Yeats* (2nd ed. 1958). For a list of probable dates of composition, see Richard Ellmann, *The Identity of Yeats* (1954).
8. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 492.
9. Hugh Selwyn Mauberley, *ibid.*, p. 176.
10. Cf. 'And bars with baby faces in the violet light  
Whistled, and beat their wings  
And crawled head downward down a blackened wall'. T. S. Eliot,  
*The Waste Land*, *Collected Poems 1909-1935* (1936), p. 76.
11. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 295.
12. *Four Plays For Dancers* (1921), pp. 105-6. My italics.
13. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 486. See also 'On Those That Hated "The Playboy Of The Western World" 1907', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 124.
14. 'To A Shade', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 123.
15. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 361.
16. *ibid.*, p. 494.
17. *Collected Poems* (1950), pp. 529.
18. 'Easter 1916', *ibid.*, pp. 202-5.
19. *The Waste Land*, *ibid.*, p. 77.
20. Discussing the contribution to the total meaning of 'culture' made by the Romantic poets, Raymond Williams notes 'an emphasis on the embodiment in art of certain human values, capacities, energies, which the development of society towards an industrial civilization was felt to be threatening or even destroying'. 'The whole tradition can be summed up in one striking phrase used by Wordsworth. where the poet, the artist in general, is seen as "an upholder and preserver, carrying everywhere with him relationship and love".' *Culture and Society 1780-1950* (1958), pp. 36, 42. My italics.
21. 'The Municipal Gallery Revisited', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 370.
22. 'In Memory of W. B. Yeats' *Collected Shorter Poems 1930-44* (1950), p. 65.
23. 'Preface to Lyrical Ballads (1800)', W. Wordsworth. My italics.
24. F. L. MacNeice, *The Poetry of W. B. Yeats* (1941), p. 132.
25. Allen Tate has pointed out, correctly I think, that this is more generally true of Yeats's esotericism than most critics admit. See *The Permanence of Yeats* (ed. Hall and Steinemann, 1950), p. 111.
26. That the poem is, in a deep sense, polemical, I take the following letter to indicate. '... as my sense of reality deepens ... my horror at the cruelty of governments grows greater ... Communist, Fascist, nationalist, clerical, anti-clerical, are all responsible according to the number of their victims. I have not been silent; I have used the only vehicle I possess - verse. If you have my poems by you, look up a poem called *The Second Coming*. It was written some sixteen or seventeen years ago and foretold what is happening. I have written

# THE LATER POETRY OF W. B. YEATS

of the same thing again and again since. This will seem little to you with your strong practical sense, for it takes fifty years for a poet's weapons to influence the issue.' (April, 1936.) *The Letters of W. B. Yeats* (ed. Allan Wade, 1954), p. 851.

27. J. B. Yeats, *Letters to his son ... 1869-1922* (ed. J. Hone, 1944), p. 97.
28. *Essays* (1924), pp. 406-7.
29. Frank Kermode, *The Romantic Image* (1957), Chapter 2.
30. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 516.
31. Peter Ure, *Towards A Mythology ...* (1946), p. 40.
32. 'Coole Park & Ballylee, 1931', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 276.
33. The phrase is from Henry James's 'Preface to *The American*', *The Art of the Novel* (1953), p. 33.
34. *Collected Poems* (1950), pp. 150, 203, 319, 320 respectively.
35. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 434.
36. 'The People', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 170.

# PART THREE

5. 'The Fisherman', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 167.
6. *Essays* (1924), pp. 307-8.
7. The dates given for these and subsequently mentioned poems are those of the first publication - in some cases earlier by several years than the date of the collection in which the poem finally appears in *Collected Poems*. See Allan Wade, *A Bibliography of the Writings of W. B. Yeats* (2nd ed. 1958). For a list of probable dates of composition, see Richard Ellmann, *The Identity of Yeats* (1954).
8. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 492.
9. *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, *ibid.* p. 176.
10. Cf. 'And bats with baby faces in the violet light  
Whistled, and beat their wings  
And crawled head downward down a blackened wall'. T. S. Eliot, *The Waste Land*, *Collected Poems 1909-1935* (1936), p. 76.
11. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 295.
12. *Four Plays For Dancers* (1921), pp. 105-6 *My italics*.
13. *Autobiographies* (1955), p. 486. See also 'On Those That Hated "The Playboy Of The Western World" 1907', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 124.
14. 'To A Shade', *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 123.
15. *Autobiographies* (1955) p. 361.
16. *Ibid.* p. 494.
17. *Collected Poems* (1950), pp. 529.
18. 'Easter 1916' *ibid.* pp. 202-5.
19. *The Waste Land* *ibid.* p. 77.
20. Discussing the contribution to the total meaning of 'culture' made by the Romantic poets, Raymond Williams notes 'an emphasis on the embodiment in art of certain human values, capacities, energies, which the development of society towards an industrial civilization was felt to be threatening or even destroying. "The whole tradition can be summed up in one striking phrase used by Wordsworth where the poet, the artist in general, is seen as "an upholder and preserver, carrying everywhere with him relationship and love" ' *Culture and Society 1780-1950* (1958) pp. 36, 42 *My italics*.
21. 'The Municipal Gallery Revisited' *Collected Poems* (1950), p. 370.
22. 'In Memory of W. B. Yeats' *Collected Shorter Poems 1930-44* (1950), p. 65.
23. 'Preface to Lyrical Ballads (1800)', W. Wordsworth. *My italics*.
24. F. L. MacNeice, *The Poetry of W. B. Yeats* (1941), p. 132.
25. Allen Tate has pointed out correctly I think, that this is more generally true of Yeats' esotericism than most critics admit. See *The Permanence of Yeats* (ed. Hall and Steinemann, 1950), p. 111.
26. That the poem is, in a deep sense, polemical, I take the following letter to indicate '... as my sense of reality deepens ... my horror at the cruelty of governments grows greater. Communist, Fascist, nationalist, clerical, anti-clerical, are all responsible according to the number of their victims. I have not been silent; I have used the only vehicle I possess - verse. If you have my poems by you, look up a poem called *The Second Coming*. It was written some sixteen or seventeen years ago and foretold what is happening. I have written





# THE IRISH CONTRIBUTION

GRATTAN FREYER

HALF a century, or even a generation, ago, it might have been appropriate to entitle this chapter 'The Irish Movement'. Today it is not possible to speak of a 'movement' among Irish writers. It is, however, possible to point to a distinctive Irish contribution to the mainstream of English writing in this century.

Ireland forms part of the British Isles, yet the Irish have never really formed part of the British nation. Race, religion, history, and the ensuing social and economic development have all helped to keep the two peoples distinct. The majority of the Irish have remained Roman Catholics, and though many of the leading writers have come from the Protestant minority, the traditional faith colours the background from which they spring. There is an absence of individualistic and class distinctions, and a sense of community and social fluidity in Ireland, which has long since ceased to exist in England. This is an *asset of particular interest to the dramatist. In Synge's plays, when a stranger enters, he shares naturally in the conversation; no introduction is necessary. It is sometimes suggested that this community feeling arose from the unity of the Irish people in their historic struggle against British occupation. Yet this is not entirely true, since even the margin between the British 'ascendancy' - the descendants of those who were given land when the native Irish were dispossessed - and the local people was never a sharp one. In Yeats's early novel John Sherman (1889), the principal character, who is a member of the lesser gentry, observes: 'In your big towns a man finds his minority and knows nothing outside its border.... But here one chats with the whole world in a day's walk, for every man one meets is a class.' The capacity of the Irish to absorb their invaders and make them 'more Irish than themselves' is proverbial. It is the more remarkable in that, unlike the Chinese or even the French, there was never any well-defined or sophisticated civilization into which the invaders were fitted.*

This amorphousness of class structure is closely related to the easy-going character of the Irish people. This, however, has a negative

aspect as far as literature is concerned. There is an almost complete lack of social purpose or moral earnestness, and writers such as Bertrand Russell or Sartre would be as alien in Ireland as men from Mars. Even Shaw, strangely enough, hardly aroused a flicker of interest in his native country. Irish writers are essentially 'uncommitted'. Moreover, a substantial portion of English writing has always depended on exploring the sensibilities and situations to which a well-defined class-structure gives rise - one thinks of Waugh or E. M. Forster. It has sometimes been suggested that the weakness of the Irish novel lies in the absence of such a social framework.

It will be appropriate here to refer briefly to the only native culture Ireland possessed, the ancient Gaelic civilization. Ireland became Christian in the fifth century, and the golden age of Gaelic culture lasted from the seventh to around the twelfth century. The language declined steadily under the British occupation, and by the first half of the nineteenth century Irish had ceased to exist as a tongue for the educated. What survived were a number of peasant dialects, spoken along the western and southern seaboard. A movement to revive the language began at the turn of the present century, and when an independent state came into being in 1921, teaching of the language - and wherever possible in the language - was made compulsory in the schools. It is common knowledge today that this policy has met with scant success: there is more Welsh spoken among Welshmen than Irish among the Irish. Nevertheless the language has had considerable influence on speaking and writing in English. Synge wrote nothing in Irish, but the English he used drew its peculiar quality from being frequently a direct translation of Gaelic idiom.

With Liam O'Flaherty (b. 1897), who is an Aran islander born and so a native speaker, the influence is even stronger. His first book, *The Black Soul*, appears to have been written in Irish and then translated. Just as in Conrad, there are passages which suggest an extremely vivid but not a native command of English. Most of the later generation of writers have a competence in Irish. Frank O'Connor, Sean O'Faolain, Donagh MacDonagh have all published translations of Gaelic poems. Brendan Behan's riotously lyrical play, *The Hostage*, which caused a sensation in London in 1952, was originally performed in Irish.

There is one eighteenth-century Gaelic poem of some length which possesses such unique liveliness and interest that it has drawn forth no

fewer than four contemporary translations into English, and it deserves mention here. This is Brian Merriman's *Midnight Court*, and it deals in racy and often ribald language with a peculiarly Irish problem even today: the difficulty of persuading eligible bachelors to marry! The translations of Ussher, O'Connor, Longford, or Marcus all have merit. I quote at random from Marcus's very free rendering to show a rhythm and manner which is directly brought over from the original—the lady is beginning the catalogue of her neglected charms:

My mouth is sweet and my teeth are flashing,  
My face is never in need of washing,  
My eyes are green and my hair's undyed  
With waves as big as the ocean tide,  
And that's not a half, nor a tenth, of my treasure:  
I'm built with an eye to the maximum pleasure.

Two other translations of unusual interest are Tomas O'Crohan's *The Islandman* and Maurice O'Sullivan's *Twenty Years A-growing*. Both these are autobiographies by peasants from the Blasket Islands off the far south-western tip of Kerry. They portray men whose way of life was not greatly different from that of Homer's fishermen or the Icelanders of the sagas. The value of O'Crohan's book is enhanced by the fact that he was deeply conscious of the new civilization which was soon to engulf them. He states his purpose in writing: 'to set down the character of the people about me so that some record of us might live after us, for the like of us will never be again'.

The surge of creative writing in Ireland around the opening of this century has often, with mild exaggeration, been spoken of as the Irish literary renaissance. Though Ireland's population is less than one-tenth that of Great Britain, she produced in Yeats (1865-1939) and Joyce (1882-1941) two out of the half-dozen or so major writers of this period. She contributed at least her fair share of minor writers, and in the field of the English-speaking theatre was the principal medium for a revolution in dramatic writing and acting technique. What was responsible for this sudden outpouring of talent?

It is neither easy nor necessary to give a precise answer to that question. The troubled history of Ireland and the complete absence of a settled, wealthy, middle-class patronage seems responsible for the almost complete lack of tradition in painting or music. Literature, in fact, was the only art form likely to appear under these conditions.

But during the greater part of the nineteenth century the enthusiasm and idealism of the country tended to politics rather than literature. In 1892 political nationalism received a sudden and unusual check when the movement was split from top to bottom over Parnell's divorce case. Historical details must be sought elsewhere, but a glimpse of the anguished disillusion caused among ordinary people is given in Joyce's short story 'Ivy Day in the Committee Room', included in *Dubliners*. The point to note here is that in Yeats's and Joyce's formative years nationalist fervour was seeking an outlet outside politics. The Gaelic League, which was the movement to revive the language, and the national theatre movement were the principal beneficiaries. Both date from this time.

Five or six individuals were responsible for launching the new theatre movement, and, quite naturally, their aims were not identical. Yeats was interested from his early days in dramatic verse; he had already had a verse play performed in London. Edward Martyn's (1859-1924) enthusiasm was in direct opposition to Yeats's; he admired Ibsen, and though there was a poetic side to Ibsen which appealed to Yeats and Joyce, it was the aspect of his work dealing with problems of local politics - in 'joyless and pallid words', as Synge later put it - which Martyn wanted to apply to Ireland. Martyn's cousin, George Moore (1852-1933), had some practical experience of plays and players in Paris and London, a genuine interest in the Irish countryside and her people<sup>1</sup>, and a natural attraction towards a new medium of self-expression. Moore and Martyn were Catholic landlords from the West, and they met with Yeats in the home of a Protestant neighbour, Lady Gregory (1852-1932), who contributed a little money, several short plays, and much diplomacy - a lot was needed - to the venture. These were people of letters. From the theatrical side came the Fay brothers, William and Frank, who had for some years been acting in amateur and badly paid productions in Dublin and the provinces. The Fays, in fact, were looking round for more worth-while plays to perform than the stage-Irish melodramas then current, at the same time as the literary men were seeking an outlet in the theatre. The Fays approached the poet AE (George Russell, 1867-1935) and Douglas Hyde (1862-1946), the founder of the Gaelic League. AE put the Fays in touch with Yeats.

The Irish National Theatre Society was founded in 1901 with Yeats

as president. Two years later – owing to the financial support of an English drama enthusiast, Miss Horniman – a small theatre seating 500 was acquired. At first, productions were entirely amateur. But the need for professionalism inevitably asserted itself, though it led to the loss of some enthusiasts. The Abbey Theatre Company came into being with Yeats, Lady Gregory, and later Synge (1872–1909), as directors. William Fay was its first manager.

From the start the Abbey aroused intense interest and controversy at home. But it was the acclaim and financial success of visits to London, Cambridge, Oxford, Manchester, Glasgow, and other British cities which kept the company solvent. Plays were invariably 'by Irish authors on Irish subjects', but it was the style of acting which took English audiences by storm. The essentials of this style were realism in scenery, dress, and language (except for the verse plays), a refusal to allow any 'star' acting to dominate the group, and a studied absence of unnecessary gesture. (It is said that at one time Yeats tried to get the actors to rehearse in barrels.) This was a style of acting which had just been introduced in France by Antoine with his *théâtre libre*, which the Fays enthusiastically admired. Retrospectively, the scenic realism of the Abbey appears overdone, producing a fresh cramping convention in its turn; but the new purity of diction was to be a lasting innovation which cleared the way for later developments on the English stage.

It is sometimes supposed that the fierce quarrels which broke out in Dublin over the subject-matter of the new plays showed a straightforward cleavage between an enlightened band of artists and patriots and a priest-led mob. This was in fact far from the case. William Fay wrote in his memoirs that every play had to face two questions: Was it 'an insult to the faith'? Was it 'a slander on the people of Ireland'? Most serious plays failed in one test; some, such as *The Playboy*, failed in both. But leading patriots were as concerned over these questions as anyone else and were often opposed to Yeats's vision of artistic integrity within a nationalist mould. Arthur Griffith, the Sinn Féin chief, poured invective on the whole Abbey venture. The pacifist Francis Sheehy-Skeffington signed the protest against Yeats's *Countess Cathleen* – in which a philanthropist sells her soul to the devil to provide for her people in time of famine. And Maud Gonne, who had played the leading role in this play, herself walked out in protest against



autobiographies how he met Synge in Paris, supplementing a small private income by giving English lessons and making translations from the French poets into Anglo-Irish dialect. He advised Synge to return to his own country, learn Irish, and write plays for the new theatre. Synge followed his advice to the letter. It is doubtful if even Yeats anticipated the consequences of his advice.

The plays of Synge rise head and shoulders above the dramatic convention of his fellow-playwrights. They are not purely poetic plays, or peasant plays – though they have something of both; still less are they problem plays. The greatest of them, *The Playboy of the Western World*, was soon to be performed in half a dozen European languages. This is the story of a peasant boy who flees home under the impression he has killed his father. He is acclaimed as a hero, and under this acclaim becomes a hero – until his 'murdered da' reappears! Synge's strength, like that of Cervantes, lies in the juxtaposition of the most earthy realism with the highest flights of fancy. His characters speak a language which is imaginative and exuberant, just as sixteenth-century English was, because it was not cramped by industrial conformity or newspaper emotions:

Bravery's a treasure in a lonesome place, and a lad would kill his father, I'm thinking, would face a foxy divil with a pitchpike on the flags of hell.

We forget the wild improbability of the story, because it is both possible and probable at a certain level of the imagination. The patriot hysteria which greeted early productions in Dublin depended on the conviction that no decent Irish country girl would admire a murderer. Yet there is a primitive element in all human nature which is eternally ready to rejoice in the heroic, amoral act – until the civilized inhibitions clamp down. Synge's world is not the great world of modern living, but a small pre-civilized world of the imagination. Within this small world, his characters are completely convincing and enormously alive. And there emerges, perhaps, the nostalgia of a sick man for vital living (Synge died at the age of thirty-eight).

There is a measure of similarity between the work of Synge and Sean O'Casey (b. 1884) in that both rejected the 'joyless and pallid words' of the naturalist drama, but that is as far as the parallel goes. Whereas Synge was bred a country gentleman of small means and

educated at Trinity College, Dublin, O'Casey was an autodidact from the Dublin slums. Moreover, a radical change had come in the Irish scene in consequence of the First World War, the Irish fight for independence, and the civil war which ensued between those who wished for a compromise within the British empire, and those who, like de Valera, wished for an independent republic. Each of O'Casey's three great plays, *The Shadow of a Gunman*, *Juno and the Paycock*, and *The Plough and the Stars*, is set in the poorer parts of the city in which the playwright was born; in each there is a background of armed fighting and revolutionary catchcries.

A writer using such material started with an initial advantage. His theme is the impact of war and of a national ideal embodying courage and self-sacrifice on lives that would otherwise be merely sordid and without dramatic interest. All these plays verge on melodrama, but the intensity of a real experience, which was shared by the author and his early audiences, saves them from being quite that. The dominant motif is pity, pity for suffering humanity. The necessity of the national struggle is accepted, it is felt to be as inevitable as birth or death. Yet the heroes of these plays are not its soldiers, but their womenfolk who show courage of a different sort - who fight without sentiment and without conscious idealism to aid the suffering and afflicted, and to protect their own.

After the last of these plays, O'Casey left Ireland for England, and though some of his later work is set in Ireland it belongs primarily to the English stage. There is a diffuseness about this later writing, including the four volumes of autobiography which began with *I Knock at the Door* (1939): the theme is still pity and admiration for the common people, but it is drowned in a sardonic and misanthropic contempt for the upper classes, which soon becomes misanthropic. It is relieved only occasionally by the old melody of language. There is a basic failure of any organizing intelligence.

Two more Irish playwrights require our consideration. The first, however, takes us outside the tradition of the Abbey. In 1918 a new theatrical grouping was established, the Dublin Theatre League, with the intention of bringing to Ireland contemporary classics from the international stage. Plays by Shaw, Ibsen, O'Neill, D'Annunzio, and others were performed. In 1928 this group led to the founding of the Dublin Gate Theatre by Frank Fay.



and Michael MacLiammoir. Denis Johnston (b. 1901) was at one time producer for this theatre, and though the subject-matter of his plays is still Irish, his treatment reflects the wider horizons of this second company. *The Moon in the Yellow River* (1931), which was welcomed in London and New York, as well as in Dublin, is a straight play within the Chehov-Ibsen tradition. It deals with the impact of material progress on a countryside still dominated by easy-going traditionalism and romantic nationalism. As in O'Casey, there is conflict between an advancing ideal and human nature, and as usual comedy and tragedy are juxtaposed. But unlike O'Casey, the conflict is presented with full intelligence instead of with a despairing pity. It is seen as part of a wider context; the 'message' of the play is to reflect a genuine perplexedness, which is as relevant to Russia or China (from which the title comes) as to Ireland.

Johnston's three most original plays, *The Old Lady Says 'No!'*, *A Bride for the Unicorn*, and *The Golden Cuckoo*, broke from conventional stagecraft and used a technique which was open and expressionist, similar to that of Toller and Brecht. Unfortunately, they depend for their full effect on a close acquaintance with Irish history and tradition and on the emotional undertones this involves. For this reason they have had little success abroad.

We must now mention the work of one of the most unusual and off-centre writers to appear in any country this century. In his best work, Samuel Beckett combines the exotic imaginativeness of the surrealist poets with the inner compulsiveness and significance of Kafka or Camus. Beckett was born in Dublin in 1906, of Jewish origins. He graduated at Trinity College and then left Ireland for France, where he has resided almost continuously since. His first publications were a long poem *Whoroscope* (1930) and a slim academic study, published shortly afterwards, *Proust*. In Paris he became a close friend of Joyce, and the influence of Proust and Joyce is very evident in his later novels, which are written entirely within the 'stream of consciousness' convention. In 1947 he translated his first novel, *Murphy*, into French and in succeeding years he chose to write directly in French, rather than in his native tongue. A trilogy of novels, *Molloy*, *Malone Meurt*, and *L'Innomable*, appeared in Paris between 1951 and 1953, receiving a certain acclaim. In the winter of 1952, his first play, *En attendant Godot*, was performed there, and was



close: often a family was divided against itself, and even where this was not so, the existence of a common language between the English soldiery and the insurrectionaries gave it a more private character. The title story of Frank O'Connor's first book, *Guests of a Nation*, well illustrates this. There is a sardonic, disillusioned character about the later work of all these writers, similar to that we have noted in O'Casey. Once the great struggle was over, life in a predominantly lower-middle-class republic seemed to provide no stimulus to creative development. No writer of this period shows the steady integral growth which is so striking a feature in Yeats and in a different form in Joyce.

It has already been mentioned that the absence of a firm class structure in modern Ireland has been blamed for her failure to produce any novelist of real distinction during these years. Perhaps it is true that the novel requires a background of established society against which the individual characters are set, even though their action is to be a repudiation of this background. In Ireland the only forces which might have offered such a unifying concept were Catholicism or the national movement. But Irish Catholicism has been of such a narrow and parochial character as to prove a millstone round the neck of any intellectual: it has been the motive power behind the state censorship of books which places works from almost every novelist of world fame in the same category as the work of straightforward pornographers. This certainly has a depressing and inhibiting effect on writers. As for the national movement, it had lost its real *raison d'être* after the establishment of the Free State in 1922. All that survived was an isolated terrorist group intent on carrying on the struggle until 'the North' was incorporated in an all-Irish republic. Seán O'Faoláin is Ireland's most distinguished novelist of this period and the theme of two of his books, *Bird Alone* and *Come Back to Erin*, is precisely the stunting and stultification of individual lives under the twin forces of an uninspired Catholicism and a disembodied nationalism.

These reasons for the failure of the novel are speculative. By contrast, it is certain that in the short story Irish writers have excelled. Frank O'Connor has written a large number of stories, of which the earlier at any rate show a rare gift of observation and characterization and for using a small incident to illuminate a social scene. His attempts at the broader canvas of the novel have been a dismal failure. Something of the same is true of Liam O'Flaherty. He has written one good

historical novel, *Famine*, and some vivid shorter novels, such as *The Informer* and *The Puritan*. But in most of his longer writings, the material is diffuse and uncontrolled: striking incidents are linked by impatiently sketched-in narrative, as in *The House of Gold*. But some of his stories, such as 'The Caress' (tucked away for some odd reason in his autobiography *Shame the Devil*), will stand comparison with the plays of Synge for their bare lyrical realism. When he writes of life on his native Aran islands O'Flaherty's natural boisterousness finds both an outlet and a containing influence.

If prose-writers and playwrights suffered from frustration after 1922 in seeking material and a sense of values from which to write, poets suffered from a different problem - that of establishing their independence from the overpowering influence of Yeats. There were numerous competitors for the mantle of the arch-poet among his immediate successors. Austin Clarke (b. 1896), F. R. Higgins (1896-1941), Padraic Colum (b. 1881) all wrote distinguished work. Donagh MacDonagh (b. 1912) made some fine ballads, and broke new ground by contributing to the Dublin stage two ballad-comedies, *Happy as Larry* (1946) and *God's Gentry* (1951). These are in the manner of Brecht's *Beggar's Opera* and were the forerunners of Behan's *Hostage*, and the musical adaptation of the *Playboy* as *The Heart's a Wonder*, which was produced in 1958.

But a poet of real originality is Patrick Kavanagh, who was born in 1905 on a small farm in County Monaghan, one of the poorest and most featureless of the Irish counties. The opening lines of his long poem 'The Great Hunger' portray this land:

Clay is the work and clay is the flesh  
Where the potato-gatherers like mechanised scarecrows move  
Along the side-fall of the hill - Maguire and his men.  
If we watch them an hour is there anything we can prove  
Of life as it is broken-backed over the Book  
Of Death?

If there is a forerunner here it is D. H. Lawrence rather than Yeats, but there is more a parallel of feeling than an influence. Kavanagh's picture of grinding toil in the small irregular fields of his homeland is far closer to Lawrence's view of the collieries than to that of any of the English nature poets. There is no sentimentality, but a complete integrity of imagery, and a devastating integrity of vision.

### PART THREE

Watch him, watch him, that man on a hill whose spirit  
Is a wet sack flapping about the knees of time.

The poet who wrote that had himself worn an old sack for a cheap apron on muddy work. Here once more we are up against the problem of Ireland's lonely bachelors, fearful to marry lest they overcrowd the land, this time seen from the inside. 'The Great Hunger' is an epic of the life of one such small farmer, and it contains passages of savage, humourless satire, again recalling Lawrence. The 'hunger' of the title is both the hunger for land and the hunger for life; both of them finally unappeased:

... he is not so sure now if his mother was right  
When she praised the man who made a field his bride.

Many names are inevitably missing in so short a survey, but we may perhaps conclude by mentioning the youngest poet to be included in the *Oxford Book of Irish Verse*, Thomas Kinsella, who was born in 1927, and whose first volume, *Another September*, was the Poetry Book Society's Choice for 1958. It would be unwise at this stage to attempt critical appraisal of so young a poet. But it can be said that he is a writer who owes nothing to his predecessors. Moreover, of all his contemporaries, he is the one who appears most to have taken to heart Yeats's last words of counsel:

Irish poets, learn your trade.

There is a technical firmness both of manner and matter in his work which is the antithesis of the Celtic twilight mood with which the half century began.

### NOTES

1. Those who think of Moore only in connexion with the 'purple' writing of his later period will be surprised at the insight and realism of such early works as *The Untilled Field* (1903).
2. For a good discussion of the wider themes involved in *Godot*, particularly the religious implications, see the *Times Literary Supplement*, 10 February 1956.

# SHAW AND THE LONDON THEATRE

T. R. BARNES

*Bishop Wordsworth's School, Salisbury*

DRAMATIC art has long seemed to me a kind of *Biblia Pauperum* – a Bible in pictures for those who cannot read the written or printed word; and the dramatic author a lay preacher, who hawks about the ideas of his time in popular form – popular enough for the middle classes, who form the bulk of theatrical audiences, to grasp the nature of the subject without troubling their brains too much. The theatre, accordingly, has always been a board-school for the young, for the half-educated, and for women, who still retain the inferior faculty of deceiving themselves and allowing themselves to be deceived: that is to say, of being susceptible to illusion and to the suggestions of the author. Consequently, in these days, when the rudimentary and incompletely developed thought-process which operates through the imagination appears to be developing into reflection, investigation and examination, it has seemed to me that the theatre... may be on the verge of being abandoned as a form which is dying out, and for the enjoyment of which we lack the necessary conditions .. in those civilized countries which have produced the greatest thinkers of the age – that is to say, England and Germany – the dramatic art ... is dead.

(Strindberg, Preface to *Miss Julie*, 1888)

The passage is well known, but it has seemed worth quoting at length, not only because it so well typifies the climate of opinion in which Shaw (1856–1950) began to write plays, but because it remains so extraordinarily apposite a description of his own work and of much that has been written since. Consider for example, this account, by F. C. Burnand, of the audience at the Royal Court Theatre, during the famous Barker-Vedrenne regime, 1903–6: ‘The female element predominates over the inferior sex as something like twelve to one. The audience had not a theatre-going, but rather, a lecture-going, sermon-loving appearance.’ And it is easy to compile

a list of worthy plays, from *Strife* to *Thunder Rock* or *A Sleeping Clergyman* or *Johnson Over Jordan*, which are, in essence, lessons for Strindberg's 'board-school'.

The attack on the imagination is also relevant. Curiously old-fashioned though it may sound today, it is characteristic of much thinking about the drama at the end of the nineteenth century. There was a naïve belief that the literature of naturalism was, for the first time, revealing the truth. '*Dans l'enfancement continu de l'humanité*,' declared Zola magniloquently in the preface to the dramatized version of *Thérèse Raquin*, '*nous en sommes à l'accouchement du vrai*.' This truth was to be 'scientific'. 'What we wanted as the basis of our plays', wrote Shaw, 'was not romance, but a really scientific natural history'; and this basis was to be arrived at by thinking: 'there is flatly no future now for any drama without music, except the drama of thought'. Strindberg would seem to imply that if all we have is 'reflection, investigation, examination', we 'lack the necessary conditions for the enjoyment' and also, presumably, for the creation, of the drama. It seems to be a popular procedure in *avant-garde* criticism to cut off the branch you are sitting on - Ionesco and Beckett are contemporary examples - and Strindberg's practice belied his theory, but in the attitude to literature expressed in these remarks, above all in the exaltation of the intellect at the expense of the imagination, in the insistence on scientific method and on thought, lies the reason why so much of the well-intentioned, thought-provoking, socially directed drama of the Shavian period seems so dead today.

Shaw claimed to be in the tradition of Molière. 'My business as a classic writer of comedies', he said, 'is to chasten morals with ridicule'; and part of his technique was to reintroduce to the drama 'long; rhetorical speeches in the manner of Molière'. There can be no doubt that his plays amused, stimulated, exasperated, and shocked his contemporaries; that no plays since Congreve's (it is Mr Eliot's opinion) have more pointed and eloquent dialogue, that he was a man of great intelligence and immense seriousness of purpose, and that only one of his contemporaries, in one play, *The Importance of Being Earnest*, can hold a candle to his best work. But if we compare his work with that, say, of Lawrence, of Forster, or of Eliot, can we say that it still lives for us as much as theirs does, that we can return to it

as we can to theirs, and find new values in it? Does not the reference to Molière, which was seriously meant – it is not a mere piece of Shavian rodomontade – make us feel a bit uneasy?

Consider these fragments of dialogue:

*Madelon* (one of the *Précieuses Ridicules*):

*La belle galanterie que la leur! Quoi! Débuter d'abord par le mariage?*

*Gorgibus* (her father):

*Et par où veux-tu donc qu'ils débutent? Par le concubinage?*

*Don Luis* (speaking to his son, *Don Juan*):

*Apprenez enfuit qu'un gentilhomme qui vit mal est un monstre dans la nature....*

*Mme Jourdain*: ... *I y a longtemps que vos façons de faire donnent à rire à tout le monde.*

*M. Jourdain*: *Qui est donc tout ce monde-là, s'il vous plaît?*

*Mme Jourdain*: *Tout ce monde-là est un monde qui a raison, et qui est plus sage que vous.*

*Mendoza*: I am a bandit. I live by robbing the rich.

*Tanner*: I am a gentleman. I live by robbing the poor. Shake hands!

*Undershift*: Poverty, my friend, is not a thing to be proud of.

*Shirley*: Who made your millions for you? Me and my like.

Whats kep us poor? Keepin you rich. I wouldn't have your conscience, not for all your income.

*Undershift*: I wouldn't have your income, not for all your conscience, Mr Shirley.

All these bits depend for their impact on the weight of certain key words – *galanterie*, *mariage*, *nature*, *monde*, *gentilhomme*, *poor*, *rich*, *conscience*, and so on. If Molière's terms have much greater weight than Shaw's, and I think it could be shown that they have, this is because his audience spoke the same language as he did, because they wereshared between them, because Molière's *conscience* was a word that he could assume an understanding on the part of his audience more complete than any contemporary playwright could assume. The fact that this sort of understanding so largely *was* there, that it was possible to chastening morals with ridicule, as Molière or Ben Jonson might, was the matter, most difficult, if not impossible; that *was* the



could hear the wind in the trees, the larks in the sunshine, the young lambs crying through the healthy frost, and the blessed, blessed church bells'. One is reminded of Yeats's remarks about the realistic drama: 'Except when it is superficial, or deliberately argumentative, it fills one's soul with a sense of commonness as with dust. It has one mortal ailment. It cannot become impassioned, that is to say vital, without making somebody gushing and sentimental.'

Shaw advised us to 'get rid of reputations: they are weeds in the soil of ignorance. Cultivate that soil, and they will flower more beautifully, but only as annuals.' But since, presumably, we cannot agree with this, or with the idea that past works of art are 'fossils', preserved in 'style', we must ask what elements in Shaw's work are still living. His assertions about the Life Force, tolerable in a light-hearted performance like *Man and Superman*, become boring in the over-long and pretentious *Back to Methuselah*; his admiration for the great man, stimulating and even ennobling in *Caesar and Cleopatra*, degenerated into dangerous and sentimental weakness; but his wit, his gaiety, above all his passion for justice, remain undimmed.

Shaw was a pioneer in the matter of publishing plays. 'He realized', says Mr St John Ervine, 'that no one would read a prompt copy of a play unless he had to. ... *Plays Pleasant and Unpleasant* was, therefore, issued in a form which was a mixture of novel and play ... the emotions of the characters at a particular point were described.' The same authority tells us that 'dull people imagined that G. B. S. in writing these accounts was naïvely revealing his inability to write plays at all'. Think, for a moment, of the brilliant paragraph which, at the beginning of *Man and Superman*, describes Roebuck Ramsden in his study:

He wears a black frock coat, a white waistcoat (it is bright summer weather) and trousers, neither black nor perceptibly blue, of one of those indefinitely mixed hues which the modern clothier has produced to harmonize with the religions of respectable men ...

If we remember anything about Roebuck it is likely to be this job about the colour of his trousers. The specimen is pinned down for our leisurely inspection, its habitat sketched in, and its prejudice social, political, economic, and aesthetic, neatly indicated. 'Again the wall opposite him are two busts on pillars: one, to his left, of Job

Bright; the other, to his right, of Herbert Spencer ... autotypes of allegories by Mr G. F. Watts (for Roebuck believes in the fine arts with all the earnestness of a man who does not understand them) ... Our pleasure in this detached and comic portrayal is increased by symbolic and humorous exaggeration. The polish on Roebuck's furniture, made possible by the labour his money can buy ('it is clear that there are at least two housemaids and a parlourmaid downstairs, and a housekeeper upstairs who does not let them spare elbow grease'), is transferred to his bald head: 'On a sunshiny day he could heliograph orders to distant camps by merely nodding.' Shaw's debt to Dickens in passages like this is obvious. But to think of a novelist, is to think that this whole passage might well come from a novel, though it is in fact a stage direction; yet when we consider it from that point of view we see at once that most of it is quite irrelevant, for no audience can be expected to recognize photographs of George Eliot and busts of John Bright and draw from them those conclusions about Roebuck's character which Shaw so neatly deduces.

Mr St John Ervine's dull people were, of course, wrong when they thought Shaw couldn't write plays; but the point they might have made about this description of Ramsden is simply that it is not in the play at all, and that no matter how cunning the scene designer, or how skilled the actor, it can't by any means be got into it. And they might also add that in great drama 'the emotions of the characters at a particular point' are not described, but expressed. Shaw's dialogue, his style, his rhythms, his imagery, though admirably suited to dialectic or pedagogy, won't do for everything he has in mind to put in the plays; and this is largely true of naturalistic drama in general. We need not, in way of comparison, invoke the shades of Shakespeare or Molière: Congreve, Sheridan, Beaumont, or even Wilde will do. We don't need elaborate descriptions of Ben the Sailor, or Sir Benjamin Backbite, or Figaro (compared with Ben the poverty-stricken a character is Henry Sharncliffe, or Lady Eglantine), because their creators have expressed them fully and meaningfully through the speeches and rhythms they have created for them.

In the Preface to *Plays Pleasant and Unpleasant* Shaw himself, in two directions, complains that there are none in *Sharncliffe's* play, and goes on to say:

It is for want of this elaboration that Shakespeare, unsurpassed as poet, story-teller, character draughtsman, humorist, and rhetorician, has left no coherent drama, and could not afford to pursue a genuinely scientific method in his studies of character and society.

If Shaw's drama is intellectually coherent, its coherence can only be grasped by a reader. We must agree with Shaw when he says that he has 'never found an acquaintance with a dramatist founded on the theatre alone ... a really intimate and accurate one'; but we may also wonder whether any drama is truly great that depends as much as his does on extra-theatrical considerations.

When we turn from the plays of Shaw to those of his contemporaries and successors who used the naturalistic convention to depict and discuss society and its problems, we find little of permanent interest. Much work, like that of Barrie or Coward, for example, is merely sentimental, frivolous, or trivial. Attempts by such writers as Galsworthy, Maugham, Bridie, or Priestley to deal with serious themes seem already dated. There is a good deal of honest and earnest work, some flashes of humour and fantasy, and useful discussion - for Shaw's success undoubtedly opened the theatre doors to the drama of ideas - but there is nothing truly creative. These writers all handle ideas we have heard before, and manipulate situations and feelings already familiar. They are not trivial, they do not lack a 'worthy purpose', but they are not creative. If effective enough in the theatre, their works do not repay reading; their dialogue is for the most part invincibly dull: words fail them.

Not all voices at the beginning of the century acclaimed naturalism: Yeats, for example, had very different ideas. He had been told, he said, that 'the poetic drama has come to an end, because modern poets have no dramatic power'; but this explanation didn't convince him. He found it 'easier to believe that audiences, who have learned .. from the life of crowded cities to live upon the surface of life, and actors and managers who study to please them, have changed, than that imagination, which is the voice of what is eternal in man, has changed'. 'The theatre', he maintained, 'began in ritual, and it cannot come to its greatness again without recalling words to their ancient sovereignty.'

It would, I think, be true to say that most plays of any literary

merit produced during the last half-century exhibit the influence of what we might call the Shavian or the Yeatsian points of view. Though naturalism was dominant, there were many besides Yeats who were dissatisfied with what they felt to be the imaginative poverty of realism, and who tried to bring poetry back to the theatre. Mostly they failed, and it is usually thought that they did so because they knew nothing of the stage, or play construction, or how to write dialogue, and this is partly true; but the real reason for their failure is linguistic. Their verse was merely decorative, their idiom devitalized, their rhythms flaccid. They pleased what Lawrence called the 'habituated ear' of the public whose taste approved the Georgian Poetry anthologies, but their plays could only lead a brief obscure theatrical existence in private performances or in occasional appearances in the lists of the more adventurous repertory companies. Believing the naturalistic conventions to be sterile, determined to get away from 'plays with pink lamp-shades', from 'patent leather shoes on Brussels carpets', from a stage dedicated to picturing 'life on thirty pounds a day, not as it is, but as it is conceived by the earners of thirty-shillings a week', they escaped for the most part into romantic unrealities. Their works might well have been written by Marchbanks or Tavy.

In the thirties, W. H. Auden, in collaboration with Christopher Isherwood, tried to assimilate elements of the popular theatre into plays which should embody a serious comment on the contemporary situation. The result was an uneasy mixture of satire and nostalgia, of moral indignation and self-pity, seasoned with tags from Freud and Marx, but it had at least a certain energy; it evinced a genuine concern for the human situation, and tried to express that concern in a poetic idiom tough enough to work on the public stage.

That the poet should try to make use of the forms of the commercial theatre, instead of turning his back on them in despair or disgust, was an important departure which has obvious bearings on the dramatic work of Mr Eliot. We are now no longer surprised that a play in verse should have a run in the West End. Audiences have begun to welcome verbal exuberance and rhetoric, after a starvation diet of the dullest prose, and some of them seem to be beginning to share Yeats's views (thirty or more years after he wrote them) on the 'play about modern educated people'. Indeed, Mr Rattigan, our top



direct contact with his audience: and we would, I think, be justified in assuming that one of his reasons for turning to the drama was the desire to break out of the cultural isolation from which the modern poet suffers. 'Our problem should be', he wrote in *The Possibility of a Poetic Drama*, 'to take a form of entertainment of a crude sort and subject it to the process which would leave it a form of art.' The form of entertainment he has chosen is the drawing-room comedy, that 'sets a piece of the world as we know it in a place by itself'. The list of characters in *The Family Reunion*, for example, would suit a play by Maugham or Coward or Rattigan; it is patently 'a play about modern educated people'. The 'process' to which this 'form' is subjected is twofold: first the story or action refers to a Greek original; it has a skeleton of myth, presumably to help represent 'what is eternal in man', though this can be of use only to the author, for he cannot rely today on an audience understanding such an allusion, and Mr Eliot has himself recorded that he had to 'go into detailed explanation' to convince his friends that the source of *The Cocktail Party* was the *Alcestis* of Euripides. Second, the dialogue is written in verse. ('Surely there is some legitimate craving, not restricted to a few persons, which only the verse play can satisfy.') This verse has 'a rhythm close to contemporary speech'; the lines are 'of varying length and varying number of syllables, with a caesura and three stresses', and the whole is intended as 'a design of human actions and words, such as to present at once the two aspects of dramatic and musical order'.

Few can doubt the value of Mr Eliot's experiments, and of the acute analyses he has made of the problems of poetic drama. But in spite of the care, the skill, the intelligence that has gone to their making, these plays lack vitality because they are not informed with human sympathy. In the arbitrary hierarchy of spiritual values that the characters represent there is no charity. We are shown their actions, we are told about their motives, we see their progress to the solution Mr Eliot has arranged for them, but we do not feel any of this. It is impossible to believe in Colby Simpkins's future ~~crisis~~ or to be convinced by the martyrdom of the young lady in *The Cocktail Party*. This lack of warmth and energy is strikingly brought on if we compare a page or two of any of these plays with that ~~un-~~able fragment *Sweeney Agonistes* - surely the finest piece of ~~modern~~ verse Mr Eliot has ever written. We might apply to it his own ~~own~~

### PART THREE

marks on Yeats's last play, *Purgatory*, 'in which ... he solved his problems of speech in verse, and laid all his successors under obligation to him'. When we think of *Prufrock* and *Gerontion*, where verse follows with insidious intent and exhilarating vigour the quirk of character, the shift of mood and feeling, we may feel like applying to Mr Eliot the remarks he makes about Browning, in the essay entitled 'Three Voices of Poetry':

What personage, in a play by Browning, remains alive in the mind? On the other hand who can forget Fra Lippo Lippi, or Andrea del Sarto ... It would seem without further examination, from Browning's mastery of the dramatic monologue, and his very modest achievement in the drama, that the two forms must be essentially different. Is there ... another voice ... the voice of the dramatic poet whose dramatic gifts are best exercised outside the theatre?

It may be significant that Mr Eliot's most successful play should be *Murder in the Cathedral*, which was written for the Canterbury Festival, and was therefore intended to fulfil a specific social purpose, purpose, moreover, with which the drama has still a living and real, tenuous, connexion - the performance in aid of the parish funds. The poet was here playing a traditional role; his gifts served a cause and commended beliefs which he shared with his audience, and this situation seems to have liberated energies which have given the play strength enough to dominate an audience in a public theatre, a greater strength, it seems to me, than is exhibited in any of the plays which use the conventions of drawing-room comedy.

Shaw once said that what was wrong with 'the drama of the day' was that it was 'written for the theatres instead of from its own inner necessity'. The sort of play that Shaw was complaining about is still the staple fare in the West End theatre. But thanks to him that fare now usually includes a few dishes more nourishing than any he had to feed on in the days when he was a dramatic critic. His precepts and his example have had their effect. Shaw cannot be considered a major artist (he ranked himself about number ten among English playwrights); but we can with some justice claim that our best dramatic work is livelier, more serious, more deeply concerned with life than it has been at any time since the days of Fielding. In so far as any one man is responsible for this, that man is Shaw.

# THE COMEDY OF IDEAS: CROSS-CURRENTS IN THE FICTION AND DRAMA OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY

R. C. CHEECHILL

THERE has been a great deal of interest taken recently in Henry James's abortive flirtation with the drama, it being widely recognized that this experience was one of the chief influences behind the intensely dramatized form of his later novels. What has not been remarked is the curious fact that at the same time as James was trying to get the dramatic virtues into the novel, Bernard Shaw, who had started as a novelist and had the same failure in fiction as James had on the stage, was trying to get the virtues of the novel into the drama. Shaw was to become the leading platform debater, as well as the leading dramatist of ideas, of the twentieth century; and there was nothing that James liked better, whether in writing or in conversation, than to discuss the problems of his art. Yet, though the two men did correspond on this subject, no record of a full-scale debate has survived.

We can, nevertheless, imagine roughly how it would have gone. In the correspondence of James and H. G. Wells<sup>1</sup> we have the classic case of the literary artist versus the journalist, summed up by Wells when he wrote: 'To you literature like painting is an end, to me literature like architecture is a means, it has a use ... I had rather be called a journalist than an artist, that is the essence of it.' He was to satirize the literary artist of the James type in *Boon* (1915), as he had satirized the sociologist of the type of the Webbs in *The New Machiavelli* (1911). Both James and Wells, however, were inclined to exaggerate their position. In reaction against Wells's immense international reputation,<sup>2</sup> James over-emphasized his own unpopularity. He was not in fact so unpopular as he frequently lamented. One of his novels, *The American*, appeared in Nelson's Sevenpenny Library, as 'an example of the best work of one who is regarded with justice as among our greatest living novelists ... as one of the most perfect examples of Mr Henry James's remarkable art'.<sup>3</sup> On his side, in re-





'She sent it back.'

'To the Countess? Gammon!' said Mrs Wix. She disposed of that plea as effectually as Susan Ash.

'Well, I don't care!' Maisie replied. 'What I mean is that you don't know about the rest.'

'The rest? What rest?'

and was soon to graduate to this:<sup>6</sup>

'... I can bear anything.'

'Oh "bear"!' Mrs Assingham fluted.

'For love,' said the Princess.

Fanny hesitated. 'Of your father.'

'For love,' Maggie repeated.

It kept her friend watching. 'Of your husband?'

'For love,' Maggie said again.

That is the novel partaking of the dramatic emotion of the stage play. Shaw, at the same time, was writing plays with enormous stage directions, being convinced that the time had gone by when one could just say, like the Elizabethans, 'another part of the field', and leave it at that. Shaw not only set his scene in the utmost detail, but gave his actors an embarrassment of help by describing both the outward appearance and the personality of his characters:

Major Sergius Saranoff, the original of the portrait in Raina's room, is a tall romantically handsome man, with the physical hardihood, the high spirit, and the susceptible imagination of an untamed mountaineer chieftain. But his remarkable personal distinction is of a characteristically civilized type. The ridges of his eyebrows, curving with an interrogative twist round the projections at the outer corners; his jealously observant eye; his nose, thin, keen, and apprehensive in spite of the pugnacious high bridge and large nostril; his assertive chin would not be out of place in a Parisian salon, shewing that the clever imaginative barbarian has an acute critical faculty which has been thrown into intense activity by the arrival of western civilization in the Balkans. The result is precisely what the advent of nineteenth-century thought first produced in England: to wit, Byronism. By his brooding on the perpetual failure, not only of others, but of himself, to live up to his ideals ... (etc., etc.: continues for twenty more lines in the collected edition).

This massive detail,<sup>7</sup> to say nothing of his lengthy prefaces, makes his plays something of a cross between dramatic literature and the novel; assisted by the accident of his becoming famous in print first, then on the stage afterwards. James's move in the opposite direction was partly due to his irritation at the sprawling habits of the Victorian three-volume novel, particularly those previously serialized in magazines, the novelist padding out his numbers against the clock. It cannot be denied, however, that most of James's later novels, for all their dramatic merits, make heavier reading than he intended; nor that, despite the readability as well as the theatrical qualities of the early Shaw, there was a corresponding limitation in the Shawian conception of the dramatic art.

This is best seen in his view of Shakespeare. Shaw the music critic spoke well of the 'orchestration' of Shakespeare's verse; but his portrait of Shakespeare in *The Dark Lady of the Sonnets* (1910) is one that could only have been produced by a writer who combined a deep appreciation of music with a total misconception of dramatic poetry. His Shakespeare carries a notebook about with him and when anyone utters a 'strain of music' he copies it down for future use. Thus, when the Beefeater exclaims: 'Angels and ministers of grace defend us!', down it goes in Shakespeare's 'tablets' for future use in *Hamlet*! The limited truth behind this misconception is, of course, that the Elizabethan drama, like the Authorized Version of the Bible, was based on the common speech of the time; but what Shaw failed to realize was that poetic drama is not drama with poetry added to it but a separate species in which the drama and the poetry are one and the same.<sup>8</sup> A related point is that Shaw romanticized a poet in *Candida* (1895) and a painter in *The Doctor's Dilemma* (1906), both highly unconvincing figures; he would not have made the same mistake with a composer.

I cannot myself see entire success either in the majority of James's later 'dramatic' fiction or in most of Shaw's early 'novel-plays'. They were written at roughly the same time, c. 1890-1910, and they have, I believe, different but related weaknesses. James's intention was so to dramatize the novel that all extraneous matter could be eliminated and the attention of the reader fixed throughout on the main scenes, like a spectator in the theatre; Shaw's intention was to provide plays with so extensive an elaboration that they could bear intellectual comparison with the novels of a Meredith. We cannot doubt the

limited success of these endeavours, James's later novels being on as lofty a level compared with the average Victorian three-decker as Shaw's early plays compared with the average Victorian melodrama or farce. But do such novels as *The Awkward Age* and *The Golden Bowl* compare favourably with *Middlemarch* or with the best of James's own earlier work? Is not their comparative unreadability partly due to a misconception of form, similar to Shaw's lack of dramatic art compared with Shakespeare or Synge? It is with the results of this curious juncture in mind that I should like to make some observations on the position of the literature of ideas in the twentieth century.

\*     \*     \*

We can imagine roughly, as I say, the arguments used by James and Shaw in justification of their contrary proceeding. Much of their debate would have been talking at cross-purposes, but not all of it; for James was as profoundly versed in painting as Shaw was in music, so that each had a standard in a different art to which literature could profitably be compared. James's analogies with painting, in the prefaces to the novels, are as frequent as Shaw's orchestral analogies in the prefaces to the plays. Sooner or later, however, they would, as it were, have come to blows: they would have started hurling Dickens at each other, and both would have been justified in their ammunition.

For we cannot proceed very far in any discussion of the relation of the English novel to the English drama without bringing in Dickens. He is the most dramatic of our novelists, though he did not deliberately incur the dramatic responsibilities in the manner of James. In his autobiographies James gives him the title of 'Master' along with George Eliot; and he had the privilege of meeting both Masters personally.<sup>9</sup> There are perhaps two main currents in the English novel, the one flowing from Fielding and Smollett to Scott and Dickens, the other from Richardson and Jane Austen to George Eliot and James. We need not discuss the minor links; it is sufficient for our purpose to note that the novel proper in the twentieth century has mostly stemmed from the latter source, the novel of ideas from the former. There is a tradition of comedy in English fiction which originally sprang from the drama, which reached its highest point in

Dickens, and which in our time is principally found in the novel of ideas from Wells to Orwell and in the novel-drama of Shaw. They are the inheritors here, not only of the comic richness and the concern for social justice of Fielding and Dickens, but of that looseness of art in the general run of eighteenth- and nineteenth-century literature against which writers like James and Conrad reacted. They were right so to react; but we must not put all the righteousness on the one side. What a sprawl is *Chuzzlewit* compared with James's *Lady* or Conrad's *Nostromo*! If James had written *Chuzzlewit*, we can be sure that the novel would have been a unified work of art, as Dickens's novel is not; but there would have been no artistic necessity for such characters as Mrs Gamp or Young Bailey, or indeed for the whole Columbian business, and it is precisely there that the comic genius of *Chuzzlewit* mainly resides. Mrs Gamp, like Sam Weller, was an afterthought, a sudden flush of comic inspiration; and when you write a novel on the principles of Flaubert or James you keep to your original plan, with no afterthoughts permitted.<sup>10</sup> It was the practice of James, particularly after his dramatic experience, to draw up what he called 'a really detailed scenario, an intensely structural, intensely hinged and jointed preliminary frame'; it was the practice of the early Dickens to draw up a rough plan and improvise the details as he went along - a practice encouraged by publication in instalments. It is the whole achievement of the work of art which we admire in James (though some of his novels, including *What Maisie Knew*, were serialized in magazines); in Dickens we often forget the over-all plan in our admiration of the details.

I submit the following proposition: that the literature of ideas in the twentieth century is mainly Dickensian, both in its virtues and in its vices, and that to criticize it by the standards of Henry James is beside the point. It is the English tradition of comedy, both in its admirable detail and its casual sprawl, which is inherited by writers like Shaw, Wells, Chesterton, Huxley, and Orwell. In *Unto This Last* Ruskin praised 'the essential value and truth of Dickens's writings', singling out *Hard Times* ('to my mind, in several respects, the greatest he has written') and advising us not to 'lose the use of Dickens's wit and insight, because he chooses to speak in a circle of stage fire'.<sup>11</sup> This is eminently just and reasonable, but nevertheless it was that disparaged fire which produced Mrs Gamp and most of the other

memorable Dickens characters as well as the melodrama and the sentimentality which Ruskin rightly deplored.

Paraphrasing Ruskin, I would say: let us not lose the wit and insight of the best of our literature of ideas because these virtues are embodied in writings which, as works of art, do not stand comparison with even the lesser productions of our major literary artists. Compared with Synge, Shaw seems as insecure an artist as Wells compared with James, or Huxley compared with Lawrence; but Shaw on the stage, though comparable at his best with Sheridan and Oscar Wilde, is not the whole Shaw: he has a further dimension in non-dramatic literature, as the novels and essays of Wells, Belloc, Chesterton, Huxley, and Orwell are variants of the same species. The literature of ideas in our time is a very untidy business; but no more so than in the novels (or assorted scrapbooks) of Peacock, Disraeli, and Samuel Butler.

Proportion is the essence of the serious literary artist; comic exaggeration, if often for a serious purpose, is the keynote alike of Dickens and the twentieth-century literature of ideas: exaggeration in all its forms, of speech and idea and procedure. Where Dickens in the preface to *Little Dorrit* cannot write simply of 'a small boy carrying a baby' but must needs write 'the smallest boy I ever conversed with, carrying the largest baby I ever saw'; so in *The Truth about Pycraft* (1903), Wells writes of the 'British Encyclopaedia (tenth edition)', where the edition is absolutely irrelevant; in *Arms and the Man* (1894) Shaw puts his ideas about Byronism into a stage-direction and writes a preface to the gigantic *Back to Methuselah* sequence (1921) which is itself a hundred pages long and the wittiest summary of the Darwinian controversy ever written; Chesterton pads out 10 novel length the simplest of short stories, like *Manalive* (1912), as if Hans Andersen had taken three volumes to tell the story of the Ugly Duckling; Huxley in *Brave New World* (1932) cannot resist the temptation to quote the nursery rhymes of the future: 'Streptocock-Gee to Banbury T, to see a fine bathroom and W.C.', etc.; and Orwell in 1984 (1949) inserts some notes about modern idiom he had previously discussed in the essay *Politics and the English Language*. ... In all these cases, and any reader will supply a dozen more, there is evidently no premeditation, but ideas springing to the mind of the writers as they go along, too rich to be left out, too absorbing not to be carried to the

bitter end. Equally, it is in these details, as it is in Mrs Gamp in *Chuzzlewit*, that the value of their writings mainly resides.

Huxley himself, under the thin disguise of the character Philip Quarles in *Point Counter Point* (1928), discussed the difference between the novelist of ideas and what he termed the 'congenital' novelist. And in that novel he made an attempt to proceed from being the former into being the latter. I believe we should be grateful that the attempt was, on the whole, a failure. Compared with the best of Forster or Lawrence, the novel does not rank very high as a work of art. Huxley has since gone back to his early style, producing novels of ideas like *Brave New World* and *After Many a Summer* (1939), which, like the early Peacockian Huxley, make up for their artistic weaknesses in the exuberance of their ideas and the fertility of their comic invention. Huxley and Orwell were to the generations of the twenties, thirties, and forties what Shaw, Wells, and Chesterton were to the pre-1914 public; comparison with a James is as irrelevant as comparison with a Joyce. They are writers like Wells's Mr Britling, who have 'ideas about everything ... in the utmost profusion', and proceed to pour them out in an unending series of novels, essays, and pamphlets. It is a matter of comparative unimportance for them whether their views are expressed in fictional or non-fictional form: a state of mind incomprehensible to a literary artist like James or Conrad. Whole chunks of Huxley's novels could be printed as separate essays with only a little alteration; the opening of Chesterton's *Napoleon of Notting Hill* (1904) could have developed into an essay with equal plausibility, and some of the essays in *Tremendous Trifles* (1909) could have developed quite easily into stories.

The literary artist in fiction is interested above all in the personal relations of his characters: 'I have never taken *ideas* but always *characters* for my starting point', wrote Turgenev. 'I never attempted to "create a character" if in the first place I had in mind an idea and not a living person.'<sup>12</sup> The writer of the novel or the drama of ideas is apt to conceive of his ideas first, then to invent characters to embody them. We remember *Ann Veronica* as a novel about the condition-of-woman question; it is difficult to recall anything about Ann Veronica Stanley as an individual woman. Wells, like Shaw, however, has something of the Dickensian gift for comic speech; if we do not commonly remember his characters as persons, more often as the

mouthpieces of the author, we do sometimes recall their characteristic idiom.

There is a related difference in real life between the literary artist and the novelist or dramatist of ideas. The latter are apt to be 'characters' in themselves, often public figures known to everyone in rough outline, as Shaw the flamboyant Irishman, Wells the Cockney prophet, Chesterton the rolling English rover, Orwell the Old Etonian tramp ... We do not conjure up such a vision, or such a caricature, of writers like Synge, James, or Forster: their personalities are more private, their art more impersonal. It must be difficult for a writer who is a 'character' in his own right to keep himself out of his work, and the plays of Shaw are as full of Shavian figures as the novels (and biographies) of Chesterton of Chestertonian eccentrics. Comstock in *Keep the Aspidistra Flying* (1936) and Bowling in *Coming Up for Air* (1939) are composite figures, composed in equal parts of the ordinary man as seen by Orwell and Orwell himself; this actually makes them very 'uncomstock',<sup>13</sup> liable to speak as often in their creator's character as in their own.

There is subtle, ironic comedy in the work of such writers as James and Forster. But the kind of laughter that Dickens often provokes - 'Laughter holding both his sides' - is more frequently found in our time in the literature of ideas. It is the kind of laughter provoked by the deliberately absurd and exaggerated: qualities - which can so easily become vices - that we do not associate with the literary artists of our age, but rather with those who, like the early Dickens, think of their best strokes as they go along. The most memorable line in Orwell's *Animal Farm* (1945), for instance - the revised revolutionary slogan: 'All animals are equal but some animals are more equal than others' - was evidently, like Mrs Harris, an inspiration of the moment.

'Heavens, how we laughed!' wrote Murry, reflecting on the impact of Wells on his generation.<sup>14</sup> This seems to me the right attitude to adopt, and many readers of a later generation would echo Murry's words in relation to Huxley or Orwell. One would not claim too much for such writers; the distinction between the literary artist and the journalist still holds true. At the same time, we must not forget the significance of James's failure in the theatre and the relative failure of most of his later 'dramatic' novels; Shaw's 'novel-drama' has a similar limitation as literary art. Yet our literature of ideas as a whole



### PART THREE

has managed to carry on something of the Dickensian tradition of English comedy. In an increasingly cosmopolitan literary world, that is an achievement by no means to be despised.

### NOTES

1. *Henry James and H. G. Wells*, ed. L. Edel and G. N. Ray (1958). For the less extensive correspondence between James and Shaw, see *The Complete Plays of Henry James*, ed. L. Edel (1949).

2. "... he had become the chief representative of English literature upon the European continent. In every bookshop in France you would see, in the early years of this century, the impressive rows of his translated works... I believe it was on the immense sales of his early scientific stories and romances that the success of the great French publishing house, the *Mercur de France*, was mainly founded." (J. M. Murry, *Adelphi*, October 1946; reprinted *Little Reviews Anthology*, 1948, p. 188.)

3. I quote Nelson's advertisement.

4. Meredith is the novelist he actually mentions. See Preface, *Plays Pleasant and Unpleasant* (1898), Vol. I, p. xx.

5. *What Maude Knew* (1898), ch. xxv. Written 1896-7.

6. *The Golden Bowl* (1904), Book iv, ch. vi.

7. The example is from *Arms and the Man* (1894), Act II.

8. To paraphrase Granville-Barker Eliot has made much the same point. Shaw complained that the Folio 'gives us hardly anything but the bare lines'. If only he wrote Shakespeare 'instead of merely writing out his lines' he prepared his plays for publication 'in competition with fiction as elaborat as that of Meredith, 'what a light they would shed... on the history of the sixteenth century' (ref. Note 4 above).

9. See *Autobiography* (1957) reprint in 1 vol. of *A Small Boy and Others* (1913) *Notes of a Son and Brother* (1914), and the unfinished *The Middle Years* (1917).

10. In *The Maturity of Dickens* (1959) Monroe Engel, whose object is 'to insist that Dickens can and should be read with pleasure and no restriction of intelligence by post-Jamesian adults', treats Mrs Gamp simply as 'an example of the callous brutality bred by poverty'.

11. *Unlabeled*, Essay I, note to para. 10: World's Classics edition, p. 26.

12. Two separate quotations here juxtaposed: cited in Miriam Allott, *Novelists on the Novel* (1959), p. 103.

13. The name Comstock is an interesting anticipation of the 'Newspeak' of 1984. The opposite would be 'uncomstock' - a serious crime in Oceania.

14. Ref. Note 2 above, p. 189.

# THE PROSE OF THOUGHT

E. W. F. TOMLIN

*The British Council*

It is a commonplace that the behaviour of language in prose is different from its behaviour in verse; what the difference is may not be so clear. As with many distinctions so fine as to resist precise formulation, an example may instantly illuminate it. The lines are from Yeats's *The Crazy Moon*:

Crazed through much child-bearing,  
The moon is staggering in the sky.

The image, a brilliant one, is to be seized in itself. The thought behind the image enjoys no independent existence, affords no additional satisfaction. Concept and intuition are one, but only in the sense that the distinction has not yet arisen. The language of prose, though not without this inner quality, enjoys at the same time a kind of external existence; it lives for something beyond itself, namely the communication of a meaning or idea. It is a means to an end. In prose we first become aware of the distinction between what is said and what is meant. Hence some of the repetitiveness of prose, and the still greater repetitiveness of conversation. The writer or speaker has to struggle to maintain intelligibility - 'I mean ...', 'What I mean is ...', etc. Moreover, within all rational exposition there exist two elements, mutually opposed and therefore generative of tension. These elements may be called the *dialectical* and the *eristical*. Dialectical exposition is that which elucidates its subject after the manner of dialogue. There is statement, counter-statement, and conclusion; the primary appeal is to reason. Eristic has not merely a different but a usually concealed aim; it seeks not to persuade but to impose; and this it does by deliberate appeal to sentiment and prejudice. As the Oxford Dictionary says, the aim of eristic is not truth but victory. The ideal prose of thought would be that in which the two elements were in equilibrium.

Given this definition, the prose of thought might be expected to find its most perfect embodiment in works of philosophy. Certainly. British philosophy, to take that alone, can claim its masters of the

Even those who remain indifferent or allergic to their thought may find Berkeley, Hume, Mill, and Bradley satisfying and elegant writers. Latterly, we have witnessed a revolution in the idea of philosophy, at least in Britain; and this has affected the way in which philosophy has come to be written. One of the tenets of this new view is that certain philosophical problems, especially those termed metaphysical, arise from intractable elements in language. In other words, our common language is riddled with ambiguity. Artificial languages need to be constructed for the assertion of rational truth. A purely referential or scientific language would presumably be one voided of every ambiguity, every emotive element. There would be no 'style', no verbal opacity; merely the transparent revelation of thought. Moreover, it would be a *fixed* language. What is called the analytical or linguistic movement in philosophy has a double aim. First, it seeks to achieve the purification of language, even to the point of trying to escape from common language altogether. Secondly, it seeks to effect the liquidation of systems of thought held to batten upon linguistic ambiguity. The 'elimination of metaphysics', to use the common phrase, is the consequence of the supposed elimination of a flaw in language.

The reason for referring thus early to a particular philosophical movement is that the theory behind it has exerted considerable influence outside the sphere of philosophy proper. Works on theology, history, literary criticism, law, even political theory and economics, reveal the influence of the linguistic movement. Without the early writings of Russell, G. E. Moore, and Wittgenstein, such influential works as Richards's *Principles of Literary Criticism* and its offspring Empson's *Seven Types of Ambiguity* might have never been written. The same applies to more recent studies such as Frazer's *Economic Thought and Language* (1936), Weldon's *Vocabulary of Politics* (1953), and the recent symposium *New Essays in Philosophical Theology* (1955).

By contrast, we find that, in countries in which the analytic movement has failed to take hold, philosophy and theology are still written in the traditional manner. To take France as an example the philosophical writings of Sartre, Marcel, Merleau-Ponty, and Bachelard, however revolutionary they may be, belong to the orthodox classico-literary tradition. There is a stylistic link between these

writers and Bergson, just as there is a link between Bergson and de Biran. The last great English philosophical writer in this tradition, if we exclude McTaggart, is F. H. Bradley. Much of Bradley's writing can be classed as *belles lettres*; they remain a quarry for the philosopher. Bradley is distinguished from Arnold on the one hand and from his fellow-idealists on the other, by his greater analytical power and his mastery of logic. Yet far fewer people today read *The Principles of Logic* (1883) for instruction than for the spectacle of a sustained and polemical performance.

The decay of idealism, which set in many years before Bradley's death in 1924, is visible no less in the abstraction-ridden prose of Lord Haldane than in the basic poverty of his thought. (It is only fair to say that Haldane disliked the term idealist; but it is not what one likes to be called, it is what one is.) Similarly, the balance and precision of such an early work as Moore's *Principia Ethica* (1903) marks a new departure in philosophy, the birth of a New Realism. The 'philosophy of common sense', which Moore initiated, needed a medium of expression radically different from that of the idealists; it needed plainness, an approximation to common usage. Stripped of its conventional arguments, idealism of the neo-Hegelian variety consisted for the most part of a prolonged hymn to the Absolute. The flowing periods, the incantatory rhythm, the outbursts of lyricism, were all part of a metaphysical ritual. To embrace Reality-as-a-whole, as Bradley sought to do in *Appearance and Reality* (1893), was necessarily to have recourse to the grand manner. Theology in the nineteenth century was likewise nurtured in the neo-Hegelian tradition. Edward Caird was a theologian as well as a philosopher, and so was T. H. Green. Thus the sermon, once capable of inspiring spiritual power, has suffered degeneration as much from its own philosophy as from the absence of trained congregations. In a measure to this extent much modern theology has remained fossilized, its metaphysics long outmoded.<sup>2</sup> Moral exhortation has been reduced to prose, though it may provide material for the poet's imagination and poetry.

By way of illustrating the difference between the grand manner and the prose of thought, it may be illustrated by comparing the grand manner of Bradley with a passage from *Appearance and Reality*:

### PART THREE

Reality is one experience, self-pervading and superior to mere relations. Its character is the opposite of that fabled extreme which is barely mechanical, and it is, in the end, the sole perfect realization of spirit. ... Outside of spirit there is not, and there cannot be, any reality, and the more that anything is spiritual, so much the more is it veritably real.

And further:

Spirit is the unity of the manifold, in which the externality of the manifold has utterly ceased.

Here is Moore (*Principia Ethica*):

My point is that good is a simple notion, just as 'yellow' is a simple notion: that, just as you cannot, by any manner of means, explain to anyone who does not already know it, what yellow is, so you cannot explain what good is. Definitions of the kind that I was asking for, definitions which describe the real nature of the object or notion denoted by a word, and which do not merely tell us what the word is used to mean, are only possible when the object or notion in question is something complex. You can give a definition of a horse, because a horse has many different properties and qualities, all of which you can enumerate. But when you have enumerated them all, when you have reduced a horse to its simplest terms, then you can no longer define those terms. ... And so it is with all objects, not previously known, which we are able to define. They are all complex, all composed of parts, which may themselves, in the first instance, be capable of definition, but which must in the end be reducible to simplest parts, which can no longer be defined. But yellow and good, we say, are not complex, they are notions of that simple kind, out of which definitions are composed and with which the power of further defining ceases.

I have deliberately chosen Bradley, and the least rhetorical example of Bradley, because the selection of a more impassioned piece, such as one taken from Stirling's rarefied work *The Secret of Hegel* (1865), would hardly have been fair. Even so, this brief extract, despite its apparent simplicity, is found on examination to be blurred by imprecise terminology and to be informed with an undercurrent

of rhetoric. 'Self-pervading', which has meaning in Whitehead's philosophy of organism, acts here rather like a plug of emotive cotton-wool. The use of 'mere' to qualify 'relations', like the use of 'fabled' to qualify 'extreme', is a calculated thrust at less lofty philosophies. 'Veritably' as qualifying 'real' is superfluous. Moreover, in the final sentence, the words 'utterly ceased', besides being curiously inept in the context, form a kind of pseudo-eschatological climax; we are in the world of the *Upanishads*. By comparison, the passage of Moore makes a direct appeal to the reader's intelligence; it is turned outwards, following patiently, perhaps a little pedestrianly, the movement of thought. Its peroration, if such it can be called, is addressed not to the emotions but to the reason. This is demonstrated in the use it makes in conclusion of the same verb, 'ceases', as that which terminates the first passage.<sup>3</sup>

Moore is a transitional writer; he remains, for all his commonsense, a stylist. He has balance and decorum. As we know, he exerted no small influence on the aestheticism of Bloomsbury;<sup>4</sup> there is even a stylistic link between him and J. M. Keynes. The effort towards plainness, towards the lowering of temperature to that of cold statement, is best observed in certain early associates (though not always disciples) of Moore. One of the most interesting is Cook Wilson. *Statement and Inference* (1926), a posthumously selected volume of Wilson's lecture and notes, gives the surface-appearance of meticulous, orderly, but essentially 'deflating' exposition. A more powerful and complex thinker, likewise reluctant to publish, was Wittgenstein himself. With the exception of the *Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus*, which he wrote when a war-prisoner, and the *Philosophical Investigations*, which he composed to deter the plagiarists, Wittgenstein's philosophy took the form of a conversational game, an exercise in verbal dialectic. The *Blue Book* and the *Brown Book* consist of *viva voce* transcripts, but even so the transcription probably dissatisfied him. In the exercise of speaking or thinking aloud, he felt he was less liable to deceive himself, less prone to fall into verbal misrepresentation. Consider this example: you tell me to write a few lines, and while I am doing so, you ask, "Do you feel something in your hand while you are writing?" I say "Yes, I have a peculiar feeling" - Can't I say to myself when I write, "I have *this* feeling?" Of course I can say it<sup>5</sup> - and so on. This technique of conversational analysis has been de-

veloped, and indeed carried to an extreme, almost to a *reductio ad absurdum*, by John Wisdom. Here is a typical example:

You remember it was said – to stop the worry it was said – ‘He has the measles germ’ just means ‘He will give all the measles-reactions’. Now this is incorrect. But that again is not the point. The point is that this answer is too soothing. Or rather not too soothing – nothing could be that, everything’s absolutely all right in metaphysics – but it’s too sickly soothing. It’s soothing without requiring of us that act of courage, that flinging away of our battery of crutches, which is required in order to realize that everything’s all right. This phenomenalist answer soothes without demanding this change of heart only by soothing deceptively and saying that this alarming hippopotamus is only a horse that lives in rivers. It’s true that the hippopotamus is quite O.K. and not at all carnivorous and won’t hurt anybody who treats him right – that treats him like a hippopotamus has to be treated; but it’s a mistake to soothe people by telling them he’s a horse because, though that may soothe them for a moment, they will soon find out that to treat him like a horse is not satisfactory.

(*Other Minds*, 1952, p. 73)

The point of interest in this passage (which departs so far from philosophical decorum as to betray faint echoes of Gertrude Stein) is that the search for clarity, the unmasking of ambiguity by trying to catch language unawares at its own game, has transported philosophy from the heights of fine writing to the ground level of common speech and even lower to the ruminations of the subconscious. With its nervous colloquialism – there is only one technical term, ‘phenomenalist’, which seems curiously out of place – it makes use of every device of common language. Yet such writing has significantly failed to pass through the stage of pure referential language. Despite attempts to write philosophy in logical notation, that stage has remained not so much an ideal as a chimera; for such language, purged of every emotive element, could not remain a means of communication. Its very fixity would render it ineffective. In the work of the philosophical analysts, and even in the most rigorous logical positivists, we find not the absence of emotion, not an abandonment of the stylistic screen, but the adoption of studied plainness to convey a particular set of emotions. And these emotions are no less







hical' for being an economic concept, that of Marginalism. Written in prose of sustained elegance, this great book possesses a clarity to be expected of the translator of Dante, though the style recalls that of Newman. There can be few treatises in which successive *sondages* over 800 pages yield such excellence of matter and manner:

We have seen that a man's economic position depends not only on his powers but on his possessions. These possessions may embody the fresh output of current effort, or they may be accumulations, or they may consist in the control, secured by law, of the prime sources of all material wealth. The differentiation between the taxation of earned and unearned income reminds us that there is a vast revenue that someone is receiving though no one is earning it. Thus it is clear that if no one receives less than his current effort is worth, many receive a great deal more. There seems, then, to be nothing intrinsically monstrous in the idea of looking into this matter. If there are sources from which, apparently, anyone or everyone might receive more than he earns, or is worth to others, no proposal need be condemned simply because it contemplates certain classes receiving more than their output of effort is worth, as certain other classes do at present. Proposals for land nationalization, or for the collective control of the instruments of production, are dictated by the belief that we are in possession of a common patrimony which is not being administered in the common interest. But we should distinguish very clearly in our own minds between saying that a person is 'underpaid for his work', and saying that he has a claim to something more than 'mere payment for his work at its worth'.<sup>7</sup>

(Vol. I, p. 341)

In intellectual works, the temptation of the learned expositor, and the gambit of the charlatan, is the adoption of a tone of unrelieved solemnity. The pedant, the legalist, and often the theologian, are perennial butts of satire; their manner of writing, inflated, lays itself open to parody. The test of sincerity may be not so much prolonged high seriousness or fervour, as the occasional ironic aside, the play of wit. These are means to the preservation of balance and sanity. In all serious writing, a certain elevation of tone is to be expected; flippancy and facetiousness are out of place. But we can be serious

without being solemn. The portentousness and aridity of much economic writing, which at one time earned economics the name of the 'dismal science' and Coleridge's epithet 'solemn humbug', may have masked a vagueness about fundamentals, and in the case of those defending the established order a sense of moral uncertainty. Both are characteristic of John Stuart Mill, prior to his mental crisis and before the influence of Harriet Taylor. The muscle-bound prose of the young Mill, modelled on that of his father, contrasts markedly with the fine and flexible medium of the *Essay on Liberty* and the *Autobiography*: a mastery which, save for obvious reasons in the latter work, fell away sadly after the guiding-hand was removed. Today, the revival of economic studies and the liberation of the science from dogmas such as psychological hedonism have been responsible, one may suggest, for an increase in works at once serious and readable. Lord Robbins's well-known essay entitled *The Nature and Significance of Economic Science* (1932) and Mrs Joan Robinson's book *The Economics of Imperfect Competition* (1933), despite their abstract subject-matter, show command of the prose of thought as much by their abundant irony and wit as by their patient analysis of particular doctrines. An example is Mrs Robinson's 'Digression on Rent' (Chapter VIII), a topic not as a rule productive of liveliness. Such qualities belong to effective dialectic; the sarcasm characteristic of the unbalanced or wayward personality belongs to eristic. Given space, one would wish to pursue this investigation in the realm of law and related subjects. Sir Carleton Allen's *Law in the Making* (1927), to take but one example, would be difficult to surpass for sustained lucidity. Indeed, in the work of eminent jurists the prose of thought reaches temporary equilibrium, since it is here that dialectic and eristic enter into partnership.

The course of a man's style can reflect, sometimes with uncanny fidelity, the progress or deterioration of his thought. Whereas the level of writing of such a work as *The Golden Bough* (1890-1912) remains even and steady throughout a succession of volumes, the prose of the last volumes of Arnold Toynbee's *Study of History* (1954) sometimes falls below the level of the earlier part, rallying again in *An Historian's Approach to Religion* (1956). There is a study to be made of the variations in quality, throughout a long and colourful career, of the prose of Earl Russell. In his middle period, this penetrating thinker

seems to have lost his bearings. The result is an excess of eristic writing and some measure of flatness, in contrast to the early superb command of dialectic; whereas some recent essays, notably those contained in the volume *Portraits from Memory* (1957), reveal a balance and clarity born of serene and mature reflection.

To suggest that a change in a man's outlook exerts direct or immediate influence upon his style would be to venture too far; but apart from the fact that ideas, if coherent at all, are *expressed* ideas, the movement of a man's thought can and does thus reflect itself. There are not two things, the thought and the style; there is either one thing, or a mere string of words. Nor is this to say that the *manner* necessarily changes; the prevailing manner may remain the same, but transformed into mannerism or caricature. By way of illustration, we may take five modern writers, differing widely in outlook but sufficiently long-lived to have demonstrably exchanged one mood for another. The early prose of W. R. Inge possessed a cutting-edge which, towards the end, had become blunt and jagged. A writer who admired Inge's prose, if nothing else about him, was Hilaire Belloc. The Belloc of *The Path to Rome*, the early historical studies, and even *The Cruise of the Nona* (1925), wrote eloquent and noble English; the later Belloc often makes heavy and painful reading. Although H. G. Wells was not a professional thinker, he was very much a 'man of ideas'; his early novels and essays have an incandescent quality which lifted their style, otherwise undistinguished, to considerable heights. The Wells of *The World of William Clissold* (1927) was a tired and disillusioned idealist: hence the invective, the sarcasm, the querulous loquacity of much of the later work. Bernard Shaw, after persistent practice, evolved a style so fine and swift that even his sectarian political essays, such as that which he wrote and several times revised for *Fabian Essays* (1889), are still worth reading; but the later plays and their prefaces, for all their violence, are often lifeless.<sup>8</sup> That remarkable philosopher R. G. Collingwood wrote trenchantly about the style appropriate to philosophy, and in such early works as *Speculum Mentis* (1924) and *An Essay on Philosophical Method* (1933) practised what he preached almost to perfection. Some rift or hesitancy in his thought, due not necessarily to increasing ill-health, make his work from the *Essay on Metaphysics* (1940) onwards both uneven and erratic.

In the work of all these men we find the style mirroring, however subtly, a change in outlook. The ageing Inge had come to distrust mysticism; Belloc lost not his faith but the sense of beatitude; Shaw's early social idealism gave way to a cynical admiration for despotism; Collingwood fell into the historicism against which he had issued such persistent warnings. Consistently enough, the five men came to show a preponderance of the cristic outlook over the dialectic; and this is reflected in the inner quality of their prose.

An essay such as the present must not neglect to take into account a form of prose embodying not so much thought as an attitude to thought. This is reflective prose. In this genre many great writers may be included; two obvious examples are Bacon and Sir Thomas Browne. The twentieth century has witnessed the revival of the essay; but if England has no equivalent to Alain, it has produced some distinguished practitioners of this form; the early essays of Middleton Murry and Aldous Huxley may be cited. Our greatest modern essayists are usually men who imagined they were working in a different genre. The prose works of Wyndham Lewis, particularly *The Art of Being Ruled* (1926) and *Time and Western Man* (1927), fall naturally into separate essays, while such pieces as *The Diabolical Principle and The Dithyrambic Spectator* (1931), despite a marked cristic vein, show a vigorous mind wrestling with new ideas and generating an original prose to embody them. Another master of the essay form is Havelock Ellis. Some of the *Little Essays in Love and Virtue* (1922), the two volumes of *Impressions and Comments* (1914-23), and above all *The Dance of Life* (1923) reveal the workings of a fastidious mind, though Ellis could fall into rhetoric.<sup>9</sup> As he confessed in his *Autobiography*, he was essentially a dreamer, viewing life (and sex for that matter) in terms of art; and this quality of reverie, like that of Santayana and Yeats, translated itself into a style of hypnotic charm but often imperfect conceptual realization.<sup>10</sup>

The prose of T. S. Eliot falls naturally into two categories: the reflective and the logical. His studies of individual writers, particularly the Elizabethan poets and Dante, are judicious studies in assessment. To quote Hazlitt, his task is 'to lead the mind into new trains of thought'. But Eliot is likewise a master of logical exposition. Some of the early essays, above all the famous *Tradition and Individual Talent* (1917) or even more recent works such as *Notes towards the Definition*

of Culture (1950) are masterpieces of dialectic. The prose moves forward with almost the movement of thought itself; the result is a succession of illuminations.<sup>11</sup>

\*     \*     \*

A survey of the prose of thought of the twentieth century reveals a certain rhythmic and even cyclic development. In this development we may detect, at each stage, a dialectic and an eristic aspect. This suggests that between the dialectic and eristic elements themselves there operates a higher dialectic. Indeed, without such a higher dialectic, language would constantly be moving towards one or the other extreme and thus failing as a means of communication. The idealist philosophers, taking the Hegelian system as their point of departure, found themselves confronted with the New Realism. Failure to establish communications called out the eristic side of their minds. The analytical school, taking its stand upon empiricism, ended to assume another form of eristic, that directed towards the demolition of speculative systems in general.<sup>12</sup> Having struggled to find a medium of expression transparent to thought, they were finally obliged to re-establish contact with ordinary language. Meanwhile, a more balanced view of philosophy was slowly emerging: A. J. Ayer replaced the eristical prose of his anti-metaphysical *Metaphysics* by the measured urbanity of his *Philosophical Essays* (1954) and *The Problem of Knowledge* (1956), where the subject-matter was such metaphysical problems as Negation, Individuals, On What There Is, etc. Indeed, there was a remarkable and perhaps significant resemblance between the style of the later Ayer and that of McTaggart. It is now only too clear that Analysis, the weapon of every genuine philosopher, has in its metaphysical assumptions, even if it is only that 'reality' can be conceived as divisible into parts.<sup>13</sup> Moreover, analysis is a process which in able hands, must be pushed to the limit; but if it is pushed to the limit, it finds itself grappling with metaphysical problems. Thus despite certain signs to the contrary, we may look forward to something in the nature of a metaphysical revival, though not a return to the old idealism. As far as the writing of philosophy is concerned, this will inevitably bring about a resumption of the 'dialectic' to improvise and create, to treat language as something not fixed and

### PART THREE

rigid but infinitely flexible and full of life',<sup>14</sup> which has always been characteristic of the best expository prose.

### NOTES

1. The *Revue de Métaphysique et Morale* (January-March 1952, p. 96) refers to the British analytical school as 'un mouvement imparfaitement connu en France'.

2. The point is well brought out in the symposium *Metaphysical Beliefs*, edited by Macintyre and Gregor Smith (1957), p. 5.

3. I make no comment here, or elsewhere, on the *validity* of the argument. The reader who is curious on that point should consult W. D. Ross's *The Right and the Good* (1930), p. 88.

4. See *The Bloomsbury Group*, by J. K. Johnstone (1954).

5. Preliminary Studies for the 'Philosophical Investigations': generally known as the *Blue and the Brown Books* (1958), p. 174.

6. 'It was in a spirit of persuasion that most of these essays were written, in an attempt to influence opinion' (p. v).

7. Observe how, in the hands of less objective writers, this passage could have degenerated into eristic.

8. An exception must be made of the Preface to the World's Classics edition of *Back to Methuselah*, written in his tenth decade and a most spirited performance.

9. E.g. *The Dance of Life*, Chapter III, iv.

10. Cp. in the case of Yeats, the prose of *Per Amica Silentia Lunae* (1917).

11. It might be remarked of this writer that some of the most powerful examples of eristic are the Commentaries published in *Criterion*.

12. I. 2. Stuart Hampshire's claim that system-building has been killed 'stone dead' by the 'devastating discoveries of modern linguistic philosophers' (*The Nature of Metaphysics*, edited by D. F. Pears, 1957, p. 25).

13. This is the assumption behind a recent book by P. S. Strawson, which bears the significant title of *Individuals: an essay in descriptive metaphysics* (1959).

14. R. G. Collingwood, *An Essay on Philosophical Method* (1933), 'Philosophy as a branch of Literature', p. 214.

# MR FORSTER'S GOOD INFLUENCE

G. D. KLINGOPULOS

*Senior Lecturer in English, University College of South Wales, Cardiff*

ANYONE familiar with Mr E. M. Forster's writing for a fair number of years – say a quarter of a century or so – is likely to feel some discontent at his gradual transformation into a 'minor classic'. Such a reader may sit down to write his own account of work he has admired for so long, only to find that the 'major' claim, if it is to be advanced at all, cannot be made to apply to more than one or two of the novels. There is even, he soon realizes, something in the stories themselves which discourages and seems to mock the whole business of careful definition and appraisal. Is he, perhaps, guilty of what his author would regard as a radical fault, a lack of 'humour'?

Bring out the enjoyment. If 'the classics' are advertised as something dolorous and astringent, no one will sample them. But if the cultured person, like the late Roger Fry, is obviously having a good time, those who come across him will be tempted to share it and to find out how.

Surely these are sentiments to which the bosom of every 'cultured person' returns an echo? Or is Mr Forster himself, in this rare instance, slightly lacking in humour in his anxiety about 'having a good time'? Questioned about this, Mr Forster is almost too ready to see another point of view. 'Were I professionally committed to evaluation, my attitude would of course be different.' The concession is so large that it makes agreement more remote. Is the distinction between the 'professional' and the general reader a sound one, and is not the ideal critic the ideal reader? There appears to be some confusion here about the extent to which criticism, however 'dolorous and astringent', is prescriptive. One is often in the position of thinking: 'I know A is a much finer work than B but it cannot diminish my enjoyment of B.' Mr Forster may only mean to deprecate the simplemindedness which ignores this possibility, a necessary





is what the 'minor classic' accounts of Mr Forster will tend in time to take less and less into consideration. A later generation may not easily guess that the thought of this writer's mere being, somewhere in England, has seemed at times to many people distinctly reassuring. In a half century which has produced a surfeit of Great Men, bullying, brutality, dogmatism, and noise, Forster has represented an attractive, though not easily imitable, intellectual shrewdness, delicacy, and responsibility. These qualities are not to be explained in terms of Bloomsbury affiliations, and Mr Forster has recently told us that he has never read Moore's *Principia Ethica*. An idealized Cambridge, arising out of an exceptionally lucky imaginative experience of Cambridge,<sup>1</sup> is certainly one source of his charm. He has offered other clues. Jane Austen, obviously, but not, it appears, Meredith, not consciously at any rate. Hardy, as we should expect, is 'my home'. Later there was India which made a deep fusion with some of his earlier attitudes and preoccupations. And the atemporal, timeless impact of the Alexandrian recluse Cavafy. One would have guessed the influence of Butler, but not the order of importance which Mr Forster himself gives him. 'Samuel Butler influenced me a great deal. He, Jane Austen, and Marcel Proust are the three authors who helped me most over my writing, and he did more than either of the other two to help me to look at life the way I do.' If the remark implies a slight overestimation of *The Way of All Flesh*, that too is relevant.

The enumeration of influences, however extended, will not add up to an explanation of the impression we have of Mr Forster. Perhaps no literary influences could compare in importance with the world described in *Marianne Thornton* (1956). He is one of the few modern English writers whose work reveals the process of assimilation and growth of a genuine sensibility, by which we mean something different from style, or technique, or learning. It is as rare among poets as among novelists, for determination and a certain amount of verbal skill often suffice for the production of quite reputable verse. It is not manner, though Mr Forster has written much that is only mannered and Lamb-like. It is a quality of interest, sympathy, and judgement which is no more to be achieved by the activity of the will than the idyllic effect of the best of Hardy's prose and poetry. To acknowledge this genuine, experiencing centre in all Forster's work

is as important as making up one's mind about the variable quality of the writing in each of his books. Because of this principle of life and growth, he has remained consistently responsive to new people, new books, and new lands, without becoming in the least miscellaneous or indiscriminate. He has not become pompous or, like the scientific progressive H. G. Wells, turned gloomily prophetic in old age.

With all these virtues, Mr Forster might well appear a finely representative 'humanist' and 'liberal', and if he had written only criticism and biography, there would have been no need to go beyond these descriptions which he has frequently applied to himself. But Mr Forster is also and primarily a novelist. The special value of novels, when they rise above ordinary brilliance, is that they enable us to dispense with the labels and slogans which are the currency of professional moralists, philosophers, and politicians, so that we may examine human relationships and motives more inwardly and completely in terms of presented experience. Henry James, it may be recalled, considered the value of a novel to depend directly on 'the amount of felt life concerned in producing it', and thus, ultimately, on 'the kind and the degree of the artist's prime sensibility, which is the soil out of which his subject springs'. The value one puts on Mr Forster's 'sensibility' will decide one's attitude to, for example, his early abandonment of the novel, and to the question whether his gifts really fulfilled their promise.

Some of his earliest short stories are related, though in a slight mode, to Hardy's theme of Wessex and the consequences of complete industrialization, and one, *The Machine Stops*, is 'a reaction to one of the earlier heavens of H. G. Wells'. In his earlier work, Mr Forster is precariously poised between forms of resistance and of escape — flight to the Mediterranean world, to 'the other side of the hedge' or to the terminus of the celestial omnibus. Among his short stories *The Story of a Panic* and *The Curate's Friend* are not far removed from R. L. S.'s slight fantasies.

Pan is not dead, but of all the classic hierarchy alone survives in triumph; goat-footed, with a gleeful and an angry look, the type of the shaggy world: and in every wood, if you go with a spirit properly prepared, you shall hear the note of his pipe . . . It is no wonder, with so traitorous a scheme of things,

#### MR FORSTER'S GOOD INFLUENCE

the dark river beneath him and the virgin snows above. His wings were infinite, his youth eternal: the sun was a jewel on his finger as he passed it in benediction over the world ...

As an attempt to define the 'reality', 'vision', and 'inner life' this is disappointing. The poetic style, though partly insured against pathos by its own exaggeration, appears self-conscious and uncertain in intention. The more elaborate pages of descriptive or impressionis-

readable, but one cannot avoid the impression that a subject-matter requiring some of Lawrence's powers is, in the end, only very sketchily dealt with. The moral disintegration of Rickie and the fulfilment of Ansell's prophecy that Rickie's marriage would fail are never sharply focused. The novelist, one feels, should have given the marriage more of a chance. 'Neither by marriage nor by any other device can men insure themselves a vision: and Rickie's had been granted him three years before, when he had seen his wife and a dead man clasped in each other's arms. She was never to be so real to him again.' Why should Agnes not have become real? The novel does not provide a satisfactory answer, and the business about inherited deformity in Rickie and his child is an evasion, a feeble symbol for over-civilized decadence. Agnes is made unsubtly incapable of realizing that the marriage was a failure. 'She moves as one from whom the inner life has been withdrawn.' Is it much more than a phrase, this 'inner life' which is understood by the philosophizing Ansell and unconsciously represented by Stephen, though only guessed at by Rickie? The novel gives the impression of having been written out of convictions, feelings, and prejudices - about public schools, about townspeople and countrymen and Cambridge - which do not hang together convincingly. The equation between the dead Gerold and the living Stephen as seen by the domineering, disappointed, self-ignorant Agnes, is one of many attempts to 'connect' in Forster which are not quite effective. It is certainly tantalizing. There should have been a deep sense of loss and a tragic song of praise and renewal, but the reader has to guess and invent these for himself because what he is offered is sentimentally vague. Stephen should have had some of the symbolic power of Hardy's Giles Winterborne, but in fact he is not much more substantial than the Pan of the stories. Where the 'pattern and rhythm' which Mr Forster aims at in all his novels, and describes in *Aspects of the Novel*, become conspicuous in set passages of evocative prose, we are reminded not of Hardy but of Meredith:

The riot of fair images increased. They invaded his being and lit lamps at unsuspected shrines. Their orchestra commenced in that suburban house where he had to stand aside for the maid to carry in the luncheon. Music flowed past him like a river ... In full unison was love born, flame of the flame, flushing

the dark river beneath him and the virgin snows above. His wings were infinite, his youth eternal: the sun was a jewel on his finger as he passed it in benediction over the world ...

As an attempt to define the 'reality', 'vision', and 'inner life' this is disappointing. The poetic style, though partly insured against bathos by its own exaggeration, appears self-conscious and uncertain in intention. The more elaborate pages of descriptive or impressionistic writing in the earlier novels, especially when they attempt to display the larger significance of events, usually leave a feeling of strain. Only in *A Passage to India* are the descriptive passages deeply evocative, secure, through their real connexion with the novelist's experience, against the incursions of the Comic Spirit or of the little god Pan. The distinction I am making here is not one between 'success' and 'failure'. All the earlier novels remain fresh and individual even after much rereading, and they will probably remain current for a long time to come. But if, despite their deceptive surface lightness, they did not aim at something more than the success of 'light entertainment', they would not require and repay the detailed study which they have received. They have affinities with the novels of Hardy on the one hand, and with those of Lawrence on the other. The affinities are more a matter of differences than of resemblances, yet the differences imply a deeper, though scarcely formulable, connexion with Hardy and Lawrence than the conscious indebtedness to Butler or Proust. If Mr Forster had ever written extensively, as he has at times briefly, about his relation to Hardy and Lawrence he might perhaps have stressed, in the case of Hardy, the ironic contrast of his own birth-place in Melcombe Place, Dorset Square, London, and might have established his own connexion with Lawrence through his sharp awareness that the admirable Victorian liberal outlook 'has lost the basis of gold sovereigns upon which it originally rose, and now hangs over the abyss'. If we cannot claim for Mr Forster the same intensity of moral exploration that characterizes Lawrence, then we must add that it is by no means clear that any modern English writer challenges comparison with Lawrence in this respect.

The continuity between the short stories and the novels is felt most strongly in the two Italian novels, both unquestionable successes. In both, Italian landscape and people enable some English middle-class characters to achieve an increase in freedom and self-know-

ledge, but confirm the prejudices and self-righteousness of others. At the centre of Mr Forster's hostility is genteel Sawston with its 'culture' and 'principles' and its fear of vulgarity that seems almost a negation of life. Mr Forster does not idealize his Italians to make his point. What he sees in them appears objective and real. Harriet Herriton is blind to this reality. Miss Abbott is transformed by it. The expedition from Sawston to recover the dead Englishwoman's child from its unacceptable Italian father is confused by the living significance of the infant.

She had thought so much about this baby, of its welfare, its soul, its morals, its probable defects. But, like most unmarried people she had only thought of it as a word – just as the healthy man only thinks of the word death, not death itself. The real thing, lying asleep on a dirty rug, disconcerted her. It did not stand for a principle any longer. It was so much flesh and blood, so many inches and ounces of life – a glorious and unquestionable fact, which a man and another woman had given to the world ... And this was the machine on which she and Mrs Herriton and Philip and Harriet had for the last month been exercising their various ideals – had determined that in time it should move this way or that way, should accomplish this and not that. It was to be Low Church, it was to be high-principled, it was to be tactful, gentlemanly, artistic – excellent things all. Yet now that she saw this baby, lying asleep on a dirty rug, she had a great disposition not to dictate one of them, and to exert no more influence than there may be in a kiss or in the vaguest of heartfelt prayers.

When Harriet succeeded in stealing the baby, she 'dandled the bundle laboriously, like some bony prophetess'. The child is accidentally killed. This violence, like the scuffle which hurries Fielding's departure from the Chandrapore club, reminds us sharply that, though the mode is comedy, Mr Forster is very much in earnest about his subject-matter. Later, this discontent with middle-class manners deepens into a recognition of the difficulty of all good relationship, especially without the mediation of a common religious tradition and vocabulary. Mr Forster's clergymen are all facets of Sawston worldliness and self-importance. He has not attempted to describe religious vocation from the inside – partly because (and not only for Victorian liberals) the 'inside' of modern religious experience tends to be out-





'enjoying' the novel. This is also the case in the more substantial work *Howards End*. Here Mr Forster is again concerned with the interaction of cultural levels, and he returns to the attempt made in *The Longest Journey* to analyse and describe the drift of modern English life as it had been transformed by a century of industrialization and imperial expansion. The novel shows the harmonizing, genial, and intensely patriotic sides of the novelist at odds with his radicalism. The date was 1910 and the subject, as Mr Forster has recently put it, 'a hunt for a home'. It is the equivalent in his work of Hardy's *Return of the Native* and is similarly oversimplified. The hunt is genuine enough, but one may well doubt whether the home was ever found. Nevertheless the novel was in some ways a pioneer work and has helped to modify attitudes and educate manners during the last half century. Even *The Times* now prints leading articles weightily agreeing that the British Empire was undermined by bad manners. A future Gibbon

will have to discover just what part was played in the decline by the behaviour of Englishmen - not to mention Englishwomen - who lived their lives in the East. How much are the angry young men of Singapore a product of an exclusive transplanted Wimbledon?

(*The Times*, 16 September 1959)

The question can be put so calmly largely because *A Passage to India* (1924) made it possible. This major work is, of course, much more than a comment on colonialism, but it is worth saying that one's impression of the courage needed to write it is no less strong now than it was a quarter of a century ago. Democracy has its frivolous side, and questions of principle and moral responsibility for unrepresented populations overseas do not decide parliamentary elections. Mr Forster has done more to educate large numbers of the electorate ('two cheers for democracy') than any English writer of the twentieth century. Because *A Passage to India* has been a best selling paperback for decades, discussion can dispense with political watchwords and slogans and go straight to the heart of the matter. Written after a silence of fourteen years, the book reveals none of the old Meredithian associations, and the simple pieties of Thomas Hardy have also been outgrown. Seen in relation to Mr Forster's work as a whole, it represents as significant a process of development



# VIRGINIA WOOLF: THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF FICTION

FRANK W. BRADBROOK

*Lecturer in English, the University College of North Wales, Bangor*

THERE are probably no writers whom it is more difficult to discuss with a proper critical disinterestedness than those that one first admired some twenty years ago, as a student. Their influence, however modified by what has been written since, and by one's subsequent reading and experience, remains a deep and permanent one. Moreover, the writers whom one admired in the late thirties have not been outmoded in the sense that H. G. Wells, John Galsworthy, and Arnold Bennett were for Virginia Woolf when she started writing at the beginning of the First World War. The problem of the relationship between the generations was for her a matter of breaking free from an inadequate technique and a limited vision. Her own achievement may appear now to be a more limited one than it did when her novels were first read, and her lasting contribution to fiction may be reduced to a single novel, *To the Lighthouse*. Yet she had imagination, great sensitiveness, delicacy, wit, and the infinite capacity for taking pains of genius. She, at least, did not curb the spirit, or erect barriers that her followers have had to break down. If one thinks of her limitations, it is only compared with the greatest of her predecessors, Jane Austen and George Eliot, two artists whom she admired and whose work as a whole gives one a sense of achievement and triumph beside which the writings of the twentieth-century novelist inevitably perhaps, appear, for all the flashes of brilliance, curiously fragmentary and inconclusive.

'That fiction is a lady, and a lady who has somehow got herself into trouble, is a thought that must often have struck her admirers', Virginia Woolf remarks at the beginning of a review of E. M. Forster's *Aspects of the Novel*. There now exist half a dozen books containing essays on the art of fiction and kindred subjects by Virginia Woolf herself. Here one can see the artist working out her technical problems. The essay 'Modern Fiction' in *The Common*

# VIRGINIA WOOLF: THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF FICTION

FRANK W. BRADBROOK

*Lecturer in English, the University College of North Wales, Bangor*

THERE are probably no writers whom it is more difficult to discuss with a proper critical disinterestedness than those that one first admired some twenty years ago, as a student. Their influence, however modified by what has been written since, and by one's subsequent reading and experience, remains a deep and permanent one. Moreover, the writers whom one admired in the late thirties have not been outmoded in the sense that H. G. Wells, John Galsworthy, and Arnold Bennett were for Virginia Woolf when she started writing at the beginning of the First World War. The problem of the relationship between the generations was for her a matter of breaking free from an inadequate technique and a limited vision. Her own achievement may appear now to be a more limited one than it did when her novels were first read, and her lasting contribution to fiction may be reduced to a single novel, *To the Lighthouse*. Yet she had imagination, great sensitiveness, delicacy, wit, and the infinite capacity for taking pains of genius. She, at least, did not curb the spirit, or erect barriers that her followers have had to break down. If one thinks of her limitations, it is only compared with the greatest of her predecessors, Jane Austen and George Eliot, two artists whom she admired and whose work as a whole gives one a sense of achievement and triumph beside which the writings of the twentieth-century novelist, inevitably perhaps, appear, for all the flashes of brilliance, curiously fragmentary and inconclusive.

"That fiction is a lady, and a lady who has somehow got herself into trouble, is a thought that must often have struck her admirers", Virginia Woolf remarks at the beginning of a review of E. M. Forster's *Aspects of the Novel*. There now exist half a dozen books containing essays on the art of fiction and kindred subjects by Virginia Woolf herself. Here one can see the artist working out her technical problems. The essay 'Modern Fiction' in *The Common*

# VIRGINIA WOOLF: THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF FICTION

FRANK W. BRADBROOK

*Lecturer in English, the University College of North Wales, Bangor*

THERE are probably no writers whom it is more difficult to discuss with a proper critical disinterestedness than those that one first admired some twenty years ago, as a student. Their influence, however modified by what has been written since, and by one's subsequent reading and experience, remains a deep and permanent one. Moreover, the writers whom one admired in the late thirties have not been outmoded in the sense that H. G. Wells, John Galsworthy, and Arnold Bennett were for Virginia Woolf when she started writing at the beginning of the First World War. The problem of the relationship between the generations was for her a matter of breaking free from an inadequate technique and a limited vision. Her own achievement may appear now to be a more limited one than it did when her novels were first read, and her lasting contribution to fiction may be reduced to a single novel, *To the Lighthouse*. Yet she had imagination, great sensitiveness, delicacy, wit, and the infinite capacity for taking pains of genius. She, at least, did not curb the spirit, or erect barriers that her followers have had to break down. If one thinks of her limitations, it is only compared with the greatest of her predecessors, Jane Austen and George Eliot, two artists whom she admired and whose work as a whole gives one a sense of achievement and triumph beside which the writings of the twentieth-century novelist, inevitably perhaps, appear, for all the flashes of brilliance, curiously fragmentary and inconclusive.

'That fiction is a lady, and a lady who has somehow got herself into trouble, is a thought that must often have struck her admirers', Virginia Woolf remarks at the beginning of a review of E. M. Forster's *Aspects of the Novel*. There now exist half a dozen books containing essays on the art of fiction and kindred subjects by Virginia Woolf herself. Here one can see the artist working out her technical problems. The essay 'Modern Fiction' in *The Common*

### PART THREE

consciousness? ... Perhaps life is a mystery, not a muddle; they could not tell.'

The Hindu ceremonies with which the novel concludes strike one as the acceptance and sanctification of muddle which appears more tolerable and nearer the truth than more orderly religious systems and patterns of belief. The effect of this conclusion to the elaborate tapestry of the book is positive and far from depressing. And it is naïve to see evidence of a lack of moral vitality in the last words of a novel which, with few reservations, is an impressive structure of carefully pondered experience. 'Love in public affairs does not work', Mr Forster has written in an essay on 'Tolerance'. He is not the first novelist to distrust 'good intentions'. The balance of antipathy and sympathy in *A Passage to India* still seems, after the violence and change of the intervening years, the undistorted response of a mind of rare courage, delicacy, and integrity, and it plays an important part in the total music of this major work.

### NOTES

1. It is characteristic of Mr Forster that he should conclude his biography of Goldsworthy Lowes Dickenson (1934) in this way: 'Mephistopheles, who should inhabit a cranny in every biography, puts his head out at this point, and asks me to set all personal feelings aside and state objectively why a memoir of Goldsworthy Lowes Dickenson need be written ... The case for Mephistopheles would appear to be watertight, and a biography of my friend and master uncalled for.'

2. See my essay in *Essays in Criticism*, Vol. VIII, No. 2.

# VIRGINIA WOOLF: THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF FICTION

FRANK W. BRADBROOK

*Lecturer in English, the University College of North Wales, Bangor*

THERE are probably no writers whom it is more difficult to discuss with a proper critical disinterestedness than those that one first admired some twenty years ago, as a student. Their influence, however modified by what has been written since, and by one's subsequent reading and experience, remains a deep and permanent one. Moreover, the writers whom one admired in the late thirties have not been outmoded in the sense that H. G. Wells, John Galsworthy, and Arnold Bennett were for Virginia Woolf when she started writing at the beginning of the First World War. The problem of the relationship between the generations was for her a matter of breaking free from an inadequate technique and a limited vision. Her own achievement may appear now to be a more limited one than it did when her novels were first read, and her lasting contribution to fiction may be reduced to a single novel, *To the Lighthouse*. Yet she had imagination, great sensitiveness, delicacy, wit, and the infinite capacity for taking pains of genius. She, at least, did not curb the spirit, or erect barriers that her followers have had to break down. If one thinks of her limitations, it is only compared with the greatest of her predecessors, Jane Austen and George Eliot, two artists whom she admired and whose work as a whole gives one a sense of achievement and triumph beside which the writings of the twentieth-century novelist, inevitably perhaps, appear, for all the flashes of brilliance, curiously fragmentary and inconclusive.

'That fiction is a lady, and a lady who has somehow got herself into trouble, is a thought that must often have struck her admirers', Virginia Woolf remarks at the beginning of a review of E. M. Forster's *Aspects of the Novel*. There now exist half a dozen books containing essays on the art of fiction and kindred subjects by Virginia Woolf herself. Here one can see the artist working out her technical problems. The essay 'Modern Fiction' in *The Common*

### PART THREE

consciousness? ... Perhaps life is a mystery, not a muddle; they could not tell.

The Hindu ceremonies with which the novel concludes strike one as the acceptance and sanctification of muddle which appears more tolerable and nearer the truth than more orderly religious systems and patterns of belief. The effect of this conclusion to the elaborate tapestry of the book is positive and far from depressing. And it is naïve to see evidence of a lack of moral vitality in the last words of a novel which, with few reservations, is an impressive structure of carefully pondered experience. 'Love in public affairs does not work' Mr Forster has written in an essay on Tolerance. He is not the first novelist to distrust 'good intentions'. The balance of antipathy and sympathy in *A Passage to India* still seems, after the violence and change of the intervening years, the undistorted response of a mind of rare courage, delicacy, and integrity, and it plays an important part in the total music of this major work.

### NOTES

1. It is characteristic of Mr Forster that he should conclude his biography of Goldsworthy Lowes Dickenson (1934) in this way: 'Mephistopheles, who should inhabit a cranny in every biography, puts his head out at this point, and asks me to set all personal feelings aside and state objectively why a memoir of Goldsworthy Lowes Dickenson need be written ... The case for Mephistopheles would appear to be watertight, and a biography of my friend and master uncalled for.'
2. See my essay in *Essays in Criticism*, Vol. VIII, No. 2.





### PART THREE

the greater impersonality of women's lives will encourage the poetic spirit, and it is in poetry that women's fiction is still weakest. It will lead them to be less absorbed in facts and no longer content to record with astonishing acuteness the minute details which fall under their own observation. They will look beyond the personal and political relationships to the wider questions which the poet tries to solve – of our destiny and the meaning of life.

(*Granite and Rainbow*)

This 'poetic spirit', together with the concern with the meaning of destiny and life, had been characteristic of Virginia Woolf's own fiction from the first. 'A method essentially poetic and apparently trifling has been applied to fiction', as E. M. Forster has noted (*Two Cheers for Democracy*).

Fiction, for Virginia Woolf, was not a 'criticism of life' in any Arnoldian sense, but rather a re-creation of the complexities of experience. Just as life was a most subtle and complicated succession of experiences, so fiction must be infinitely adaptable and supple in order to catch the 'tones', the light and shade of experience. The art of the novelist was similar to that of the painter, and painting for Virginia Woolf did not mean the Dutch School, who were admired by George Eliot, but Roger Fry and the Post-Impressionists, Van Gogh rather than the Van Eycks, Cézanne, Gauguin, and Matisse. There were various 'phases' of fiction and different types of novelists, equivalent to the different schools of painting, and the task of the modern novelist was to make use of whatever was of value in the past. The truth-tellers, the romantics, the character-mongers and comedians, the psychologists, the satirists and fantasists, and the poets, were like the different paints on the palette. How did one combine their various methods to produce the perfect picture?

Experience is a flux, and the novelist must communicate it. Yet there must be some sort of order in the art by means of which it is presented:

For the most characteristic qualities of the novel – that it registers the slow growth and development of feeling, that it follows many lives and traces their unions and fortunes over a long stretch of time – are the very qualities that are most incompatible with design and order. It is the gift of style, ar-

range, construction to put us at a distance from the special life and obliterate its features; while it is the gift of the novel to bring us into close touch with life. The two powers fight if they are brought into combination. The most complete novelist must be the novelist who can balance the two powers so that the one enhances the other.

(*Granite and Rainbow*)

Virginia Woolf's values are those of Bloomsbury, the group of writers and artists that included, in addition to Roger Fry, Vanessa and Clive Bell, Duncan Grant, Lytton Strachey, Leonard Woolf, J. M. Keynes, Desmond MacCarthy, and (rather on the fringe) E. M. Forster.<sup>5</sup> The danger of the clique spirit in the modern literary world does not require stressing to anyone who is sufficiently alert and informed to see what goes on, and the Bloomsbury group suffered like any other school of writers from a tendency towards mutual admiration that was merely a form of narcissism. There were also certain blind-spots. Virginia Woolf refers to 'the chants of the worshippers at the shrine of Lawrence', and then, in the following essay, proceeds to chant at the shrine of Roger Fry, who is praised for his honesty and integrity, qualities that he may have owed in part to his Quaker blood. He also went to Cambridge (King's College) and is meant to represent the Cambridge mind at its best. While giving a sympathetic account of *Sons and Lovers*, Virginia Woolf asserts that D. H. Lawrence

is not a member, like Proust, of a settled and civilized society. He is anxious to leave his own class and to enter another. He believes that the middle class possess what he does not possess... the fact that he, like Paul, was a miner's son, and that he disliked his conditions, gave him a different approach to writing from those who have a settled station and enjoy circumstances which allow them to forget what those circumstances are.

(*The Moment*)

The Lawrence of Virginia Woolf's imagination is not interested in literature, the past, or the present except in so far as it affects the future, or in human psychology, and in comparison with Proust again, he is said to have no tradition behind him. He is lacking in style, civilization, and a sense of beauty.<sup>6</sup> When discussing *A Passage to India*, Virginia Woolf can be more detached because she is talking about the writings



rangement, construction to put us at a distance from the special life and obliterate its features; while it is the gift of the novel to bring us into close touch with life. The two powers fight if they are brought into combination. The most complete novelist must be the novelist who can balance the two powers so that the one enhances the other.

(*Granite and Rainbow*)

Virginia Woolf's values are those of Bloomsbury, the group of writers and artists that included, in addition to Roger Fry, Vanessa and Clive Bell, Duncan Grant, Lytton Strachey, Leonard Woolf, J. M. Keynes, Desmond MacCarthy, and (rather on the fringe) E. M. Forster.<sup>5</sup> The danger of the clique spirit in the modern literary world does not require stressing to anyone who is sufficiently alert and informed to see what goes on, and the Bloomsbury group suffered like any other school of writers from a tendency towards mutual admiration that was merely a form of narcissism. There were also certain blind-spots. Virginia Woolf refers to 'the chants of the worshippers at the shrine of Lawrence', and then, in the following essay, proceeds to chant at the shrine of Roger Fry, who is praised for his honesty and integrity, qualities that he may have owed in part to his Quaker blood. He also went to Cambridge (King's College) and is meant to represent the Cambridge mind at its best. While giving a sympathetic account of *Sons and Lovers*, Virginia Woolf asserts that D. H. Lawrence

is not a member, like Proust, of a settled and civilized society. He is anxious to leave his own class and to enter another. He believes that the middle class possess what he does not possess... the fact that he, like Paul, was a miner's son, and that he disliked his conditions, gave him a different approach to writing from those who have a settled station and enjoy circumstances which allow them to forget what those circumstances are.

(*The Moment*)

The Lawrence of Virginia Woolf's imagination is not interested in literature, the past, or the present except in so far as it affects the future, or in human psychology, and in comparison with Proust again, he is said to have no tradition behind him. He is lacking in style, civilization, and a sense of beauty.<sup>6</sup> When discussing *A Passage to India*, Virginia Woolf can be more detached because she is talking about the writings

of someone with whom she is acquainted and can even be ironical about the place that provided the group with its standards - 'it is relief for a time, to be beyond the influence of Cambridge' (*The Death of the Moth*). In that 'for a time' there is an unconscious irony.

To pass from Virginia Woolf's theories, ideas, and criticism to the study of her practice as a novelist is to realize how much more conventional she was than she imagined. *The Voyage Out* (1915), her first novel, is quite traditional in form, and the best moments occur when she is being autobiographical. In chapter xii, Rachel visits the room of Mr Ambrose, her uncle, and one is reminded of the education that Virginia Woolf's father, Leslie Stephen, gave her: 'to read what one liked because one liked it, never to pretend to admire what one did not - that was his only lesson in the art of reading. To write in the fewest possible words, as clearly as possible, exactly what one meant - that was his only lesson in the art of writing' (*The Captain's Death Bed*). There, is the essential strength of Virginia Woolf, the tradition that was to produce Mr Ramsay of *To the Lighthouse*. She did not mean to be prejudiced against the poor, but her intense intellectual life was accompanied by a vein of snobbery, however much she tried to sympathize. George Eliot, the granddaughter of a carpenter, is described as 'raising herself with groans and struggle from the intolerable boredom of petty provincial society'. She was lacking in charm: 'she had none of those eccentricities and inequalities

of temper which give to many artists the endearing simplicity of children' (*The Common Reader, First Series*). George Eliot might well reply that the simplicity of children is not always endearing and that it is the duty of artists to be adult in their attitudes and ideas. When, in *The Voyage Out*, a character called Hewet says 'I want to write a novel about Silence, the things people don't say. But the difficulty is immense' (*The Voyage Out*), one feels that Virginia Woolf is merely being clever in a Bloomsbury kind of way.<sup>7</sup> George Eliot and D. H. Lawrence could have told her that Bunyan had already done this ('Thus came *Faithful* to his end,' after the trial at Vanity Fair) as had Jane Austen, too ('What did she say? - just what she ought, of course. A lady always does,' describing Emma's response to Mr Knightley's proposal). The world of Virginia Woolf's characters is supposed to be a sophisticated and cosmopolitan one, yet it, too, has its provincial aspects. Evelyn, in *The Voyage Out*, is going to

found a club '— a club for doing things . . . It was brains that were needed . . . of course, they would want a room . . . in Bloomsbury preferably'. There, the essential naïveté of Virginia Woolf manifests itself.

*Night and Day* (1919), like *The Voyage Out*, is a conventional, realistic story, showing many of the characteristics that Virginia Woolf ridiculed in her criticism of the English realistic novelists. Early in the novel, one is introduced to Katherine Hilbery, 'belonging to one of the most distinguished families in England . . . when they were not lighthouses firmly based on rock for the guidance of their generation, they were steady, serviceable candles, illuminating the ordinary chambers of life' (*Night and Day*). She typifies Bloomsbury humanity as well as Bloomsbury snobbery. 'Not to care' is the unforgivable sin. Ralph Denham, whom she eventually marries, is metaphorically united with her towards the end of the novel, and one sees here the beginnings of the later, more subtle use of symbolism and poetic technique: 'an odd image came to his mind of a lighthouse besieged by the flying bodies of lost birds, who were dashed, senseless, by the gale, against the glass. He had a strange sensation that he was both lighthouse and bird; he was steadfast and brilliant; and at the same time he was whirled with all other things, senseless against the glass' (*Night and Day*). In Mrs Hilbery's reverie and its conclusion in the statement that 'love is our faith', which is compared by her daughter to the 'breaking of waves solemnly in order upon the vast shore that she gazed upon' (*Night and Day*), there is a foreshadowing of the Mrs Ramsay-Lily Briscoe relationship in *To the Lighthouse*.

*Jacob's Room* (1922) marks a further development in this poetic method. There are flashes here, too, of that almost vicious, satirical wit, usually aimed at men, and their attempts to think or to keep up the appearance of thinking. Even Cambridge is not lacking in insensitive characters: at George Plumley's luncheon at 'Waverley', on the road to Girton, there were 'on the table serious sixpenny weeklies written by pale men in muddy boots — the weekly creak and screech of brains rinsed in cold water and wrung dry — melancholy papers'. The real culture of Cambridge, however, 'the light of Cambridge', is implicitly opposed to the provincial prudishness of Professor Bulteel of Leeds, who 'had issued an edition of Wycherley without stating that he had left out . . . several indecent words and

of someone with whom she is acquainted, and can even be ironical about the place that provided the group with its standards - 'it is a relief for a time, to be beyond the influence of Cambridge' (*The Death of the Moth*). In that 'for a time' there is an unconscious irony.

To pass from Virginia Woolf's theories, ideas, and criticism to the study of her practice as a novelist is to realize how much more conventional she was than she imagined. *The Voyage Out* (1915), her first novel, is quite traditional in form, and the best moments occur when she is being autobiographical. In chapter xii, Rachel visits the room of Mr Ambrose, her uncle, and one is reminded of the education that Virginia Woolf's father, Leslie Stephen, gave her: 'to read what one liked because one liked it, never to pretend to admire what one did not - that was his only lesson in the art of reading. To write in the fewest possible words, as clearly as possible, exactly what one meant - that was his only lesson in the art of writing' (*The Captain's Death Bed*). There, is the essential strength of Virginia Woolf, the tradition that was to produce Mr Ramsay of *To the Lighthouse*. She did not mean to be prejudiced against the poor, but her intense intellectual life was accompanied by a vein of snobbery, however much she tried to sympathize. George Eliot, the granddaughter of a carpenter, is described as 'raising herself with groans and struggles from the intolerable boredom of petty provincial society'. She was lacking in charm: 'she had none of those eccentricities and inequalities of temper which give to many artists the endearing simplicity of children' (*The Common Reader, First Series*). George Eliot might well reply that the simplicity of children is not always endearing, and that it is the duty of artists to be adult in their attitudes and ideas. When, in *The Voyage Out*, a character called Hewet says 'I want to write a novel about Silence, the things people don't say. But the difficulty is immense' (*The Voyage Out*), one feels that Virginia Woolf is merely being clever in a Bloomsbury kind of way.<sup>7</sup> George Eliot and D. H. Lawrence could have told her that Bunyan had already done this ('Thus came *Faithful* to his end,' after the trial at Vanity Fair) as had Jane Austen, too ('What did she say? - Just what she ought, of course. A lady always does,' describing Emma's response to Mr Knightley's proposal). The world of Virginia Woolf's characters is supposed to be a sophisticated and cosmopolitan one, yet it, too, has its provincial aspects. Evelyn, in *The Voyage Out*, is going to



found a club '— a club for doing things . . . It was brains that were needed . . . of course, they would want a room . . . in Bloomsbury preferably'. There, the essential naiveté of Virginia Woolf manifests itself.

*Night and Day* (1919), like *The Voyage Out*, is a conventional, realistic story, showing many of the characteristics that Virginia Woolf ridiculed in her criticism of the English realistic novelists. Early in the novel, one is introduced to Katherine Hilbery, 'belonging to one of the most distinguished families in England . . . when they were not lighthouses firmly based on rock for the guidance of their generation, they were steady, serviceable candles, illuminating the ordinary chambers of life' (*Night and Day*). She typifies Bloomsbury humanity as well as Bloomsbury snobbery. 'Not to care' is the unforgivable sin. Ralph Denham, whom she eventually marries, is metaphorically united with her towards the end of the novel, and one sees here the beginnings of the later, more subtle use of symbolism and poetic technique: 'an odd image came to his mind of a lighthouse besieged by the flying bodies of lost birds, who were dashed senseless, by the gale, against the glass. He had a strange sensation that he was both lighthouse and bird; he was steadfast and brilliant; and at the same time he was whirled with all other things, senseless against the glass' (*Night and Day*). In Mrs Hilbery's reverie and its conclusion in the statement that 'love is our faith', which is compared by her daughter to the 'breaking of waves solemnly in order upon the vast shore that she gazed upon' (*Night and Day*), there is a foreshadowing of the Mrs Ramsay-Lily Briscoe relationship in *To the Lighthouse*.

*Jacob's Room* (1922) marks a further development in this poetic method. There are flashes here, too, of that almost vicious, critical wit, usually aimed at men, and their attempts to think or to keep up the appearance of thinking. Even Cambridge is not lacking in insensitive characters: at George Plumley's luncheon at 'Waverley', on the road to Girton, there were 'on the table serious university weeklies written by pale men in muddy boots — the weekly crack and screech of brains rinsed in cold water and wrung dry — melancholy papers'. The real culture of Cambridge, however, 'the style of Cambridge', is implicitly opposed to the provincial provincialism of Professor Bulreel of Leeds, who 'had issued an edition of *Waverley* without stating that he had left out . . . several incidents'.

some indecent phrases'. The astringent wit of Virginia Woolf, combined with the quite open snobbery, as in the reference to Soho, and so again into the dark, passing a girl here for sale, or there an old woman with only matches to offer', derives from Jane Austen, the Jane Austen of *The Letters*, *Northanger Abbey*, and the ironical observer of the fate with which Jane Fairfax is threatened in *Emma*, though the subject-matter is that of Defoe (cp. the end of the essay on Defoe in *The Common Reader, First Series*). Virginia Woolf also shares with Jane Austen a sense of the importance of the apparent trivialities of life: 'it's not catastrophes, murders, deaths, diseases, that age and kill us; it's the way people look and laugh, and run up the steps of omnibuses' (*Jacob's Room*).

The use of imagery to connect different moments in the novel, and to form patterns apart from character and plot, becomes more confident and consistent in *Mrs Dalloway* (1925). Images, in Virginia Woolf's novels, are even carried over from one book to another. 'Darkness drops like a knife over Greece', in *Jacob's Room*; Mrs Dalloway 'sliced like a knife through everything'; again in *Mrs Dalloway*, Peter Walsh is frequently described as playing with a knife, and it is connected with his habit of 'making one feel, too, frivolous; empty-minded; a mere silly chatterbox'. The image of a knife is also used in *To the Lighthouse*, in connexion with Mr Ramsay, to describe the ruthlessness and insensitiveness of the male intellect, as opposed to the feminine imagination of Mrs Ramsay. (There is, perhaps, too, a suggestion here of Time's 'scythe and crooked knife', one of the themes of Shakespeare's sonnets.)<sup>8</sup> The use of the background of the rhythm of the waves when evoking those isolated, significant moments in experience with which Virginia Woolf is so concerned, appears in *Mrs Dalloway*, looking forward to the extended use of this image in *To the Lighthouse* and *The Waves*. A mood of serenity and resignation is usually conveyed by this image (though sometimes the thundering of the waves can suggest terror). The hypnotic rhythms of the falling waves induce the appropriate response in Mrs Dalloway: "Fear no more," says the heart, committing its burden to some sea, which sighs collectively for all sorrows, and renews, begins, collects, lets fall". One cannot help feeling that there is a certain complacency in the novel here, and it appears again in the character of Peter Walsh who, growing old, 'has gained - at



That, unfortunately, is what appears to have happened to Virginia Woolf herself. *The Waves* (1931) deals with the theme of the progress of time, the days, months, and seasons following each other like the waves and ending, for the individual, with death. There are beautiful passages, such as Bernard's final monologue, with which the novel concludes, but no sense of a larger pattern or rhythm. *The Years* (1937) contains, near the beginning, a flash of the old satirical wit in the description of the hypocrisy of Colonel Pargiter and the death, after a painful, protracted illness, of his wife. The novel, as a whole, shows signs of tiredness, and is dull and monotonous. It ends with the sun rising on a new day, 'and the sky above the houses wore an air of extraordinary beauty, simplicity and peace'. It is a conventional, not a strenuously achieved ending, like the serenity of the conclusion of *To the Lighthouse*. There is a reference to 'the heart of darkness', the title of Conrad's tale, and it also appears at the end of the posthumously published *Between the Acts* (1941). The heart had gone out of Virginia Woolf's work.

That her genius had burned itself out is confirmed by the six previously unpublished short stories at the end of *A Haunted House* (1944). Her short stories, despite some brilliancies, tend to confirm the sense of a minor talent. Yet if she is not among the very greatest of English novelists, her fiction leaves one with the impression of a delicate and subtle artist in words, who upheld aesthetic and spiritual values in a brutal, materialistic age. Mr E. M. Forster reminds one of the permanent significance of her work:

Order. Justice. Truth. She cared for these abstractions, and tried to express them through symbols ... The epitaph of such an artist cannot be written by the vulgar-minded or by the lugubrious ... She triumphed over what are primly called 'difficulties', and she also triumphed in the positive sense: she brought in the spoils. And sometimes it is as a row of little silver cups that I see her work gleaming. 'These trophies,' the inscription runs, 'were won by the mind from matter, its enemy and its friend.'

(*Two Cheers for Democracy*)

To these eloquent words one may, perhaps, add the comment that Virginia Woolf had not only the sensitiveness, poetry, and imagina-

## VIRGINIA WOOLF: THEORY AND PRACTICE OF FICTION

tion of Mrs Ramsay. She retained and exemplified the integrity and heroism of Mr Ramsay and of Leslie Stephen, her father.

### NOTES

1. The quotations from the works of Virginia Woolf are taken from the uniform edition, published by the Hogarth Press.
2. See D. S. Savage, *The Withered Branch* (1950), quoted by Arnold Kettle in *An Introduction to the English Novel*, Vol. II, p. 105.
3. For the influence of Turgenev on Virginia Woolf, see Gilbert Phelps, *The Russian Novel in English Fiction*, pp. 132-7.
4. See the review by Q. D. Leavis in *Scrutiny*, Vol. VII, No. 2 (September 1938).
5. See Frank Swinnerton, *The Georgian Literary Scene* (Everyman's Library), ch. XIII, and J. K. Johnstone, *The Bloomsbury Group*.
6. Dr Leavis might find in Virginia Woolf's notes on D. H. Lawrence an interesting footnote to his accounts of the social prejudice and intellectual antagonism shown by J. M. Keynes and his circle and others.
7. Perhaps Virginia Woolf is indebted for the idea to Flaubert: 'what I should like to do is to write a book about nothing, a book with no reference to anything outside itself, which would stand on its own by the inner strength of its style, just as the earth holds itself without support in space, a book which would have hardly any subject, or at any rate one that is barely perceptible, if that were possible'. Letter to Louise Colet (16 January 1852), quoted by Miriam Allott, *Novelists on the Novel*, p. 242.
8. Cp. Nos. 95 and 100.
9. J. W. Graham, in 'A Negative Note on Bergson and Virginia Woolf' (*Essays in Criticism* VI, No. 1, January 1956), argues convincingly that the influence of Bergson on Virginia Woolf was both more general and limited than has frequently been assumed.
10. E.g. Peter and Margaret Havard-Williams: 'Mystical Experience in Virginia Woolf's *The Waves*' (*Essays in Criticism* IV, No. 1, January 1954).
11. Fitz-james Stephen: *Liberty, Equality, Fraternity*, p. 353 (2nd ed., London, 1874), quoted by William James, *Selected Papers on Philosophy* (Everyman's Library), p. 124. Virginia Woolf possibly read the passage in its original context in William James's *The Will to Believe* (1897); she was also, of course, a great admirer of the philosopher's brother, the novelist Henry James, to whom there are some interesting references in *A Writer's Diary*. For the intellectual background of the Stephens, see Q. D. Leavis's article on Leslie Stephen, *Scrutiny*, Vol. VII, No. 4, March 1939, and the study by Noel Annan.
12. Two recent American academic studies are 'Mythic Patterns in *To the Lighthouse*' by Joseph Blotner, P.M.L.A., LXXI, September 1956, pp. 547-62, and 'Vision in *To the Lighthouse*' by Glenn Pedersen, P.M.L.A., LXXIII, December 1958, pp. 585-600.

## L. H. MYERS AND BLOOMSBURY

G. H. BANTOCK

THE work of L. H. Myers (1881-1944) presents at least two points of interest. There are the novels in themselves - one of which, at least, is of sufficient merit to warrant inclusion among the best of the last fifty years (and the company would not be large); and there is what has happened to the novels - the literary situation in England which, while continuing to find significance in the work of any one of a dozen inferior writers has, after the first mostly adulatory reviews, quietly ignored Myers's work. As might be guessed, the two points are not unconnected; and by defining the attitude to experience that Myers's work entailed and by examining the particular nature of his moral preoccupations, something will already have been done to uncover the motives behind the neglect. Indeed, the use of the word 'moral', necessarily forced upon one in the most preliminary consideration of the novels, may already have provided a clue.

Frederic W. H. Myers, Leo's father, an essayist and poet of minor distinction, was one of the founders of the Society for Psychical Research, in 1882, an undertaking which interested a number of the best minds of late Victorian intellectual society. Thus, Leckhampton House, Cambridge, at which the young Leo was brought up, became a centre of intellectual life attended by many of the distinguished minds of the late Victorian period, Henry Sidgwick, Montagu Butler, Lord Rayleigh, F. W. Maitland, Balfours, Lyttletons, and many others. This was the Cambridge of the Puritan-Whig tradition of common sense and the dry light of reason, as Leslie Stephen described it. Though F. W. H. Myers was subject to a more turgid emotionalism than were many of his friends, his major preoccupation was still primarily rationalistic and moralistic - the attempt to prove, by controlled scientific experimentation, the immortality of the soul.

To the father the common enterprise of psychical research provided an adequate social and intellectual milieu. Given the particular circumstances of the breakdown of dogmatic creeds in the late Victorian era, psychical research was obviously something to engage the



### PART THREE

instance, by treating all sorts of sensibility as equal in importance, and all manifestations of character as standing on the same plane of significance, adds nothing to his achievement, but only draws attention to himself as aiming at the exaltation of a rather petty form of aestheticism.

Thus Myers seeks to be a 'connoisseur' of character, and criticizes the lack of moral and spiritual discrimination which fails to appreciate the 'deep-seated spiritual vulgarity that lies at the heart of our civilization'.

Hence it is the exercise of the moral judgement which actuates the discriminations among his characters. His novels, though they appear at first sight to be remote in subject-matter, are in fact strictly contemporary; and he worked out in them, after the manner of his own Jali, some of his most pressing personal problems, chiefly the problem which he remembered exercising him from his childhood: 'Why do men choose to live?', and the problem of personal relationships. What he investigated through his 'serious' characters was the possibility of a way of life which should at once stand the test of a morally fastidious taste and end his feeling of social and personal isolation. The books, therefore, are peculiarly autobiographical. Fundamentally, as I have suggested, his mind was of a religious tendency; his major work, *The Near and the Far*, is set in India in the sixteenth century, because this not only allows him the detachment from strictly local and contemporary settings that, significantly, he always needed, but permits him to explore a selection of Eastern and Western approaches to the problem of ultimate 'Being'.

In *The Near and the Far*, Ranee Sita is pointing out to the Brahmin, Gokal, the extent to which she disagrees with her husband Amar's outlook:

'I, for my part, shall always affirm what Amar denies. Between us there is a gulf.'

Gokal leaned forward earnestly, 'The gulf lies not between those who affirm and those who deny, but between those who affirm and those who ignore. Listen!' he went on ... 'Fundamentally your mind and Amar's are similar in type; you both raise the same problems and the answers you give are the same in essence, if their substance is not the same. You advocate life's intensification, Amar its extinguishment; but you both recognize imperfection and you both aim at perfection!'





material spirit of the society of the day; to gain it the Orissers are prepared to offend against the conventional moral code, even to commit murder. Yet, even when they are successful, they feel themselves cut off in Eamor's 'dreadful peace'. If the Orissers are the spiritually aware, they are, nevertheless, aware of themselves as the self-conscious members of an effete and dying social order.

Myers's first novel, then, reveals quite starkly – too starkly – the problem; 'too starkly' because the moral distinctions involved (the dichotomy between the Orissers and the Maynes) are too crudely made – we descend too quickly to melodrama. There is more egotism in the make-up of the Orissers than Myers seems aware of. At the same time, it was right that the concern for standards of conduct should not be regarded as illusory, even as those standards are interpreted in the novel; and Myers does sense that the moral isolation of the Orissers is equivocal, and that such isolation represents a desiccation.

*The 'Clio'* hardly merits serious consideration; Myers wrote it because he wished to produce something in the Aldous Huxley vein. It is in *The Root of the Flower* (1935), the first three sections of *The Near and the Far*, that the implications of the Orissers are taken up and explored more fully. The Orisser group – the sensitive and fastidious – reappear in the characters of Rajah Amar, his wife, Sita, and their son Jali, together with Amar's brother-in-law, Hari, and a friend, Gokal. Through the 'education' (using the word in the sense in which Henry Adams employed it) of Jali we explore the effect of society on a young and sensitive mind and the pretentiousness of various social and artistic circles is revealed. The Rajah himself, mature and critically aware of the corruptions of the world, seeks to retire from an active to a contemplative life. But his political responsibilities for his small state and the struggle for the throne which is bound to break out between Akbar's two sons, Salim and Daniyal, after the emperor's death, ensure that the contact between the 'fastidious' group and the rest of society shall be much closer than in *The Orissers*. The Rajah believes in an absolute division between the political and spiritual life. He imagines that he can readjust his allegiance in accordance with expediency alone, on the principle of 'Render unto Caesar'. He does not realize that the policy and the person are inextricably bound together. For he feels that, despite his personal distaste for Daniyal, he can side with him on purely abstract grounds.

It is not until Daniyal by a superficially trivial, but brutal, act of cruelty reveals the corruption of spirit which he represents that the Rajah strikes at the prince with his sword. The action is unavailing, but symbolically Myers has indicated that the evil of the world is a quality of the personality and must be met by opposition and action.

There are various gross manifestations of the trivial materialistic outlook in India in the book. Myers's analysis of the Pleasance of the Arts, a meeting place of contemporary aesthetes, has interest beyond the novel, for here he is satirizing a prominent literary group of his times, Bloomsbury.

Daniyal, the leader of the Pleasance, is the 'poet, the Artist, the enraptured lover of Beauty'. The camp glories in its independence of thought, its freedom from conventions, its emancipation from the Philistine and the Prig. It casts off 'dreary actuality' and basks in the glitter of its own pretentiousness. Here everybody flatters himself that he is somebody; 'in artificiality the spirit finds its own true life'; revolt is the order of the day, revolt against the old, outworn conventions, prejudices, and, above all, 'the bullying, nagging disposition of nature'. A closer acquaintanceship with the members of the Pleasance shows, however, that the camp has its own inverted orthodoxy. Not only is the apparent freedom of the camp entirely illusory, for all its inhabitants are bound by a rigid necessity to share the same vices and applaud the same apparently heterodoxal opinions, but they also depend basically upon a

solid, shockable world of decorum and common sense. They had to believe that a great ox-like eye was fixed upon them in horror. Without this their lives lost their point.

It is not hard to see why Bloomsbury was distasteful to Myers; for Bloomsbury was aesthetic rather than moralistic, even though its outlook was profoundly influenced by a work on moral philosophy. The last chapter of G. E. Moore's *Principia Ethica*, where his intuitionist moral theory led him to set up personal relations and a sense of beauty as the two supreme goods, formed the starting place for the development of an aesthetic philosophy to which the Bloomsbury intellectuals subscribed with varying degrees of personal emphasis. Mr Clive Bell, in defining what he understood by Civilization, declared that 'Works of art being direct means to aesthetic ecstasy

### PART THREE

are direct means to good'. The potential value of a work of art lay in the fact that it could 'at any moment become a means to a state of mind of superlative excellence'. The aim of every civilized man was the 'richest and fullest life obtainable, a life which contains the maximum of vivid and exquisite experiences'. Civilized man desired 'complete self-development and complete self-expression'.

What Bloomsbury made of Moore's doctrine, then, was subjectivist and aesthetic, something very different from Myers's transcendentalist position. As Keynes put it in his *Memoir*:

Nothing mattered except states of mind, our own and other people's, of course but chiefly our own. These states of mind were not associated with action or achievement or with consequences. They consisted in timeless passionate states of contemplation and communion, largely unattached to 'before' and 'after' ...

The effect was to 'escape from the Benthamite tradition'—there was no place for social effort or moral strenuousness of the Victorian type:

... social action as an end in itself and not merely as a lugubrious duty had dropped out of our Ideal, and, not only social action, but the life of action generally, power, politics, success, wealth, ambition ...

The anti-traditional element in all this was strong:

We claimed the right to judge every individual case on its merits, and the wisdom, experience and self-control to do so successfully ... We repudiated entirely customary morals, convention and traditional wisdom.

The self-regarding mind, then, freed itself from locality and background which might have carried a hint of continuity and obligation. This represents a position very different from that to which Amara came, with its underlying acceptance of social responsibility. But what Myers particularly detested was the Bloomsbury 'tone', the element of communal self-congratulation implicit in the self-conscious spirit of social aloofness and 'difference': 'The life of a first-rate English man or woman', urged Mr Clive Bell, 'is one long assertion of his or her personality in the face of unsympathetic or actively hostile environ-

ment.' (*Civilization*.) Roy Harrod, in his book on Keynes, reveals something of the origin and behaviour of the group. It developed from 'The Society' at Cambridge; not all members of Bloomsbury had been members of the Society, but Bloomsbury was, undoubtedly, 'strongly influenced by some who had been members'. Its growth was spontaneous rather than contrived: but frequent meetings and social intercourse induced a reasonably homogeneous outlook. The intimacy of personal relationship manifested itself in a private language; letters and talk between members abounded in esoteric jokes and allusions. It is true that members criticized each other, frequently in a spirit of mockery and raillery, and often displayed considerable differences of opinion; but the criticisms themselves implied a common acceptance of iconoclastic irreverence for all normal taboos and conventions: 'they shared a taste for discussion in pursuit of truth and a contempt for conventional ways of thinking and feeling', admits Mr Bell, while seeking to deny any real homogeneity of outlook (*Old Friends*). Such protestation of liberty of expression and a pervasive scepticism of outlook formed a barrier against an outer world in the grip of superstition and convention. Thus there came to be a Bloomsbury manner - composed of mockery, 'gentle dissection, fun, and ridicule', all 'in the greatest good humour'. There was even a Bloomsbury voice:

The voice was emphatic but restrained. Certain syllables, or even letters, were rather strongly stressed, but not at all in the manner of a drawl. The presupposition of the cadence was that everything one said mattered. Emphasis had to be applied.

(R. F. Harrod: *The Life of John Maynard Keynes*)

In Bloomsbury, then, it might be said, as Myers so ironically wrote of the Pleasance:

Here you might come across people of every variety - except one, the commonplace. Dull, conventional people - people who weren't lit by the divine spark, had no chance of gaining admission here. Daniyal had thrown away the shackles of ordinary prejudices and cant.

In this, the reasons why Myers, who had formed many Bloomsbury acquaintances, gradually but effectively dissociated himself

from the group become clear. They were both moral and personal.

*The Pool of Vishnu*, Myers's continuation to and conclusion of *The Root and the Flower*, contains the positive answer to the mercenary materialist world of Akbar's India. In the story of Mohan and Damayanti, Myers reveals the positive nature of a married relationship based on complete candour as between absolute equals working through communion with transcendental powers ... 'All communion', says the Guru, the wise man who defines, too overtly for good novel writing, the moral implications of the book, 'is through the Centre. When the relation of man and man is not through the Centre it corrupts and destroys itself.' This notion, of course, was very similar to that expressed in Martin Buber's *I and Thou*. Personal relationships conceived in such terms – a very different matter from Bloomsbury's conception of them – Myers believed to be capable of infinite extension in a manner which would finally overthrow the old, stratified social order, represented here by Rajah Bhoj and his wife and their cult of first-rateness. And in the relationship between Mohan and Damayanti and their peasants a new brotherhood of man is foreshadowed. At their house Jali discerns a correspondence between the outward things and the inner landscape of his mind – the 'near' and the 'far' coalesce. The material requirements of everyday life are spiritualized in true community. Over all is Vishnu – and Vishnu is a preserver.

This last novel contains Myers's dream of spiritual home. Someone suggested, as he stated, that 'I put serenity into the book instead of finding it in my life'. And he accepted this as being 'shrewd, and, in fact, right'. But he went on, in the same letter, to observe that the Guru does not preach a doctrine of serenity nor do any of the other characters find a resolution of their difficulties and conflicts. A life of effort was always necessary because it implied a transcendence of self in relationship to others. It is this that makes the vision of personal relationships mature and convincing. Here, at any rate, faith and community could combine. In the real world Myers thought that they would manifest themselves in communism; during the last years of his life he became violently pro-Russian. Yet he held such beliefs with the vehemence of desperation. In his own life, he never found the community that he sought. 'Many of my old friends and

acquaintances move in a world of thought and feeling that is distasteful to me', he wrote. And in the last five years of his life he withdrew from many long-standing friendships.

It is significant that all the characters in his book inhabit imaginary environments, places to which Myers himself had never been. Their problems are real problems as problems of the mind, but the characters themselves are rootless. Myers did not have, say, George Eliot's capacity, despite the intellectual nature of her mature life, for setting characters in an immediate and closely realized English environment; nor did he, like Lawrence, possess the 'spirit of place'. Myers's characters exist rather as self-consciousness than as intimately observed individuals. He was, in any case, never interested in the setting and he would brush aside praise of his descriptive powers with the remark that he was completely uninterested in description.

Yet Myers remains an important writer. For one thing, he had integrity; behind his work there is a kind of moral honesty which refuses to be taken in by the worldly and the meretricious. His analyses of behaviour are often extremely acute; he realized how very important group appreciation is to man and had an unerring eye for the social insincerity which marks a desire to be approved. He has, in fact, a notion of the civilized life, involving honesty and frankness of relationship, a basic genuineness of personality, which saw beyond the normally accepted criteria of such a life – polite conversation and a dabbling acquaintanceship with the arts. He sees the inadequacy of liberal humanism for the sort of being man is; and one remembers certain scenes – Daniyal's stepping on the cat's head is an example – because they challenge the easy optimism of the liberal tradition. He has, that is, a sense of evil. Had he had more 'imagination' in the Coleridgean sense – a quality necessitating a greater vitality, perhaps – he might have been a great writer. Greatness he misses; but he is never trivial. Fundamentally he is serious, concerned, and intelligent; and in a literary world which seems increasingly to find 'amusing' a term of critical approbation, he has not retained favour. The neglect into which he has fallen invokes a comment on our debilitation of standards; there are not so many with such virtues in our times that we can afford to neglect what he had to say.

# D. H. LAWRENCE AND WOMEN IN LOVE

W. W. ROBSON

*Lecturer in English Literature, the University of Oxford*

THE object of criticism, it is often said, is to obtain a 'balanced view' of the author criticized. But where the author in question is D. H. Lawrence (1885-1930) this is peculiarly difficult. Lawrence tends to stir up (to use one of his own phrases) a 'bristling rousedness' in his critics, and estimates of him both as a man and as a writer tend consequently to be exaggerated, one way or the other. He is not an easy author for the would-be judicious. The first problem the critic has to face is the daunting mixture of kinds and levels in Lawrence's writing, due to the intimate and complicated relationship in it between the poet-novelist, the prophet-preacher, and the human case. It is easy to make rough-and-ready distinctions: to say, for example, that *The Woman who Rode Away* comes from the artist, *Fantasia of the Unconscious* from the preacher, and the poems in *Look! we have come through* from the man, the 'difficult' husband and lover, the subject for biographical speculation and psychological inquiry amateur or professional. But even in the works mentioned, the relation between the different elements in Lawrence's genius is not altogether simple, and when we come to consider such equally characteristic works as *The Captain's Doll* or *St Mawr* or *The Man who Died* the complexity of the treatment required is obvious. No simple critical formula can be proposed. This is largely because Lawrence is like Byron or Tolstoy, in that it is impossible to separate, for long, his work and his life. The work represents very often the writer's living-through of his personal problems and conflicts, as well as his more general preoccupations; while the life comes to take on the shape of a symbolic story or legend.

In the case of Lawrence the outlines of the 'legend' are very familiar. The childhood of the son of a Midland miner and a woman of marked character, in a country village transformed by the mining industry, which helped to give us *Sons and Lovers* (1913) and *The Rainbow* (1915), with their insights into the emotional and moral problems arising



between husband and wife, and between child and parent, in a working-class environment; the youth and early manhood of a provincial elementary-school teacher, with an early success as a writer which distinguished him as one of the most gifted of his time; the union with a German wife of patrician origin, their later marriage which (all difficulties admitted) was to give so much sustenance to the man and subject-matter to the writer; the conflict with the authorities over *The Rainbow's* alleged immorality (as later over that of *Lady Chatterley's Lover*, 1928); the horrors of the war-time years, 'the nightmare' described in *Kangaroo* (1923), the petty persecution, the suspicion and fear; the utopian dream of Ranaivini, with its corollaries partly absurd and partly sad; the years of restless wandering, to all quarters of the earth; the intense, difficult, usually ambivalent personal relationships with men and women both distinguished and obscure; the temptations to primitivism and Messianism, explored and abandoned; the growing bitterness and depression, illustrated in the satirical quality of so many of Lawrence's later stories, now and then alleviated by flashes of gaiety, sardonic humour, and robust common sense; the long-drawn-out and pathetic struggle with illness, the death in his forty-fifth year - these things have been so much written about that detailed rehearsal of them is unnecessary. But the story will be read over again, and probably with more objectivity as the years go by and the personalities and topicalities involved cease to irritate or to divert. Lawrence is a person that future students of English literature and English civilization will have to meet; and it may be said that his 'personality' is the central subject for criticism for the student of his life - not only the Lawrence of anecdote, the brilliant letter-writer, journalist, and travel-book writer, but the wider personality-pattern which informs his creative work. Only one or two facets of Lawrence's 'personality' can be examined here; no comprehensiveness will be attempted, but merely a clearing-away of some of the manifest obstacles to permanent and appreciation.

Many of the works of Lawrence that follow his 'Victorian' period do present obstacles. Now it should be said at once that when he is most completely a poet these seem to disappear; when, for example, he is evoking the life of nature: not merely the life of nature-poets, but the ancient feeling of the cosmic myth.

human and inhuman power of the universe, which we may suppose archaic man to have felt, and which Lawrence, with that strong 'archaic' strain in his genius, can make articulate more wonderfully than any other modern writer in English. When this poetry appears in Lawrence – more often in his prose than in his verse – our doubts, objections, and questions are silenced. But Lawrence is a novelist and story-teller as well as a poet of the cosmos, and when he deals in human relationships – and he himself described his own subject-matter as 'the relations between men and women' – we are often disturbed and challenged, and sometimes repelled, by what we sense of the point of view of the author. This is not only because Lawrence preaches to the reader, and many of us dislike being preached to anyway, apart from disliking what he preaches. Even when Lawrence is more fully an artist and makes us feel what he want us to feel, instead of insisting that we ought to feel it, bafflement and irritation often occur. It is at such times that our attention is drawn away from the work to the man behind the work, and we cannot but deviate into thoughts about those well-known sexual obsessions and social unease which critics and biographers have so much dwelt on. So we lose contact with the world of the author's imagination and find ourselves on the plane of ideas and opinions. It is easy then to discover that Lawrence as a moralist is thoroughly incoherent. Any attempt to institutionalize his moral, social, or political teaching would produce chaos – assuming we could unagine what the attempt would be like. Lawrence is too obviously generalizing improperly, and at times erroneously, from his own case. This is especially clear in the matter of sex. There is obviously self-deception, hence insincerity, in a work like *The Plumed Serpent* (1926), with its insistence that a woman must not seek complete physical satisfaction from the act of sex, but must find contentment instead in a reverent 'submission' to male 'authority'.

But this disagreeable side of Lawrence, though it exists, is relevant to the literary student only in so far as it reflects a failure in Lawrence's art. It is true that this failure is frequent and characteristic – perhaps especially in those post-war years when the suffering and defeated mood of the author is more evident, and coincides with, if it is not indeed partly due to, a decline in his creative powers. But we must be careful to distinguish between those works of his which are dis-

turbing in the wrong way – those which deflect us on to the plane of opinions and arguments – and those which are healthily disturbing, which compel us to a valuable reappraisal, and perhaps readjustment, of our familiar assumptions and attitudes. Roughly speaking, we may say that in his successful works Lawrence makes us see the complexity of many of the concrete human situations to which moral judgments are undoubtedly relevant, but which do not lend themselves to description and analysis in straightforward moral terms. Thus (whatever we may think of the success of the novel as a whole) his presentation in *Aaron's Rod* (1922) of the deadlock in Aaron's marriage, the impasse into which Aaron's life has got, is so powerful that we are no more inclined than we would be in real life to pronounce readily on the rights and wrongs of Aaron's decision to leave his wife and children. It is not that we are persuaded to excuse Aaron, though as the novel goes on we soon realize that the author is on Aaron's side. It is rather that, owing to Lawrence's art, we are able to see this sort of situation 'in depth' – in a way that we rarely can, either in our own lives or in the lives of others. When it comes to explaining *why* Aaron took the step that he did, Lawrence is perhaps not able to translate his own convictions about the matter into art – not able to dramatize them; the amateur psychologist may indeed feel that this is because Aaron's decision is not consciously enough related, in the book, to his difficulties revealed there in forming a relationship with *any* woman and his curious quasi-homosexual relationship with the writer Rawdon Lilly. But what Lawrence can and does do is to show *how* it happened. We see that the Aaron we meet in his pages would, and did, act in this way. Lawrence's imagination has been sufficient to provide the data, the 'facts' of the situation; though when it comes to interpreting them, his imagination – perhaps because of some personal psychological 'block' – seems to function less powerfully.

Even where Lawrence has clearly fallen into special pleading, we can find this fullness in the presentation of the *dommées* of the situation which gives us room to make up our own minds. And it should be added that Lawrence's didacticism is characteristically apt to turn into self-questioning; just as those works of his (like *Lady Chatterley's Lover*) where a kind of near-allegorical simplicity is clearly intended turn into something more complex because Lawrence, in 'becom-

the gamekeeper, cannot but bring into the gamekeeper his own uncertainties and self-mistrust. (A simpler example is the short story *The Daughters of the Vicar*, in the character of the miner Durant, who represents instinctive 'life' in the fable, but who turns out to have intense inner difficulties.) It is notable that Laurentian didactic prose is at its best when it reveals, in its oscillatory, fluctuating movement, this recurrent self-questioning.

Lawrence's over-insistence on 'telling' us things - and sometimes telling us things we cannot accept - should not, then, be allowed to obscure from us the very real extent to which he often succeeds in conveying the feel of actual life and actual human problems. A man who spent so much of his life as Lawrence did in preaching to women, or to one woman, may fail (as Lawrence so often does) to pay due regard to the rules which govern valid argument, illustration, and proof; but this does not mean that he is lacking in the essential intelligence required of a novelist to realize the full human reality of the people who argue, puzzle, and suffer. Furthermore, the inner stresses and strains which cause incoherence in the abstract thinker may in the novelist and story-teller provide the creative driving-force.

Perhaps it is something in Lawrence's manner of writing, rather than his matter, which has proved a stumbling-block for many readers. If we take up *The Tales of D. H. Lawrence* - the volume which contains a great part of his most unquestionably successful work as an artist - we will soon be struck by an obvious difference in quality between Lawrence's style and most of the educated English fiction we are accustomed to. Probably a superficial impression of lack of 'style' had counted for much in the opinion, once very common, that Lawrence is an uneducated writer. This opinion, stated baldly, is absurd. Nevertheless, the quality in Lawrence's style which prompts it is certainly there. When Lawrence lapses from his highest level he is apt to move towards Marie Corelli or Rider Haggard, not towards Galsworthy. In his good as in his inferior works he has something in common with the great 'lowbrow' best-sellers: the vitality which they have and the 'middlebrow' novelists have not, though the best-sellers are coarse where Lawrence is sensitive and spiritual. He can use a vocabulary perilously like theirs in which to register his sharpest intuitions into modern civilized life, and allow himself confident generalizations about racial, philosophical, and sexual matters which

have a tone and ring uneasily reminiscent of the intellectual underworld of 'British Israel', Count Keyserling, or Max Nordau. This is a pity, because it nourishes the various animosities which ordinary vulgar snobbery, prudery, philistinism, or Bloomsbury superciliousness already have towards Lawrence on other grounds.

But it is now becoming common to praise the directness and vitality of Lawrence's style in general. What seems still an open question, even among his admirers, is whether he succeeded in expressing his full powers in self-sufficient works of art. It is well known that Lawrence rejected the traditional canons of structure and method in the novel. He wanted Arnold Bennett (the 'old imitator') to be told that the principles Bennett invoked held good only for novels that were 'copies' of other novels, and he spoke in exasperation about the 'ossiferous skin-and-grief' form which others wanted to impose on him. Some of what Lawrence said on this subject can be dismissed as mere special pleading. A judicious admirer of Lawrence will not cite *Aaron's Rod* or *Kangaroo* as triumphs of originality of form. They are meandering, repetitious, padded-out. Lawrence, especially in his later years, wrote too much and wrote it too quickly. Nor can the artistic objection to a great part of his work be regarded only as a misguided application of the Flaubertian principles which he rejected. Lawrence allows himself liberties, in what purport to be works of fiction - works of imagination - which are incompatible with the practice of any art, not merely the art of Flaubert. He openly abandons the pretence of dramatic objectivity and admits that this or that character is a mere mouthpiece. He addresses the reader directly, to explain, emphasize, or preach. He permits details from his personal life, not fully coherent with the presented fiction, to get into the book. It is unnecessary to elaborate these faults. Much can be urged in mitigation: the circumstances of Lawrence's life as a professional writer, the treatment meted out to the novels on which he *did* work hard, the growing urgency of his feeling (hence the overwrought, violent, didactic tone so frequent in those later books) about the decadence of modern civilized life. But faults are faults. If Lawrence is to be defended as an original artist of the novel, it will not be on the strength of *Aaron's Rod* or *Kangaroo*. Each has the makings of a good novel: but these are lost in a wilderness of preaching, autobiography, and journalism.

the gamekeeper, cannot but bring into the gamekeeper his own uncertainties and self-mistrust. (A simpler example is the short story *The Daughters of the Vicar*, in the character of the miner Durant, who represents instinctive 'life' in the fable, but who turns out to have intense inner difficulties.) It is notable that Laurentian didactic prose is at its best when it reveals, in its oscillatory, fluctuating movement, this recurrent self-questioning.

Lawrence's over-insistence on 'telling' us things – and sometimes telling us things we cannot accept – should not, then, be allowed to obscure from us the very real extent to which he often succeeds in conveying the feel of actual life and actual human problems. A man who spent so much of his life as Lawrence did in preaching to women, or to one woman, may fail (as Lawrence so often does) to pay due regard to the rules which govern valid argument, illustration, and proof; but this does not mean that he is lacking in the essential intelligence required of a novelist to realize the full human reality of the people who argue, puzzle, and suffer. Furthermore, the inner stresses and strains which cause incoherence in the abstract thinker may in the novelist and story-teller provide the creative driving-force.

Perhaps it is something in Lawrence's manner of writing, rather than his matter, which has proved a stumbling-block for many readers. If we take up *The Tales of D. H. Lawrence* – the volume which contains a great part of his most unquestionably successful work as an artist – we will soon be struck by an obvious difference in quality between Lawrence's style and most of the educated English fiction we are accustomed to. Probably a superficial impression of lack of 'style' had counted for much in the opinion, once very common, that Lawrence is an uneducated writer. This opinion, stated baldly, is absurd. Nevertheless, the quality in Lawrence's style which prompts it is certainly there. When Lawrence lapses from his highest level he is apt to move towards Marie Corelli or Rider Haggard, not towards Galsworthy. In his good as in his inferior works he has something in common with the great 'lowbrow' best-sellers: the vitality which they have and the 'middlebrow' novelists have not, though the best-sellers are coarse where Lawrence is sensitive and spiritual. He can use a vocabulary perilously like theirs in which to register his sharpest intuitions into modern civilized life, and allow himself confident generalizations about racial, philosophical, and sexual matters which

have a tone and ring uneasily reminiscent of the intellectual underworld of 'British Israel', Count Keyserling, or Max Nordau. This is a pity, because it nourishes the various animosities which ordinary vulgar snobbery, prudery, philistinism, or Bloomsbury superciliousness already have towards Lawrence on other grounds.

But it is now becoming common to praise the directness and vitality of Lawrence's style in general. What seems still an open question, even among his admirers, is whether he succeeded in expressing his full powers in self-sufficient works of art. It is well known that Lawrence rejected the traditional canons of structure and method in the novel. He wanted Arnold Bennett (the 'old imitator') to be told that the principles Bennett invoked held good only for novels that were 'copies' of other novels, and he spoke in exasperation about the 'ossiferous skin-and-grief' form which others wanted to impose on him. Some of what Lawrence said on this subject can be dismissed as mere special pleading. A judicious admirer of Lawrence will not cite *Aaron's Rod* or *Kangaroo* as triumphs of originality of form. They are meandering, repetitious, padded-out. Lawrence, especially in his later years, wrote too much and wrote it too quickly. Nor can the artistic objection to a great part of his work be regarded only as a misguided application of the Flaubertian principles which he rejected. Lawrence allows himself liberties, in what purport to be works of fiction - works of imagination - which are incompatible with the practice of any art, not merely the art of Flaubert. He openly abandons the pretence of dramatic objectivity and admits that this or that character is a mere mouthpiece. He addresses the reader directly, to explain, emphasize, or preach. He permits details from his personal life, not fully coherent with the presented fiction, to get into the book. It is unnecessary to elaborate these faults. Much can be urged in mitigation: the circumstances of Lawrence's life as a professional writer, the treatment meted out to the novels on which he *did* work hard, the growing urgency of his feeling (hence the overwrought, violent, didactic tone so frequent in those later books) about the decadence of modern civilized life. But faults are faults. If *L* to be defended as an original artist of the novel, it will not strength of *Aaron's Rod* or *Kangaroo*. Each has the makings novel: but these are lost in a wilderness of preaching, autol and journalism.

Nor will *The Plumed Serpent* or *Lady Chatterley's Lover* serve to substantiate the artistic claim for Lawrence. These he certainly worked hard on, especially the latter. They are different from one another, and their didactic messages differ. But they have this in common, that the writer is concerned with a single-minded intentness to 'put over' those didactic messages. Certainly his own maxim (in *Studies in Classic American Literature*, 1923) 'Never trust the artist. Trust the tale' applies to those two books. The tale can get the better of the artist. The fantasy-revival of the old Mexican paganism in the one, and the insistent sexual outspokenness in the other, do not make up the whole interest of *The Plumed Serpent* and *Lady Chatterley*. The fables themselves, in important points, do not serve the unequivocal purpose they were meant to serve. *The Plumed Serpent* in places can impress and move the reader who is most convinced that Lawrence's aim in this book was tragically mistaken and perverse - as well as being somewhat absurd. *Lady Chatterley's Lover* can inspire a sympathy with Clifford which was probably not intended, but can be genuinely grounded in what the story tells us. But neither book can be 'lived in': that is, neither book creates an imagined domain in which the reader simply finds himself, and finds for himself the moral bearings of the world which the artist has imagined; a world which we are not just told about, but which seems to exist in itself and be discovered by us. In these books, as in other stories of Lawrence, the poles of truth and falsity, good and evil, sickness and health are imposed by the direct moral intervention of the author. The books cohere as wholes and make sense (morally speaking) only if looked at from a point of view already predisposed to accept the author's ideas. Too much of what seems to come out of genuine experience has passed through the moralist's filter. The high proportion in these books of merely sketched, diagrammatic characters is significant.

Now it is easy to show - from explicit remarks of Lawrence's in the novels, as well as in his criticism and in letters and so on - that in this didacticism Lawrence was going against his own proclaimed principles. What is harder to make out is just what *positively* those principles come to: just what is the formal character of the works that do come more or less completely out of 'pure passionate experience'. Some may think that *Sons and Lovers* is the text to choose in order to discover this. It is rightly one of the best known and most popular of



Lawrence's books. But much that is essential to the study of Lawrence would be missed if we took that novel as fully representative. It is certainly the easiest to understand, being the only one of his first-rate books which is like an ordinary novel. Though much of it takes on a fuller significance when we know the rest of Lawrence's life and work, it is self-sufficient and undoubtedly the novel that a reader ignorant of him should begin with. Furthermore, the life-choices that the hero, Paul, makes in *Sons and Lovers* show their consequences in Lawrence's later work. Some have thought that in Paul's failure to see through his mother's pathetically false values, and in the cruelty, due to his mother's thwarting of his development, shown in his attitude to his father and later in his treatment of Miriam, we discover Lawrence himself taking the wrong turning. But however this may be, Paul's choices are self-explanatory within the book itself. If in some respects it seems to be a confessional work, the power of the literary artist is shown in the objectivity with which the confession is treated. Yet *Sons and Lovers* is the work of a potential rather than an actual genius. Its great superiority over Lawrence's previous novels – *The White Peacock* (1911) and *The Trespasser* (1912) – lies in its freedom from literariness. They are over-written: the directness and naturalness of *Sons and Lovers* mark the great literary evolution which is the result of Lawrence's decision (encouraged by 'Miriam') to deal directly with urgent personal matter. But by reason of its very merits it cannot be a triumph of imagination. There is little in the book to make us feel that the author's future strength would lie in the imagining of characters and themes outside his immediate personal situation. In this respect it shows no clear anticipation of the best parts of *The Rainbow*.

It is *The Rainbow*, together with *Women in Love* (1920) and the best of the tales, on which Dr F. R. Leavis, in his study of Lawrence, has chosen to lay the main stress.<sup>1</sup> And whether or not we can go all or most of the way with Dr Leavis in what he says about Lawrence in general, I am sure his selection here is right. And out of this selection *Women in Love* seems a suitable particular choice to illustrate Lawrence's mature art. Lawrence seems to have thought it, together with *The Rainbow*, his greatest work – though in later years his occupation with the Chatterley book may have caused him to revise his judgement. Dr Leavis, having given good reasons for ~~choosing~~

(despite the carry-over of names of characters) as a separate work from *The Rainbow*, ranks it above the earlier novel. Whether this is so or not, it seems clear that it is best considered as a separate work (though one initial problem that confronts the reader of *Women in Love*, the uncertainty about the social status of the two girls Ursula and Gudrun whom he meet in the first chapter, is cleared up if we come to the later novel from the earlier). Perhaps it is a pity that Lawrence did not change the names of the characters who are carried over when he separated out the two works from the originally envisaged single novel of *The Sisters*. The Ursula of *Women in Love* is not like the Ursula of *The Rainbow*. To simplify for the moment, Ursula of *The Rainbow*, though quite convincingly dramatized and a girl, lives mainly out of the experience of the young Lawrence himself. The Ursula of *Women in Love* has much more in her of Lawrence's wife Frieda. Any effort by the reader to fuse the two Ursulas in his reading of *Women in Love* would lead to difficulties. It is true that the later part of *The Rainbow* - what bears on the failure of the affair between Ursula and Skrebensky - contains germinally some of the substance of *Women in Love*. But the connexion is thematic, rather than narrative. *Women in Love* is thus best treated separately.

There are two reasons for choosing it, rather than its predecessor, for discussion. First, the cyclical, repetitive method of *The Rainbow* is not hard to grasp, once it is seen for what it is. The book contains patches of local obscurity (as often with Lawrence, the love-scenes are obscure), but it has not on the whole been found so radically puzzling as *Women in Love*. But above all *Women in Love* is the more 'modern' of the two, the one in which Lawrence is more concerned with what we recognize as contemporary life. There is something of a pastoral, idealizing, idyllic quality about *The Rainbow* - at any rate, in the earlier part, before the advent of 'modern' life in the story of the childhood and youth of the girl Ursula. That earlier part has a certain epic spaciousness which is unlike anything else in Lawrence. *The Rainbow* compares with *Women in Love*, in this respect, as *War and Peace* does with *Anna Karenina*. Its idyllic quality is beautiful. But that quality is only possible because of the background to the story, the older England which has gone for ever; it is the work of the Lawrence whom Dr Leavis can see as the successor to the George Eliot of *The Mill on the Floss*. *Women in Love*, then, is chosen here as

the more complex, difficult, and 'modern' of the two novels of Lawrence's creative prime – not necessarily as the better.

This novel can be, and has been, used (as in Dr Leavis's treatment of it) to show how prose fiction takes over, in Lawrence's hands, the thematic and symbolic method of poetry. Such things as Gerald's treatment of his mare (in Chapter ix) or the episode of the cats (in Chapter xiii) will strike the reader even at a first reading as essentially poetic in this sense. But, effective as they are, they do not go far beyond the devices of previous fiction, in that they are the economical and vivid summing-up of a significance that has already been made explicit. In chapters like that called 'Rabbit' (xviii), and most of all in the wonderful chapter called 'Moony' (xix), where Birkin, watched by Ursula without his knowledge, throws stones into the water to shatter the moon's reflection, we seem to reach deeper levels. Their significance is not that they sum up what has gone before, but that they extend and deepen our awareness of what is happening in the novel. In chapters like these Lawrence justifies the claims that have been made for him as a formal innovator who extends the range of the art of fiction.

adroitly done, and as the book gets going we are ready to assume that it is to be about marriage, and the varying attitudes of the two girls (who are already contrasted) to men in marriage. We are thus tempted to regard the girls as central characters. And indeed Gudrun's attitude to Gerald Crich in this chapter, the nature of her attraction to him, does point forward to what their relationship is to become. But it soon becomes clear that the organizing principle of the novel is not to be found in the difference between the two girls nor in the theme of marriage. True, we are given to understand at the end that Ursula, the more sympathetic of the two girls, does marry Birkin. But this marriage has no climactic effect. If, then, we begin our analysis of *Women in Love* from what seems the natural starting-point, we soon get into difficulties, such as have made less analytically minded readers in the past give up the book in exasperation.

It seems to me, then, that the structure - and hence the total meaning - of the book is better understood not by beginning at the natural starting-point suggested by the book's title and the first chapter, but by beginning at what might be called the logical starting-point, which is Birkin. This is not to assume that as an actual fact of composition Lawrence himself began here - though it seems significant that in an early draft of *Women in Love* the book did begin with Birkin's meeting with Gerald on holiday on the Continent. All that is claimed is that the effective structure of the book is more clearly revealed by taking Birkin to be the principal centre of interest. It may well turn out - indeed in my view it does - that Birkin does not in the end have quite the kind of central and standard-supplying role in the book which Lawrence may have intended. But he is, after all, virtually a self-portrait of Lawrence, and as such he carries whatever weight of doctrine about the relations of men and women is to be found in the novel. And it will be seen that all the other principal characters and themes of the book are in a sense causally dependent on the conception of Birkin.

Though modelled on the author, Birkin is definitely a character in the book and not overshadowing it. He is exasperating and touching, protean, sometimes unpleasant, sometimes likeable, in a credible way. If his peculiarities are Lawrence's own, they are presented by Lawrence quite objectively. It is not even clear that when Birkin and Ursula are in conflict the reader's sympathy is automatically pre-



### PART THREE

understandableness of Ursula's reaction to it. We see him often as Ursula does in Chapter XI, where we hear of

... this duality of feeling which he created in her ... his wonderful life-rapidity, the rare quality of an utterly desirable man: and there was at the same time this ridiculous, mean effacement into a *Salvator Mundi* and a Sunday-school teacher, a prig of the stiffest type.

In this treatment of his self-dramatization Lawrence shows himself one of the great realists of literature. Not that he is always convincing in his treatment of material facts, settings, and milieux: anyone who has read much of Lawrence will know that that is not so. But when he is at his best he can give expression in the most effective way - in the dramatic treatment of character - to the refutation of that 'finality' which Ursula here imputes to Gudrun: the moralist's wish for the ultimate and definitive 'placing' of live human creatures in their life and growth, in relation to some static and preconceived notion of purpose and value. And correspondingly the novelist's positive achievement is the communication of a sense of life as it is lived, not merely in the day-by-day or moment-by-moment fluctuations of perception and emotion, but in the shifts of judgement and attitude which are inevitable in any live human relationship. The result is that we are involved in the experiences described in a fuller way than as mere spectators, because we are made to feel that it is continuous with ours. Sometimes, indeed, the involvement is too great, as in the quarrels between Mr and Mrs Morel in *Sons and Lovers*, or Birkin's obscure battles with Ursula in this novel; the 'frame' of the book is broken and we are drawn into the quarrel as if it were real life, forced to take sides, to want to intervene. This is a serious fault in the art, but it shows the strength of Lawrence's conceptions: a strength which in his best work is surprisingly compatible with the 'distancing' that good art requires. But this compatibility would not be possible without the dual nature of the character Birkin. Lawrence is personally involved in him but - in the best passages anyway - without this interfering with our sense of Birkin as a dramatic character, open to objections which are forcibly put, either by himself or by the tenacious Ursula.

Birkin, then, is a spokesman for Lawrence's changing moods. He is



in the novel, and the consequent embarrassing, embittered, and prolonged epilogue to their love-affair, represent the wrong kind of relationship between a man and a woman. Birkin has to escape from this. He has also to escape from an inner temptation which he feels very strongly towards a cult of purely sensual, 'mindless' experience evoked in the novel by a West African statuette which is introduced, with effective dramatic symbolism, in the chapter called 'Totem'. Here, of course, we have an instance of Lawrence's famous primitivism. But we note that in the book it is a temptation which Birkin sees as such. That sensual mindlessness, which he calls the 'African way', is a sort of barbaric equivalent to the sentimental Western idea of love which he feels to be decadent: but it too he supposes to be a product of decadence. But Birkin also thinks he must educate Ursula out of the sentimental and romantic love-ideal which she wants to impose on their relationship. He senses behind it that devouring and essentially egocentric maternal possessiveness which readers of Lawrence will not be surprised to learn that he regards as the enemy of human life and growth. It is this would-be 'education' of Ursula which makes up the main positive part of the Birkin theme.

This purpose of Birkin's can be taken as the logical starting-point of the novel. We have it foreshadowed in Chapter v, in a conversation between Birkin and his friend Gerald Crich, in which Birkin asks Gerald the characteristically Laurentian question: 'What do you think is the aim and object of your life?' It is a characteristic question, because it demands, and permits, only a certain kind of answer, the kind that is suggested when Birkin says presently: 'I find that one needs some one *really* pure single activity.' It is also characteristic because it seems to be as much a question asked of himself as of Gerald. Gerald finds some difficulty in answering, and finally admits that he has no answer to it, or to the equivalent question: 'Wherein does life centre for you?' 'It doesn't centre at all. It is artificially held *together* by the social mechanism', is what he eventually has to say. Birkin agrees, but presses his view that 'there remains only this perfect union with a woman - sort of ultimate marriage - and there isn't anything else'. Gerald's rejection of this idea of 'ultimate marriage', a rejection which expresses his essential nature, and the psychological consequences of that rejection, underlie the extended story of his





Now we may argue that Lawrence's sense of proportion, and at times his sense of reality, desert him in some of his treatments of this theme. Rico and Sir Clifford Chatterley, for example, are too slight as characters to bear the symbolic weight which their part in the chosen fable imposes on them. Worse than that, many of them, like Rico (though unlike Sir Clifford), are badly drawn, unconvincing, and presented with such obvious animosity as to invalidate their functioning as art. But one of the notable things about *Women in Love* is that the treatment of the Gerald theme is wholly convincing; Gerald as a character does really enact the symbolic role which he is assigned. He is done from within as almost no other characters of this kind are done in Lawrence: Lawrence is Gerald in important ways, and this identification is reflected in the strong and deep relation that there is in the book between Birkin and Gerald, who are close friends, ambivalent, intermittent, and obscure as the presentment of their friendship is in chapters like 'Man to Man' and 'Gladiatorial'. Lawrence is not weighing the scales this time; as a result he realizes much more fully the potentialities of the Gerald theme.

So thoroughly, indeed, is the Gerald theme worked out that Dr Leavis is able to base on it the greater part of his account of *Women in Love*. Once the intention behind the creation of Gerald is grasped his drama is felt to unfold itself convincingly. Gerald's strength is a mechanical strength, a strength of 'will-power' and 'ideals'. He has not the inner reserves to meet the mounting crisis of his life, and the strain in him is felt like the tighter and tighter winding-up of a mechanical toy which at last flies loose and bounds away to its final destruction. It is worth nothing that Gerald's realistic status in the novel, as an efficient colliery-owner, does not (whatever Lawrence may have intended) derive its validity from any faithfulness to social history. The judgement on Gerald would still be valid even if there were in fact no general correlation between the qualities needed for success in industry and the particular *malaise* of which he is the victim. The point of making him an industrial tycoon is symbolic: he is a man who makes the machine his god, and it is a god that fails.

Yet Gerald himself is not a machine, but a human being, and by no means an unsympathetic one. Lawrence gives a pretty full account of his previous life and his background—his father, his mother with her significant 'queerness', due to the ruining of her life by her husband's

'idealism', the childhood in which he accidentally killed his brother. When he grows up his knowledge of his father's inefficient paternalism as 'industrial magnate' spurs him on to improve on and supersede his father. He makes himself efficient and ruthless, and though the colliers hate him they respect him as they did not respect his father, because even if he despises them and they know it, they are slaves themselves to the 'values' which he seems so successfully to embody. But his strength is not true strength. He has limitations. The machine fails him already in the 'Water-Party' chapter, where he 'assumed responsibility for the amusements on the water' - lest this 'responsibility' for what happens, the drowning of his sister, should seem too tenuous, the point is driven home by the failure of his attempt at rescue. And ironically this cruel expression of his limitations comes just at the moment when he has been able to achieve one of the rare moments of 'apartness' and peace with the woman he loves. It is not Lawrence's purpose to show that strength and tenderness are incompatible. On the contrary, it is Gerald's inner weakness which is the corollary of his incapacity for true love. The slow disintegration and death of his father brings sickeningly home to him the void in his life which 'will-power' is powerless to fill. He turns in his need to the woman, Gudrun. But it is part of the dialectic of their relationship - their similar incapacity for true love - that this need should call out in Gudrun the mocking, destructive, malicious side of her nature. This has throughout been shown as a possible development in Gudrun, and it is one of the ways in which the two sisters are shown as different types of woman. The dramatic consequences of the conflict between the lovers are worked out in the long chapter called 'Snowed Up'. The final death of Gerald in the snow is only the symbolic expression of the inexorable consequence of his life-defeating idealism. Lawrence often uses the contrast of warmth and cold in a symbolic way: human warmth is a spiritual reviving-power in stories like *The Horse-Dealer's Daughter* or *The Virgin and the Gipsy*. Here the intense cold is the symbol of spiritual death.

Everything in *Women in Love* that bears on this theme is finely organized. And it is noteworthy that, although the drama of Gerald and Gudrun mostly happens on an esoteric plane, most of it is made to happen also on a plane where the ordinary criteria for successful fiction can be employed. In spite of some *avant-garde* critics, a general

### PART THREE

credibility of characters and setting is necessary for successful fiction. 'People don't do such things' remains a valid adverse criticism of a novel. Now, once the total structure of *Women in Love* has been understood – and it is this on the whole that has been found difficult – the characters do affect us as belonging to a life we know, and behaving in keeping with it (given a certain amount of poetic licence in the presentation of the social setting).

This keeping in touch with ordinary reality is a remarkable achievement. It broadens the scope of the novel. It enables Lawrence to introduce, quite naturally, characters like Gerald's father and mother – indeed the whole of the Crich family – who are very relevant to the Gerald theme, and yet are given the kind of dramatic presence, natural dialogue, and ordinary credibility which the novel-reader expects. Some of them may be 'odd', but they are odd as people in real life are odd. Lawrence takes similar opportunities in depicting Birkin's relation to Hermione. Much of this is on an esoteric level, half-conscious swirls of emotion, since Hermione is a sort of feminine counterpart of Gerald, in her blend of domineering will-power and inner weakness, just as her need for Birkin, which he knows he cannot meet, is a counterpart of Gerald's need for Gudrun. Yet Hermione is vividly depicted as a picturesque serio-comic character, and her house-party makes the appropriate occasion for Lawrence to bring in some satire both on the 'Establishment' of the day and the sophisticated radical intelligentsia he had encountered in such quarters (he takes the chance to pay off an old score against Bertrand Russell). Even the chapters describing artistic Bohemian life, though their relevance is less obvious, have a function in making the Bohemian side of Birkin's and Gerald's life more real, and in one place at least – the night Gerald spends with Halliday's mistress – their bearing on the Gerald theme is important, as illustrating the superficiality of Gerald's attitude to sex. And there is no need to emphasize the functional importance of minor characters like the artist Loerke, who plays his part in the climax of Gerald's tragedy. Thus *Women in Love* has a structure which arises naturally from Lawrence's firm grasp of his dual theme. The filling-up and population of the book seems thereby also to be accomplished with inevitability and naturalness.

*Women in Love*, then, does seem in part to justify the unusualness of its formal conception: a novel whose 'plot', if it is to be so called, does

not answer to the usual account of 'character in action'. There is development, but it is at a deeper level than that of 'personality'. If the whole book had a convincingness equal to what we find in the treatment of the Gerald theme, it could be judged an assured artistic success. But it suffers from a grave central weakness. The book's strong pattern derives from the contrast between the destinies of the two couples, and the subsidiary, though important, masculine relationship between Birkin and Gerald. (We may compare the strong pattern given to *Anna Karenina* by Tolstoy's use of the three marriages of Anna, Dolly, and Kitty, the 'unhappy', the 'ordinary', and the 'happy' marriages respectively.) But what is the significance of this pattern in expressing the intended total meaning of *Women in Love*? Dr Leavis would have us believe that the Birkin-Ursula relationship sets up a standard - or at least moves towards a standard - from which the Gerald-Gudrun experience is a deviation. But do we feel this in reading the novel? Surely what we feel in reading the novel is that Birkin too is a sick and tortured man, who does not (except at a few ideal moments which give rise to some of the worst writing in the book) achieve with Ursula the kind of fulfilment which he has made his *raison d'être*. Perhaps if Lawrence had conveyed the positive quality of those moments - as distinct from the mere feeling of repose and relief after fighting and tension, which as always he conveys wonderfully - our sense of Birkin's 'normative' standing in the novel would have been induced. But as it is, those ideal moments - as in Chapter XXIII, 'Excuse' - are among the weaknesses of the book. Lawrence expresses the ineffable no better here by his obscure, repetitious, periphrastic style than he does in the notoriously direct passages of *Lady Chatterley's Lover*. And if it is urged that, given the nature of the experience in question, those portentous wordinesses are all he could do, that is enough to prove the enterprise mistaken.

But this is not the most radical question. To understand Birkin fully we must understand the state of mind of the Lawrence who wrote of him. It is true that *Women in Love*, as part of *The Sisters*, was presumably conceived before the horror of the war-years had closed down on Lawrence: conceived during the happy interval between the break with 'Miriam' and the coming of the war. But it is hard not to see in Birkin the Lawrence of 1916, amid the penury and misery of his life in Cornwall, and in his mind always the horror of the war and

### PART THREE

the nightmare of suspicion and persecution. How else can we explain Birkin's hatred of human life? 'Mankind is a dead tree, covered with fine brilliant galls of people', he says, and there is much in the same strain. But this is a defect in a work of imagination. Birkin's hatred is not clearly accounted for in particular terms. It remains in the book just a *donnée*, an idiosyncrasy, which is so strongly rendered that it seriously limits Birkin's value as a representative of the normal man. No doubt it is unfair to attack *Women in Love* on the ground that Birkin himself is obviously not a normal man. Some imaginative licence must be granted in the presentation of this experiment in love: for the character who thinks of making it to be at all convincing, he would have to be rather unusual. But it is clear that Lawrence intended Birkin to be searching for, and perhaps even eventually reaching, conclusions about the relations of men and women in marriage which *could* be held to be valid for normal men.

This suggests a more serious criticism. For we cannot ignore Birkin's own sense of his failure. After all, the last chapter, in which Birkin gazes down at the dead Gerald, is a final taking-up of the issues first proposed between them in the chapter called 'In the Train'. Birkin has come to realize that his ideal of 'ultimate marriage' was not sufficient. It needed completion by the male relationship with Gerald. But this too has failed. What makes Gerald's death tragic – and there is an unmistakable note of tragedy in Birkin's thoughts as he turns away – is not the death itself (Gerald is not a figure of tragic stature) but its effect on Birkin. And the whole effect of the book – though Birkin even at the end will not directly admit this to Ursula – is to show that the kind of love he wanted is illusory. And to say this is not to bring extrinsic standards to bear on a work of imagination. It is what the work itself seems to say: pointing a moral of its own, which is not the author's.

### NOTES

1. D. H. Lawrence, *Novelist*, by F. R. Leavis (London, 1955).

# THE CONSISTENCY OF JAMES JOYCE

ARNOLD KETTLE

*Senior Lecturer in English, the University of Leeds*

JAMES JOYCE (1882-1941) was no flincher. There is a consistency about his life and development as a writer, a coherence and a completeness which has the sort of aesthetic rightness at which he aimed with such single-mindedness in his work.

From the writing of the first stories of *Dubliners* (1915) to the moment when, the extraordinary work at last complete, its progress rounded off with an unending sentence, he announced the title of *Finnegans Wake* (1939), he seems to have known precisely what he was doing. If there is a false start amidst his *œuvre*, a cul-de-sac leading off the Vico road, it is the two volumes of lyric poetry. Looking back at the total achievement these do seem, with their rather pale refinement and sometimes crude effects, to be expendable. This particular use of language was not in reality Joyce's forte. If it is as a poet that he is to be remembered it is not by this kind of poetry.

Everywhere else - in *Dubliners*, *A Portrait of the Artist* (1916), even *Exiles* (1936), as well as *Ulysses* (1922) and *Finnegans Wake* - the organization of words and the final effect of the whole has the stamp and intensity of poetry, successful or not. *Stephen Hero* (published posthumously, 1944), for all its interest, has not this quality to anything like the same degree, and Joyce was right, from his point of view, to reject it.

From *Stephen Hero* we get, explicitly, the theory of epiphanies:

### PART THREE

'Yes,' said Stephen. 'I will pass it time after time, allude to it, refer to it, catch a glimpse of it. It is only an item in the catalogue of Dublin's street furniture. Then all at once I see it and I know at once what it is: epiphany.'

'What?'

'Imagine my glimpses at that clock as the gropings of a spiritual eye which seeks to adjust its vision to an exact focus. The moment the focus is reached the object is epiphanised. It is just in this epiphany I find the third, the supreme quality of beauty.'

'Yes?' said Cranly absently.<sup>1</sup>

I do not think Joyce ever again expressed more clearly in analytical terms what he was after. This passage and the whole, more highly-wrought discussion on aesthetics in *A Portrait of the Artist* is worth reading in conjunction with Virginia Woolf's well-known essays on modern fiction and worth considering too, as Mrs Woolf does, in relation to the aims and achievements of contemporary French painting. Joyce is a far bigger figure than Virginia Woolf - his work bristles with an intellectual and moral toughness which hers lacks - and it is the measure of his superiority as a writer that his concern with the texture of reality should exercise itself in verbal and intellectual rather than merely visual or descriptive terms. Even if his emphasis on the word was to be, in the end, destructive, it was also his incomparable strength.

It is right at this point to emphasize also the importance of the theory expounded by Stephen of 'esthetic stasis':

An esthetic image is presented to us either in space or in time. What is audible is presented in time, what is visible is presented in space. But, temporal or spatial, the esthetic image is first luminously apprehended as self-bounded and self-contained upon the immeasurable background of space and time which is not it. You apprehend it as *one* thing. You see it as one whole. You apprehend its wholeness. That is *integritas*...

... The radiance of which [Aquinas] speaks in the scholastic *quidditas*, the whatness of a thing. This supreme quality is felt by the artist when the esthetic image is first conceived in his imagination. The mind in that mysterious instant Shelley likened beautifully to a fading coal. The instant wherein that





remarkably convenient starting-point for the would-be initiate and one which requires the minimum of outside support. The reader need not know or worry that Stephen is to be Telemachus; he will grasp soon enough what is at this stage of the book far more important, that Stephen is his mother's son and that the mother, though she is one and unique, is also something more impersonal, Irish and Catholic, and so linked – not just arbitrarily but in the complex inter-relations of life itself – with mother-figures more pervasive; and Stephen, though he is Stephen Dedalus, student and artist, mummer and pedant, is a little boy lost, partaking of the problems and nature of Hamlet and of Jesus, as well as of Parnell and Ulysses' son. Ireland-Island is also all islands, the sea all seas, and the key in Stephen's pocket has not just in the ordinary sense 'dramatic significance' but is the archetype of all keys, locking, unlocking ...

*Ulysses* can be approached from a whole number of directions. One of the best, as Richard Ellmann's fine biography indicates, is through an awareness of Joyce's own life.<sup>3</sup> The Homeric parallels, though too heavy weather can be made of them, are important. 'Homer is my example and his unchristened heart.' No less than Yeats, Joyce turned to epic and mythology as a release from the tyranny of abstract ideas. *Ulysses*, like *Joseph Andrews*, is a comic epic poem in prose, and the framework is no more arbitrary than that of Fielding or Cervantes. It is an epic with a difference and the difference is conveyed partially in the word comic, which Joyce in his later years would doubtless have found some means of linking verbally with cosmic.

Bloom's journey through a Dublin day, easier to plot geographically than Ulysses' Odyssey, is given form by being seen – with all rules broken – from behind Homer. But one should most certainly not conclude that Joyce's interest in his hero is therefore schematic or second-hand. He does not just exist for the pattern. Frank Budgen, who saw Joyce frequently while *Ulysses* was being written and read passages as they were completed, relates that the author's first question, on getting back a section of the manuscript, almost always bore on the convincingness of Bloom as a 'character', not on the effectiveness or subtlety of the presentation or method which appeared to be his first concern in composition. Bloom was to be the first complete all-round character presented by any writer, an advance on Homer's Ulysses. And the extraordinary thing is that, in a sense, the ambition



plot. You cannot usefully compare the relationship of Esther and Lady Deadlock, even though they are in a very important sense searching for one another and are indeed daughter and mother, with the relationship of Bloom and Stephen. Nor does the word 'psychological', in its more workaday sense, help us much in defining this new significance which Joyce expresses. Bloom's need for a son is not to be thought of primarily in terms of an individual 'psychological' need. All the time it is such concepts as the 'collective unconscious' that are the relevant ones. I think the continued influence of Roman Catholicism on Joyce has been somewhat exaggerated. I do not see his later work as guilt-ridden. But certainly one of the inheritances of his Catholic youth was to be a life-long suspicion of liberal scepticism as an alternative to a philosophy.

That is why, although Bloom's *Odyssey* is rightly to be seen as an epic of disintegration, it is at the same time (before *Finnegans Wake*) the most consciously integrated book in history. The disintegration is - to make a division which can only be temporarily and perilously maintained - in the content of the book, the integration is in the form. 'It is not my fault that the odour of ashpits and old weeds and offal hangs round my stories'<sup>5</sup> Joyce had written of *Dubliners*, sixteen years before the publication of *Ulysses*, and had referred to Dublin as 'the centre of paralysis'. In *Ulysses* the odour remains: Bloom's first waking act is to collect offal from the butcher's; Stephen (and later Bloom) watches the writhing weeds lift languidly on the Dublin shore as he waits for his ash-plant to float away, the ash-plant (did it grow in an ashpit?) which is to be one of the key symbols in the climactic moments of the scene at Bella Cohen's. And the paralysis remains too, deep in the book. Mr Levin makes the point well:

Streets intersect, shops advertise, homes have party walls and fellow-citizens depend upon the same water supply; but there is no co-operation between human beings. The individual stands motionless, like Odysseus becalmed in the doldrums.<sup>6</sup>

In this crowded Dublin, at least as full of *leit-motifs* and symbolic phrases as it is of human beings, nothing is achieved but a series of epiphanies.<sup>7</sup> Things and people 'belong' only in the sense that they are there and willy-nilly mingle with one another. No work - one might almost say nothing productive whatever - is done. This lack of a



### PART THREE

meant what he said and knew as well as James or Conrad or Hamlet the ramifications the of word conscience. 'I believe that in composing my chapter of moral history in exactly the way I have composed it I have taken the first step towards the spiritual liberation of my country.'<sup>9</sup> But Joyce the liberator worked in his own way, the exile's way, through art, a conception of art not only above but also below and around all other struggles, as many-worded as many-sided, reaching for the kind of ultimate involved in the word he used about Bloom—all-round.

It is not by chance that *Ulysses* ends with Molly Bloom's half-awake reverie. The final chapter pushes to the furthest extent the 'stream of consciousness' method – the attempt to find a verbal equivalent for the inner thought-processes of a character. ('I try to give the unspoken, unacted thoughts of people in the way they occur.'<sup>10</sup>) Joyce's purpose in developing this method is primarily to enrich his objective evocation of a total situation by adding a new dimension, another side to the many-sidedness of complex life. This attempt, though it has often been associated historically with the development of psychology as a science, is no more 'scientific' than any other literary attempt to give the impression of reality. You cannot in the nature of things find a precise verbal equivalent for unformulated thoughts; the interior monologue may give the *impression* of an actual thought-track, but it cannot do more than that.

Joyce knew plenty about contemporary developments in psychiatric research. He knew what it was to be jung and easily freudened.<sup>11</sup> He did not live in Zürich for nothing. But while he *used* the material of modern psychology for his purposes (just as he used among much else a considerable knowledge of anthropology and scholastic philosophy and a life-long passion for vocal music), his aim was not that of the analyst, the scientist. And he was bound to run up against an outstanding difficulty: you cannot isolate the individual's consciousness from what is happening around and to him. Hence, throughout most of *Ulysses*, 'stream of consciousness' is mingled continuously and sometimes uneasily with objective narrative and the description of outside fact.

In the final chapter 'stream of consciousness' finally comes into its own and for the simple reason that Molly Bloom is half-asleep. She is *doing* nothing and can therefore dispense with punctuation. Joyce,

in this remarkable chapter, seems to have stumbled – not that one normally thinks of him as stumbling – on one ideal possibility in his constant battle against the fact of time and its implications. By concentrating on the moment of sleep he defeats his enemy; but it is at the cost of presenting consciousness not as an active apprehension of the present (and therefore involving the challenge of action and the possibility of progress) but passively as a mode of recollection and impulse divorced from actual activity. The only affirmation that *Molly Bloom* is permitted is in fact the sort of affirmation associated with a principle rather than a person. Her yes, like Anna Livia's, is the yes of the Eternal Feminine, no more an act of volition than the journey of the river to the sea, without which life would stop altogether, a possibility which even Joyce does not seem seriously to contemplate.

*Finnegans Wake* follows *Ulysses* inevitably. If Bloom is an all-round character, *Finnegans Wake* is an all-round book. I think it is unrealistic not to recognize it as – for better or worse – Joyce's masterpiece and one of the great odd masterpieces of all literature. That it is 'difficult', more difficult than any novel ever written, cannot be denied; but most of the general theoretical rejections of it, because it is hard or queer or private, seem to be beside the point. The commonly expressed view that it is a 'private' book, in the sense of involving a rejection of the artist's obligation to communicate, is simply untrue. Whatever Joyce was up to he was not bogged down in the subjective theory of 'self-expression'. The language of *Finnegans Wake* is not a private language, it is a very extraordinary development of public language, involving a use of the resources of half a dozen different tongues, though fundamentally it is English, with the spoken (or sometimes sung) note of Dublin guiding its cadences. Every sentence, indeed every word, can be logically explained. It is true that for any one person to be in a position to give such an explanation is virtually impossible; and like some other truths this may properly be held to be a pity. It is also true that there is a kind of cosmic pederasty about Joyce's total achievement which is in the end perhaps its most vulnerable quality. I am not arguing that *Finnegans Wake* can be regarded as popular literature or is ever likely to be. I am arguing, however, that the book is not to be dismissed as a mere private eccentricity; a gigantic mistake, but of all the products of a charlatan.

### PART THREE

The case for *Finnegans Wake* is that it can, in its parts perhaps more than its whole, delight the reader, acting in such a way that 'it awakens and enlarges the mind itself by rendering it the receptacle of a thousand unapprehended combinations of thought', and that these combinations are not just arbitrary and casual but very often intimately connected with the actual experiencing and interpreting of reality.

It is not easy, in a few words, to substantiate this claim and one can only propose to the sceptical reader that he should, duly armed with some of the essential information garnered by Messrs Campbell and Robinson,<sup>12</sup> take the plunge into one of the more accessible areas of the book – say the opening of the 'Shem the Penman' passage (p. 169 ff.) – assured at least that in this of all books he will not be cheating by starting in the middle. Better still, that he should listen, if he can find means of acquiring it, to the gramophone record in which Joyce himself reads a part of 'Anna Livia Plurabelle'. It should perhaps be mentioned, however, that this particular passage is unusually lyrically 'attractive' and may possibly raise false expectations. Those passages, both in *Ulysses* and *Finnegans Wake*, in which the author indulges – rivers and seas seem to tempt him to it – in somewhat lush and easy rhythms do not show Joyce at his best.

The core of the method of *Finnegans Wake* is contained in a famous anecdote related by Frank Budgen:

I enquired about *Ulysses*. Was it progressing?

'I have been working hard on it all day,' said Joyce.

'Does that mean that you have written a great deal?' I said.

'Two sentences,' said Joyce.

I looked sideways but Joyce was not smiling. I thought of Flaubert.

'You have been seeking the *mot juste*?' I said.

'No,' said Joyce, 'I have the words already. What I am seeking is the perfect order of words in the sentence. There is an order in every way appropriate. I think I have it.'

'What are the words?' I asked.

'I believe I told you,' said Joyce, 'that my book is a modern Odyssey. Every episode in it corresponds to an adventure of Ulysses. I am now writing the *Lestrygonians* episode, which corresponds to the adventure of Ulysses with the cannibals. My hero is going to lunch. But there is a seduction motive in the Odyssey, the cannibal king's daughter. Seduction appears





### PART THREE

lowness! Sheols of houris in chems upon divans (revolted stellars vespertine vesamong them) at a bare (O!) mention of the scaly rybald explained: Poisse!<sup>14</sup>

In *Finnegans Wake*, narrative, in the more orthodox sense, which presumes a beginning and an end and implies, if not progress, at least development or decay, is dispensed with. Since this is a circular book the usual kinds of criticism are rendered more or less impossible, for ultimately all evaluation must depend on some objective reality against which the thing concerned will be judged, and this is precisely what Joyce denies us. It is impossible to be quite sure how far, or indeed whether, *Finnegans Wake* is Earwicker's dream, for the question is, in the light of Joyce's preoccupations, irrelevant. If time, in the usual sense of the term, is unimportant or illusory, judgements which involve the assumption that it is basic are automatically undermined.

Similarly, it seems implicit in Joyce's method that judgements of the more usual sort about the success or failure of specific images are inapplicable to his book. The very word image comes uneasily. L. A. G. Strong, who writes sympathetically about Joyce, suggests as the primary defect of *Finnegans Wake* that

the two processes, from association to object, from object to association, seldom harmonise, and often create serious confusion.<sup>15</sup>

I think one is bound to come to this conclusion if one attempts to evaluate Joyce's imagery by any objective criteria whatever. For example, in the passage (p. 528 ff.) in which Earwicker is copulating with his wife images from cricker abound. But why? What, apart from some purely verbal fun, do they give or add to the passage? Indeed so visually irrelevant do these cricketing images seem that one would be tempted to assume, were it not for biographical evidence, that Joyce had never seen a cricker match in his life and had merely collected the terms from a study of Wisden. Judged by a normally acceptable objective standard I do not see how the conclusion can be avoided that this group of images is arbitrary and unsuccessful; but the snag about making such a judgement is that one has in the end no means of knowing what Joyce is *basically* trying to do. The ambiguities do not, as in a speech of Shakespeare, enrich and modify the meaning; they are the book itself. That is why it is so hard to discuss,

let alone judge, *Finnegans Wake*. What, one is constantly brought up against the question, is relevant to what? Huckleberry Finn's significance in *Finnegans Wake*, for instance, seems to depend entirely on the chance of his name – or are we to imply that names are got by something more than chance? Always in the later Joyce there is hovering in the air the suspicion that words have in themselves some mystic significance. Because of Joyce's refusal to commit himself to the proposition that dream is less real than reality he ends up, it sometimes seems, with the implication that nothing is real except words.

*Finnegans Wake* can only be read and enjoyed in its own terms, i.e. by an acceptance for the purposes of the book of the whole Joycean bag of tricks (Vico, collective unconscious, Dublin geography, Norse etymology, street-ballads, and all). And because reality is more important and pervasive than theories about it, the great odd book has a way of breaking through many of the objections which common-sense consideration will plausibly erect. That is why, while L. A. G. Strong is right in pointing out that *Finnegans Wake* is 'a book written to a theory', with the problems that this implies, it would be wrong to regard this judgement as a dismissal.

A reader – or, perhaps better still, a group of readers – prepared to play seriously but not too solemnly the game of reading *Finnegans Wake* is likely to get from it a great deal of fun and information and a new sense not only of the possibilities of language but of the inter-connexions of things. One who is not an out-and-out Joycean hesitates to make a larger claim than that, for there remains a deeply based scepticism. Does Joyce the writer succeed all in all in releasing language and emotion as, for instance, Rabelais does? Certainly he does things with words that no one previously had done, but is the final predominant effect one of liberation and enrichment or of a stupendous yet ultimately rather arid *tour de force*? Certainly in the best of Joyce laughter and tears assert themselves as a humanizing force, counteracting with their sanity any tendencies towards pedantry and isolation. Yet the very consistency of his total effort, the very completeness of the structure he creates has in it something inhuman, leaving one in the end with the feeling that he who accepted so boldly all the implications of his exile – poorjoist unctuous to polise nope-bobbies – had flinched at nothing except life itself.

### PART THREE

### NOTES

1. *Stephen Hero* (1944), p. 188. See also *Introduction*, p. 13 ff., by Theodore Spencer.

2. *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man* (Travellers Library 1930) p. 241 ff. See also the discussion of this point in *James Joyce* by Harry Levin (1944), especially Part I, Chapter 3 and Part II, Chapter 3.

3. Mr Ellmann (*James Joyce*, 1959) shows very clearly the direct autobiographical basis of almost all Joyce's literary preoccupations. It is a fruitful emphasis not only because it explains much in the two major books that is otherwise almost incomprehensible, but also because it counteracts the over-metaphysical approach to Joyce which many of his admirers (including Messrs Campbell and Robinson) have encouraged.

4. Richard Ellmann discusses in a most illuminating way the significance of Bloom.

5. *Letters*, ed. Stuart Gilbert (1957), p. 64.

6. *Op. cit.*, p. 96.

7. Mr Ellmann's description of *Ulysses* (*op. cit.* p. 370) as 'pacifist' seems to me suggestive and useful but not quite satisfactory. 'The theme of *Ulysses* is simple . . . Casual kindness overcomes unconscionable power' (p. 390). But does it?

8. Alick West, *Crisis and Criticism* (1951), p. 178.

9. *Letters*, pp. 62-3.

10. Frank Budgen, *James Joyce and the Making of Ulysses* (1934), p. 94.

11. *Finnegans Wake*, p. 115.

12. *A Skeleton Key to Finnegans Wake* (1947).

13. *Op. cit.*, p. 20.

14. *Finnegans Wake*, p. 177.

15. *The Sacred River* (1947), p. 147.

# EZRA POUND'S *HUGH SELWYN MAUBERLEY*

DONALD DAVIE

*Lecturer in English, The University of Cambridge*

THE name of Ezra Pound (born 1885) undoubtedly belongs in the first place to the history of American rather than English poetry. Nevertheless his personality and his activities during at least one phase of his long career, together with the poems he then wrote, cannot be ignored in any survey, however selective, of twentieth-century English poetry. From 1908 until 1920, he made London his headquarters, playing a militant and decisive part in the crucial literary and artistic battles then being fought out on the English scene; in particular over several of these years he acted as at once mentor and sponsor of the youthful T. S. Eliot. Moreover, two of his major works of that period, *Homage to Sextus Propertius* (1917) and *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* (1920), are explicitly attempts to portray and diagnose the state of British (not at all of American) culture at the historical moment which, for instance, D. H. Lawrence in *Women in Love* similarly took to be for England a tragically momentous turning-point. But the conclusive reason why Pound cannot be ignored is that *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* at any rate has been accepted into the English poetic tradition, in the sense that every subsequent British poet at all serious about his vocation has found it necessary to come to terms with this work, accepting or else quarrelling with its conclusions about British culture no less than with its revolutionary strategies and methods.

Because Eliot has thrown in his lot with Britain as Pound has not, the British reader will probably come to *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* only after reading Eliot's poetry up to and including *The Waste Land*. Yet as Eliot has been the first to insist, in respect of many of the poetic methods common to both poets it was Pound who was the pioneer. Moreover, where the poets make use of a device common to both, there is every danger of not realizing that Pound's intention is different from Eliot's in profoundly important ways.

### PART THREE

A conspicuous example of this is the strategy which is common to *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* and to *The Waste Land* - the extensive use of interlarded and unacknowledged quotations from poets and poems of the past, and of more or less devious references and allusions to these sources. When the reader recognizes that in Pound's poem such references are sown more thickly than in *The Waste Land*, and that the allusions are sometimes more devious, it is easy to decide irritably that Pound's use of the device is less serious than Eliot's, and open to objections which Eliot escapes:

Turned from the 'eau-forte  
Par Jacquemart'  
To the strait head  
Of Messalina:

'His true Penelope  
Was Flaubert',  
And his tool  
The engraver's.

Firmness,  
Not the full smile,  
His art, but an art  
In profile;

Colourless  
Pier Francesca,  
Pisanello lacking the skill  
To forge Achaia.

A good French dictionary will reveal that 'eau-forte' means an etching; and the context then makes it clear that the fictitious minor poet, Mauberley (whose career we are following as in a biography), is at this point turning in his art from the relatively full and detailed richness of the etcher's rendering of reality to the severely selective art 'In profile' of the engraver of medallions. A very little knowledge of Flaubert will reveal that the French novelist differs from his English contemporaries, at least in intention, in rather the same way, as throwing his emphasis upon selection of the one telling detail rather than on accumulation of many details and instances. And in the art of the Italian Renaissance, the medallist Pisanello can be opposed in just the same way to the painter Piero della Francesca, master of composition

and colour. This is entirely and sufficiently intelligible. But the reader may well protest that the point could have been made more directly, without all this 'name-dropping'. It is easy to protest that this is pretentious, a parade of recondite expertise for its own sake - a charge which at one time was often brought against Eliot. In fact, in the course of answering this objection, we not only distinguish Pound's attitude and achievement from Eliot's, we uncover what is uniquely valuable in Pound's work as a whole, and in this poem in particular.

In the first place Pound would say that to talk of 'recondite expertise' begs the whole question: if knowledge of the art of the medalion, of paintings by Piero della Francesca, and of novels by Flaubert, is out-of-the-way knowledge for us, it shouldn't be. For Pound these names represent experiences which should be familiar to any educated man, and he is arguing, in particular, that neither we nor the Americans can see our own cultural traditions in proper perspective except in the context of achievements in other languages or by other cultures. He would be happy if our reading of these lines sent us to the Victoria and Albert Museum, the British Museum, and the National Gallery to look at late Roman or Italian Renaissance coins, and at Italian paintings. Pound in fact, while he shares with Eliot the wish to attain by these vivid juxtapositions an unexampled conciseness of especially ironic expression, has a further intention which Eliot does not share. He has never ceased to be the pedagogue. Just as in his London years he sought to instruct (apparently to good effect) all of his contemporaries whom he respected - Eliot, the novelists Percy Wyndham Lewis and James Joyce, even the much older and already illustrious W. B. Yeats - so in all his writings he is trying to instruct his readers, telling them what buildings and paintings they should look at and what books they ought to read. For instance, concealed behind the cryptic reference to the etching by Jacquemart is the name of the French poet Théophile Gautier, who is pointed to much more explicitly elsewhere in the poem. Pound alludes to Gautier as Eliot does, because Gautier suits his purposes, but also because he is sure he fits ours too, if we only knew it.

In fact Pound is much more interested than Eliot in the spectacle of human events and affairs for their own sake, not merely as somehow

reflecting his own predicament. It is this interest which he shares with Robert Browning, whom he has consistently honoured as his own first master; and it is what distinguishes him not only from Eliot but from his other great contemporary and associate, W. B. Yeats. Whereas Eliot's diagnosis of the state of Western Christian culture is not of the sort that can be abstracted from *The Waste Land* and argued over, Pound's diagnosis in *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* asks to be treated, and can be treated, in just this way. Pound's view of history is put forward in all seriousness: so in *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, if Pound has misgauged the temper of the period he is dealing with, the poem must suffer thereby, as Yeats's poem 'The Second Coming' doesn't suffer for all its very odd view of history. In fact, Pound's reading of English cultural history from about 1860 to 1920 is a wonderfully accurate register of the temper of those times, and squares with the facts as we know them from other sources.

And yet, so far are we from conceiving of a poetry that asks to be measured against commonly observable reality, that even those readers who recognize and applaud Pound's historical insight will not rest content with this, but probe further to find in *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* a diagnosis by the poet of his own state of mind and his own predicament. Though Pound has said, 'Of course I'm no more Mauberley than Eliot is Prufrock',<sup>1</sup> the poem is commonly read as if H. S. Mauberley, the fictitious poet whose representative biography the poem presents, is no more than a transparent disguise for Pound himself. Yet Mauberley, as the poem presents him, an apprehensive and diffident aesthete, all too tremulously aware of the various artistic achievements of the past (herein, incidentally, another reason – a dramatic one – for the 'name-dropping' in the poem) and of niceties of nuance in social encounters, ever less capable (as the poem proceeds) of coming to terms with the vulgarity of his age, and therefore defensively withdrawing into an always more restricted world of exquisite private perceptions – what has this figure in common with Pound, the poet, who alone among his associates and contemporaries had Browning's (or Chaucer's) zestful appetite for the multifarious variety of human personality and human activity?

The misreading arises from the first five stanzas of the poem. For this poem about Mauberley begins with a section not about Mauberley, but about E. P., that is, Pound himself:





### PART THREE

which has occupied him ever since. In the speaker's view, Circe, representing Pound's epic aspirations, had beguiled him from pursuing his voyage home to his faithful wife, Penelope, to his true objective, which was Flaubertian. The irony of this famous line 'His true Penelope was Flaubert' (which is echoed, as we have seen, in a later section) has been well disentangled by a transatlantic critic. For Pound, he says,

Flaubert represents the ideal of disciplined self-immolation from which English poetry has been too long estranged, only to be rejoined by apparently circuitous voyaging. For the writer of the epitaph, on the other hand, Flaubert is conceded to be E.P.'s 'true' (= equivalent) Penelope only in deprecation: Flaubert being for the English literary mind of the first quarter of the present century a foreign, feminine, rather comically earnest indulger in quite un-British preciousness; ... a suitable Penelope for this energetic American.<sup>2</sup>

Thus the speaker of the poem says what is true while meaning to say (in identical words) what is false.

Pound has lately said, of commentators on *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, 'The worst muddle they make is in failing to see that Mauberley buries E. P. in the first poem; gets rid of all his troublesome energies.'<sup>3</sup> But though we have been obtuse if we suppose that the speaker of this epitaph is Pound himself, there is no way of knowing that the speaker in fact is Mauberley. Moreover Pound's comment implies, what it is not easy to discover within the poetry itself, that subsequent sections of the poem are also to be understood as spoken not by Pound himself but by the imaginary Mauberley. This is indicated by further examples of the same stilted and precious diction as 'the ease presents No adjunct to the Muses' diadem'. (The model for this sort of language, incidentally, is another Frenchman, Jules Laforgue.) Section III, for instance, is written in this style and expresses the views of Walter Pater in one place and of Swinburne in others, more wholeheartedly than Pound himself might choose to do. But this mannered language can be taken, and has been taken, as indicating a degree of ironical detachment in the poet, without supposing that the detachment goes so far as to require another speaker altogether. Again, Section V, the beautiful and bitter comment on the First

World War, reduces the value of European civilization to 'two gross of broken statues', in a way that doubtless Pound would not endorse, though he might sympathize with the anger at waste and loss which thus expresses itself. But from a lyric one doesn't anyway expect considered judgements; so that the dramatic fiction, *Mauberley*, isn't necessary here, either. The section where it is essential to realize that *Mauberley* and not Pound is speaking is Section II, where *Mauberley* acknowledges that if Pound's epic pretensions were not what 'The age demanded', still less does it demand his own 'Attic grace', his 'inward gaze', his 'classics in paraphrase'. Having talked of how Pound is out of step with his age, he now talks of how he himself is out of step with it, though in a quite different way. If readers have found themselves incapable of this rapid change of stance (preferring instead an impossible compound poet, of epic and sublime pretensions in Section I yet vowed in Section II to Attic grace and Gautier's 'sculpture of rhyme'), the poet is partly to blame; he is trying to make ironical detachment and slight shifts of tone do more than they can do, by way of directing and redirecting the reader's attention.

The admirable sixth and seventh sections, entitled respectively 'Yeux Glauques' and (a line from Dante) 'Siena mi fe'; *Disfecemi Maremma*', are those which provide a tart and yet indulgent capsulated history of late-Victorian literary culture. 'Yeux Glauques' establishes the milieu of, for instance, D. G. Rossetti, in the 1870s:

The Burne-Jones cartons  
Have preserved her eyes;  
Still, at the Tate, they teach  
Cophetua to rhapsodize;

Thin like brook-water,  
With a vacant gaze.  
The English Rubaiyat was still-born  
In those days.

The masterly compression here is all a matter of punctuation and grammar played against the structure of the quatrain. Grammar makes 'Thin like brook-water, With a vacant gaze' refer to the distinctively Pre-Raphaelite ideal of feminine beauty, as embodied in several women (the most famous is Rossetti's Elizabeth Eleanor Siddall) who were at once these painters' models and their mistresses, but

### PART THREE

embodied also in the paintings of the school, of which one of the most famous is 'King Cophetua and the Beggar Maid'. But metre and rhyme make 'Thin like brook-water' refer also, in defiance of grammar, to Edward Fitzgerald's translation of Omar Khayyám's *Rubaiyat*, which went unnoticed for years until discovered by Rossetti, remaindered on a bookstall. Such ('Thin like brook-water') is Mauberley's view of the Pre-Raphaelite ideals, of the painting and poetry in which those ideals were embodied, and of the public taste which indiscriminately overlooked or applauded them. In the next poem, the focus has shifted to the later literary generation of 'the nineties', and it covers the same ground as the chapter 'The Tragic Generation' from *The Trembling of the Veil*, among Yeats's *Autobiographies*; Pound's immediate source is a more obscure book, *Ernest Dowson* by Victor Gustave Plarr, who is concealed in the poem under the fictitious name, 'Monsieur Verrog'. To read these two poems as spoken by Mauberley rather than Pound turns the edge of the otherwise weighty objection<sup>1</sup> that Pound's irony here is of the unfocused kind which enables him to have it both ways, so that the tartness and the indulgence, the mockery and the affection, lie side by side without modifying each other. If Mauberley is the speaker, however, this unresolved attitude is dramatically appropriate and effective, and helps to account for his own subsequent failure.

After this sketch of a historical development comes a survey of the state of affairs it produced, concentrated into five acrid portraits – of 'Brennbaum' (perhaps Max Beerbohm); of 'Mr Nixon', the successful best-seller (perhaps Arnold Bennett); of 'the stylist'; of modern woman; and of the patron, 'the Lady Valentine'. Again Mauberley is speaking, for in Section XII the speaker, waiting upon the Lady Valentine, describes himself in terms more appropriate to Eliot's Prufrock than to the ebullient and assertive Pound. The first stanza of this poem is another splendid example of Pound's witty compactness:

'Daphne with her thighs in bark  
Stretches toward me her leafy hands', –  
Subjectively. In the stuffed-satin drawing-room  
I await the Lady Valentine's commands.

The quotation-marks are Pound's acknowledgement that the first two lines are an adaptation from *Le Château du Souvenir* by Gautier

But the borrowing is made utterly Poundian by the deflating word 'Subjectively', which meets the reader as he swings around the line-ending, thus achieving the maximum surprise and shock. In the Greek legend the river-nymph Daphne was saved from ravishment by the amorous god Apollo, when her father, the river-deity, transformed her on the instant into a laurel-tree. The sexual connotation is present here, as in other episodes of Mauberley's career. But more important is the allegorical meaning by which Apollo the god of poetry figures, sensationally diminished, as the poet waiting humbly upon his patroness. What the poet wants from her is the traditional acknowledgement of poetic prowess, the laurel-wreath; but when she seems to hold this out to him ('her leafy hands') he reminds himself that she does so only 'subjectively', only in his private fantasy, for in objective fact she represents no such respectable body or principle of taste as could permit the poet to value her approval. It would require nothing less than a divine miracle to metamorphose her in this way, from a false patroness to a true one!

We have to say that this whole sequence of twelve short poems reads better, that several difficulties are ironed out, if they are taken as spoken by the fictional Mauberley. Yet many of them can be read as if spoken directly by Pound. The limitation involved here is inherent in any use of a created character standing between the poet and the reader. This device, by which the poet speaks in an assumed character, was first exploited consistently by Browning in his dramatic monologues. What Pound called the 'persona' and what Yeats called the 'mask' are refinements upon Browning's model. Eliot's Prufrock and Gerontion, and his Tiresias who speaks *The Waste Land*, correspond to Pound's Mauberley, and so (though with certain important differences) do Yeats's Michael Robartes, his Ribh, and his Crazy one. To all three poets the device recommended itself because it helped them to what, at different times and perhaps for different reasons, they all desired, the effect of impersonality. But the device appears to work only if the persona is sufficiently differentiated from the poet himself—otherwise the irony lapses, and the reader overlooks the presence of the persona. If this happens with Pound's Mauberley, it seems to me to happen too, and more calamitously, with Eliot's Gerontion.

How closely at this period Pound and Eliot were working =

### PART THREE

concert can be seen from a comment made by Pound many years later (in 1932, in *The Criterion*):

at a particular time in a particular room, two authors, neither engaged in picking the other's pocket, decided that the dilution of *vers libre* ... had gone too far and that some counter-current must be set going. Parallel situation years ago in China. Remedy prescribed '*Émaux et Camées*' (or the Bay State Hymn Book). Rhyme and regular strophes.

Results: Poems in Mr Eliot's *second* volume, not contained in his first ..., also H. S. Mauberley.

Pound the pedagogue is characteristically evident. But the central point is clear: Pound and Eliot, the two poets who had done most to familiarize free verse in English, had seen the necessity, at least as early as 1918, to revert to writing in rhyming stanzas, and if necessary to find their models in something so unfashionable as a provincial hymn-book. The model they adopted (Gautier, author of *Émaux et Camées*) was not much less unfashionable.

To be sure, there could be no question of simply putting the clock back. The large-scale rhythms of free verse, with its roving stresses, inform Pound's quatrains, which cannot be scanned by traditional principles, and similarly the rhymes are only approximate rhymes much of the time; still, the pattern of the rhyming stanza imposes itself, and the result is, to the ear, a peculiarly pleasant one - powerful surges of expansive rhythm never quite given their head, but reined back and cut short. On the other hand, there are quite different patterns, as in one of the sections on the Great War:

These fought in any case  
and some believing,  
    pro domo, in any case ...

Some quick to arm,  
some for adventure,  
some from fear of weakness,  
some from fear of censure,  
some for love of slaughter, in imagination,  
learning later ...  
some in fear, learning love of slaughter;

This may look like free verse; in fact it is a learned imitation of the measures of the late-Greek pastoral poet, Bion.

On the list of contents in the first English and American printings of *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, the first and much the longer part of the poem, specifically sub-titled 'Part I', consists of the pieces we have so far considered. Standing on its own, between Part I and Part II, is the poem headed 'Envoi (1919)'. This is one place where there is no doubt who is speaking. It is Pound himself, suddenly stepping from behind the wavering figure of Mauberley and all the veils of irony, to speak out personally, even confessionally, into a situation which he had seemed to contrive just so as not to speak in his own person at all. This wonderfully dramatic moment is signalized by the sudden appearance of a wholly unexpected metre and style, flowing, plangent, and *cantabile*, so wholly traditional in every respect that the voice of the poet seems to be the anonymous voice of the tradition of English song:

Go, dumb-born book,  
Tell her that sang me once that song of Lawes:  
Hadst thou but song  
As thou hast subjects known,  
Then were there cause in thee that should condone  
Even my faults that heavy upon me lie,  
And build her glories their longevity.

The tradition that here utters itself is the tradition that is invoked in the name of Henry Lawes, who composed the music for Milton's *Comus*; it is the tradition not of English poetry, but of English song, English poetry for singing.

Tell her that sheds  
Such treasure in the air,  
Recking naught else but that her graces give  
Life to the moment,  
I would bid them live  
As roses might, in magic amber laid,  
Red overwrought with orange and all made  
One substance and one colour  
Braving time.

We are now enough acclimatized to this unexpected, poignantly archaic convention, to perceive that in its different way it is still deal-

### PART THREE

ing with matters that the earlier sections, out of their chilly smiling poise, have already canvassed. The last section of Part 1, for instance, spoke of 'Fleet St, where/Dr Johnson flourished', and remarked:

Beside this thoroughfare  
The sale of half-hose has  
Long since superseded the cultivation  
Of Pierian roses.

These Pierian roses have become the roses which, if sealed in amber, would be 'Red overwrought with orange' and saved from the ravages of time. Thus, the 'she' whom the book must address is surely the England that Pound is preparing to leave. In an American edition of *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, the title-page carried a note, reading, 'The sequence is so distinctly a farewell to London that the reader who chooses to regard this as an exclusively American edition may as well omit it...' It seems plain that this second stanza of the 'Envoi' conveys with beautiful tenderness Pound's ambiguous attitude to an England which he sees as full of poetic beauties yet regardless of them:

Tell her that goes  
With song upon her lips  
But sings not out the song, nor knows  
The maker of it, some other mouth  
May be as fair as hers,  
Might, in new ages, gain her worshippers,  
When our two dusts with Waller's shall be laid,  
Siftings on siftings in oblivion,  
Till change hath broken down  
All things save Beauty alone

It is impossible to read this, if one is an Englishman, without real distress. Only Lawrence, in letters written about this time, registers the death of England as a live cultural tradition with such sorrow and with the added poignancy that comes of being English. (Nearly thirty years later, in Canto LXXX written in the Pisan prison-camp, Pound reverts to the theme, using the same imagery, in three beautiful quatrains beginning, 'Tudor indeed is gone and every rose...') The name of Waller locks in with that of Lawes, as one who wrote words for the other's music. The 'two dusts' that will lie with Waller's are those of the poet and of his book. And the 'other mouth' than Eng-



land's, which may in new ages gain England new worshippers, may well be the mouth of the English-speaking nations in North America. The ambitious and poignant perspectives which have been opened before us underline the irony by which the poet who was so conclusively dismissed at the end of the 'Ode pour l'Election de son Sepulchre' is the same who, twelve poems later, here recaptures the tradition of English song at its most sonorous and plangent.

Only now, with Part II, does Mauberley, the titular hero of the whole work, emerge for our scrutiny, his emergence signalized by a new cross-heading 'Mauberley (1920)'. As with Eliot's Prufrock, so with Mauberley, the inability to come to grips with the world for the sake of art is symbolized in the inability to meet the sexual challenge, to 'force the moment to its crisis'. Mauberley, like (apparently) Prufrock, allows the moment of choice to drift by without recognizing it, and is left with

mandate  
Of Eros, a retrospect.

The last stanza of this section – about 'The old stone eggs' – has reference to a story from Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, but the story itself doesn't matter, since the biting metaphor is not intended to be taken too obviously as a metaphor for impotence or for a general attitude to life exclusively sexual.

Sections III and IV of Part II trace Mauberley's gradual withdrawal into an ever more distant world with its attendant

Incapable of the least attention or consideration  
Emendation, conservation of the future, the past  
Refinement or medium, distant or a commonwealth  
August attraction or commonwealth

Nothing, in brief, but manifest indifference  
Irrespective to human aggression  
Amid the precipitation, down-fall  
Of insubstantial things  
Lifting the first survivors  
Of his subjective homestead.

As Mauberley in the very first section of the poem damned Pound to compassionate condescension as Flaubertian, and used Homeric

### PART THREE

parallels to do it with, so here Pound takes his revenge. The Simoon and 'the juridical Flamingoes' (that epithet a Flaubertian *mot juste*) are taken from Flaubert's exotic novel *Salammbô*, and used (with lordly disregard for geography, which would protest that they are inappropriate to the Moluccas) to stand as metaphors from the physical world for the spiritual state of abstracted passivity which is now Mauberley's condition. As for Homer:

Coracle of Pacific voyages,  
The unforecasted beach;  
Then on an oar  
Read this:

'I was  
And I no more exist;  
Here drifted  
An hedonist.'

In the *Odyssey* one of Odysseus's ship-mates, Elpenor, killed by accident, is buried on the sea-shore, and his oar is set in the sand to mark his grave, with a noble inscription which Pound, in Canto 1, renders as 'a man of no fortune, and with a name to come'. The contrast with Mauberley's epitaph is clear and damning.

The troublesome question of who is to be imagined as the speaker does not arise with these first four poems of Section II. It crops up again, however, in respect of the last section of the whole poem. Since we have learned that Mauberley, at a relatively early stage of his disastrous career, attempted in poetry something analogous to the severe and limited art of the medallist, the title 'Medallion' given to these last quatrains must mean that here again Mauberley is speaking, that this is one of his poems, closing the sequence just as another of his poems opened it. The poem is symptomatic of Mauberley's degeneration in its externality, its fixity and rhythmical inertness. It shows too how Pound was aware of just these dangers in a too unqualified acceptance of the Flaubertian doctrine of '*le mot juste*', as also in the programmes of the Imagists. The poem is not without distinction; it shows exactness of observation, clarity of order, and compact economy in the phrasing. For Mauberley is no fool, as we realized from the first; he is a man of principle, as well as a man of true poetic ability. The judgement is all the more damning: his principles



# T. S. ELIOT: POET AND CRITIC

L. G. SALINGAR

*Staff Tutor, Cambridge University Board of Extra-Mural Studies*

SINCE he published his first volume of poems in 1917, T. S. Eliot (b. 1888) has gradually overcome the incomprehension or dislike of critics bound by nineteenth-century literary conventions and has won an authority such as no other poet in English has enjoyed since Tennyson - an authority as a poet seconded by his prestige as a critic, publicist, and playwright. He has restored the intellectual dignity of English poetry; at a time when few people would take it seriously, he formed a means of expression in poetry for the surface and the depths of a representative modern mind, intensely aware of his surroundings, their place in history, and his intimate reaction to them. And with his sensitive, multi-lingual scholarship he has contributed more than any other modern writer to the framework of ideas within which English poetry, past as well as present, is read and interpreted. A decisive literary achievement; yet one that, by its very power, drives the reader to ask whether it has not been gained at a heavy cost, the cost of ignoring or suppressing a great deal of common feeling and experience. Precisely because of his great influence on modern literature, it is important for us to try to judge Eliot's work clearly and in perspective.

Two impressions stand out from Eliot's first volume, *Poetry and other Observations* (written 1909-15). One is the impression of a remarkable technique, already flexible and accomplished. The other is that the poet is usually dealing with involved or obscure or painful states of mind. And the special question raised by this poetry of 'observations', written in some sense from the outside, is whether the accomplishment is serving to elucidate the states of mind, or doing something else instead.

The flexible technique springs largely, as Eliot has told us, from his early study of Jacobean stage verse and the free verse of Jules Laforgue (1860-87)<sup>1</sup> (though to these should perhaps be added the influence of Browning and of Henry James). Webster and Laforgue speak to-



### PART THREE

cupation and the central problem of Eliot's work from the outset. Imagining characters whose feelings are insubstantial or puzzling to themselves, the poet moves swiftly - and often too swiftly - from asking what these feelings are worth on the plane of personal living to asking what their status is in relation to the absolute. In the long run the feelings are left even emptier than at first.

*The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock* (finished in 1911, when he was twenty-three) already shows Eliot's distinctive manner and indicates the range of his wit in the quizzical title followed by a sombre epigraph from Dante. His break from Victorian poetry comes out in the opening lines, where colloquial language presents a situation at once distinct and mystifying:

Let us go then, you and I,  
When the evening is spread out against the sky  
Like a patient etherised upon a table;  
Let us go, through certain half-deserted streets,  
The muttering retreats  
Of restless nights in one-night cheap hotels  
And sawdust restaurants with oyster-shells:  
Streets that follow like a tedious argument  
Of insidious intent  
To lead you to an overwhelming question ...  
Oh, do not ask, 'What is it?'  
Let us go and make our visit.

In the room the women come and go  
Talking of Michelangelo.

The speaker is vague, but the images he uses are distinct, acutely so; and the precise movement of these irregular lines tells us directly how Prufrock feels: they reach forward only to fall back. The two striking lines ending in 'table' and 'question' are left without the support of rhyme, but when Prufrock clinches his words in rhyming couplets he only seems to be losing balance. Similarly, there is a continuous undercurrent of half-audible images from the 'muttering' streets with their 'tedious argument' to the thought of the women talking, where it peters out, for the moment, in irrelevance and anti-climax. Eliot has said that the most interesting verse is that which constantly approaches a fixed pattern without quite settling into it: 'it is this contrast between fixity and flux, this unperceived evasion of monotony,



rhyming poems. The narrative is kept obscure but it appears that in a tavern somewhere in South America a number of shady characters are plotting against Apeneck Sweeney. Possibly he escapes. But at the end, as if in a film, the images of the present scene are transposed into others emerging from a remote and tragic past:

The host with someone indistinct  
 Converses at the door apart,  
 The nightingales are singing near  
 The Convent of the Sacred Heart,

And sang within the bloody wood  
 When Agamemnon cried aloud,  
 And let their liquid siftings fall  
 To stain the stiff dishonoured shroud.

Agamemnon and Sweeney, and music, blood and bird-lime, are coupled together; religion and poetry (the Convent and the nightingales) have always been witnesses of the same squalid agony. And yet what these lines emphasize most is not the horror of the spectacle but its monotony, with an overriding sense of the neatness of the versification. Technique here is not a means of clarifying the tangle of human experience but of withdrawing from it towards an artificial objectivity.

Although this passage is not one of Eliot's best, it reveals the purpose behind his finest poetry. His central purpose can be described as a search for detachment, or impersonality (as Eliot calls it in his programmatic essay of 1917 on *Tradition and the Individual Talent*). Detachment is the counterpoise to his deep sense of unreality, or equivocal reality, in persona emotions. The people he creates in his early work embody detachment in the negative sense that they have no satisfying hold on life. They have no personal roots or affections and cannot trust their own impulses. They are acutely conscious of some spiritual absolute, but only in the form of a privation, as 'the Shadow' that falls 'Between the emotion And the response' in *The Hollow Men* (1925). Or they feel they are exiles in the midst of life, somewhat like Orestes, because of their contact with a dreadful but unidentifiable guilt - as with the heroes of *Sweeney Agonistes* (1924-6) and *The Family Reunion* (1939). Eliot speaks of a poet's desire to escape from the burden of private emotion; and he comes to recognize that the





had made the speaker confuse his sensations with his thoughts; in *Gerontion*, he makes the effort of thinking itself almost a physical sensation, a straining to grasp at elusiveness and illusion:

After such knowledge, what forgiveness? Think now  
History has many cunning passages, contrived corridors  
And issues, deceives with whispering ambitions,  
Guides us by vanities. Think now  
She gives when our attention is distracted  
And what she gives, gives with such supple confusions  
That the giving famishes the craving. Gives too late  
What's not believed in, or if still believed,  
In memory only, reconsidered passion. Gives too soon  
Into weak hands, what's thought can be dispensed with  
Till the refusal propagates a fear. Think  
Neither fear nor courage saves us. Unnatural vices  
Are fathered by our heroism. Virtues  
Are forced upon us by our impudent crimes.  
These tears are shaken from the wrath-bearing tree.

This passage, with its quick interplay between sound, metaphor, and idea, shows Eliot triumphantly applying his study of the Jacobean dramatists. And it shows what he means in his own practice by a 'metaphysical' quality or texture in verse, the quality he describes as 'a direct sensuous apprehension of thought, or a recreation of thought into feeling'. His dramatizing tendency works together with his tendency to seize ideas at their point of contact with sensations.

Yet the poem as a whole is unbalanced precisely where it is most obviously dramatic. The concentration in *Gerontion's* mind, the urgent rhetorical 'Think now', gives way to an impulse to hypnotize himself with his own despair; the 'corridors' lead him to a private nightmare (like the streets in *Prufrock*), a maze where he loses his identity. He merges himself with the whole of mankind, with the failures imposed by history or else – the argument shifts – resulting from original sin. But there is no clear relation between the private and the universal phases of *Gerontion's* despair, for the personal memories he has just recalled (the immediate objects of his guilty 'knowledge') are no more, in themselves, than provocative but trivial fragments; in the phrase Eliot himself applies to *Hamlet*, they do not constitute an 'objective correlative' to *Gerontion's* feelings about



creates'; or again, where he tries to equate literature with science (comparing the method of *Ulysses*, for example, to 'a scientific discovery'). The influence of Baudelaire and his successors is powerful both in the moral colouring of Eliot's poetry and in his views on poetic symbolism, on the use of mythological or literary parallels and allusions, on the music in poetry, and on sensibility.

The poetic world of Baudelaire contains 'forests of symbols'. His images blend the resonance of differing sense-impressions; they signify a hidden unity between matter and spirit, or else disclose an ironic contrast-in-resemblance between the actual and the ideal. And Mallarmé claims that a poet can evoke the ultimate mystery of things in and through the non-conceptual properties of words, especially their music. Eliot takes the same direction. He admires in Baudelaire the power of bringing 'imagery of the sordid life of a great metropolis' to a pitch of 'the first intensity - presenting it as it is, and yet making it represent something more than itself'; and in Dante he emphasizes the physical immediacy of the allegory - 'Dante's is a visual imagination ... in the sense that he lived in an age in which men still saw visions.'<sup>9</sup> The important factor here is rather sensory apprehension than the visual as such, for elsewhere Eliot claims, rather like Mallarmé, that a poet's 'auditory imagination' can pass through the conventions of language accumulated by history to return to 'the most primitive', 'penetrating far below the conscious levels ... seeking the beginning and the end'. Similarly, he holds that the true function of the poetry in poetic drama is to 'touch the border of those feelings which only music can express' - thus preparing the audience for a religious insight transcending the spectacle of human action.<sup>10</sup> Here Eliot differs from Mallarmé and the cult of pure poetry, in that he considers poetry an auxiliary to religion and not a substitute for it. As to poetry in its own sphere, however, he sketches out a similar view: the poet apprehends what is below or above the plane of practical consciousness through a heightened activity of his senses, which includes his response to language. And this perception, crystallized in language, is as much independent of the writer's everyday personality as the vision of a mystic or the discovery of a scientist. What Eliot leaves unclear in his statements is the part he assigns to the poet's intelligence.

At first sight, it appears that he values the intellect and the sense

together - the 'recreation of thought into feeling'. But he repeatedly implies that the senses are both vital and trustworthy for a poet, whereas the intellect is irrelevant. In one place he writes that 'the keenest ideas' have 'the quality of a sense-perception'; elsewhere, that poets like Donne and Mallarmé pursue philosophical speculation simply in order to 'develop their power of sensibility' - without believing in their ideas or even thinking consecutively.<sup>11</sup> In his essay on *Shakespeare and the Stoicism of Seneca* (1927) he maintains that 'the poet who "thinks" is merely the poet who can express the emotional equivalent of thought' - which looks plausible. 'But' (Eliot goes on) 'he is not necessarily interested in the thought itself' - which is almost nonsense. However, 'in truth neither Shakespeare nor Dante did any real thinking'; although Dante relied on a superior philosophy, the philosophy of St Thomas, 'that was just his luck'; and the so-called thinking of both poets is simply 'the thought current at their time, the material enforced upon each to use as the vehicle of his feeling'. Now, it is one thing to say that a poet is not a systematic philosopher; quite another to suggest that he merely drifts on the stream of his age. It is difficult to see how Eliot supposes Dante leaned on St Thomas, or Shakespeare leaned on Seneca to the neglect of St Thomas (who, after all, was pretty much as accessible to him as to Eliot); or how Dante or Donne or Shakespeare could have represented their feelings coherently at all. But his theory maintains that during the process of composition a poet's mind is inert or neutral towards his experience (including his reading and his emotions alike), while the real work of creation is done by his sensibility; as, for example, in a now famous passage in his essay on *The Metaphysical Poets* (1921):

Tennyson and Browning are poets, and they think; but they do not feel their thought as immediately as the odour of a rose. A thought to Donne was an experience; it modified his sensibility. When a poet's mind is perfectly equipped for its work, it is constantly amalgamating disparate experience; the ordinary man's experience is chaotic, irregular, fragmentary. The latter falls in love, or reads Spinoza, and these two experiences have nothing to do with each other, or with the noise of the typewriter or the smell of cooking; in the mind of the poet these experiences are always forming new whole — The





### PART THREE

thing that follows. Sometimes it rises to fever-pitch, as in these lines (352-8), where the absence of punctuation contributes to the sense of lurching hopelessly forward:

If there were the sound of water only  
Not the cicada  
And dry grass singing  
But sound of water over a rock  
Where the hermit-thrush sings in the pine trees  
Drip drop drip drop drop drop drop  
But there is no water.

Or else the sense of hovering between consciousness and unconsciousness is made part of a complex synthetic image, as in the lines (215 ff.) introducing the scene of the typist's seduction (or rather, mechanical surrender):

At the violet hour, when the eyes and back  
Turn upward from the desk, when the human engine waits  
Like a taxi throbbing waiting,  
I Tiresias, though blind, throbbing between two lives ...

The light, the moment of city routine, the feel of the engine, all work together - and against each other; and Tiresias, who, 'though blind', is to 'see' the seduction, belongs to the same mode of being. He is both male and female, time-bound and timeless, a withered demi-god, a prophet hypnotized by an eternal machine.

In *The Waste Land* Eliot has applied the 'mythical method' he admires in *Ulysses* with brilliant but finally incoherent results.<sup>13</sup> All the fragmentary passages seem to belong to one voice, recalling memories, meditating, crossing spoken and unspoken thoughts; but the one voice pertains to a multiple personality beyond time and place. He is Tiresias (who resembles Gerontion) and, as such, suffers with the women he observes; he is the knight from the Grail legend; he moves through London ('Unreal City') and Baudelaire's Paris and a phantasmal post-war Middle Europe; he is Ferdinand from *The Tempest* and a Phoenician sailor anticipating his own shipwreck (and hence, conceivably, Dante's Ulysses as well). But the moral sequence or development is lost in this tangle of myths. Early in the poem, for instance, there is a striking and poignant moment (35 ff.):





### PART THREE

meditation aroused by a particular season and place – the vanished rose garden in *Burnt Norton* (1935), the country lane in *East Coker* (1940), the Mississippi and the New England coast in *The Dry Salvages* (1941), the chapel with its Civil War associations visited during war-time in *Little Gidding* (1942). The second section re-states the opening themes, first lyrically and then in more abstract terms; the third describes a revulsion or withdrawal from the world, a kind of negative ecstasy; the fourth, a short lyric, forms a prayer; and the last section suggests a resolution, in 'hints and guesses', supported by reference to the satisfaction of creating a work of art or responding to it. As in the earlier poems, Eliot dwells on indeterminate states of mind, dissolving common-sense reality: for instance, the introduction of *Burnt Norton*, delicately hovering between actuality, memory, and speculation; or the powerful opening of *The Dry Salvages*, where the throb of the lines evoking the river calls up the menace 'of what men choose to forget' and yet blends with cheerful memories of boyhood; or the 'midwinter spring' at Little Gidding, where 'the soul's sap quivers'. But there is a surer control in such passages than before, and a firmer progression of thought through the *Quartets* as a group. *Burnt Norton* presents the themes in a general, abstract form (the half-historical, half-imaginary garden representing both childhood and the Garden of Eden). The middle poems deal more concretely with history and the lessons of experience; the mood here comes closer to despair. And *Little Gidding* carries the despair to a climax, changing the general pattern to this effect by bringing forward to its second section the main passage dealing with literature (the meeting with the ghost) and also making it the strongest passage of negative emotion; but on the other hand *Little Gidding* gathers together the positive symbols and affirmations of the whole sequence. In detail and organization, *Four Quartets* is a superb achievement, the masterpiece of modern English poetry.

One sign of Eliot's mastery is his having perfected a new form of verse, resembling Langland's measure and challenging, without being distracting to, a modern ear. It might be called a poised measure distinct alike from *vers libre* and irregular blank verse. It consists of lines of varying length, commonly with four strong beats, pausing midway as if for deliberation; it upholds that most precarious of poetic flights, calm abstract statement:

Time present and time past  
Are both perhaps present in time future,  
And time future contained in time past.  
If all time is eternally present  
All time is unredeemable.

(*Burnt Norton*, 1)

The same cadence is heard again at the end of this *Quartet*, but on this occasion with echoes and repetitions seeming to check (or 'contain') the flight of time:

Words move, music moves  
Only in time; but that which is only living  
Can only die. Words, after speech, reach  
Into the silence. Only by the form, the pattern,  
Can words or music reach  
The stillness, as a Chinese jar still  
Moves perpetually in its stillness.

And the same cadence is heard throughout the passages in a longer line:

There are three conditions which often look alike  
Yet differ completely, flourish in the same hedgerow:  
Attachment to self and to things and to persons, detachment  
From self and from things and from persons; and, growing between  
them, indifference  
Which resembles the others as death resembles life,  
Being between two lives - unflowering, between  
The live and the dead nettle ...

(*Little Gidding*, III)

This has the deliberateness of prose, but the effect of poetry - even (in its subdued manner) of dramatic monologue; the verse movement underscores the act of the mind in distinguishing 'between' neighbouring concepts. Eliot has found the exact rhythm and tone of voice for his purpose.

And this tone and rhythm hold at the opposite pole of his 'detachment', where he is contemplating emptiness or disintegration:

### PART THREE

I said to my soul, be still, and let the dark come upon you  
Which shall be the darkness of God. As, in a theatre,  
The lights are extinguished, for the scene to be changed  
With a hollow rumble of wings, with a movement of darkness on  
darkness,  
And we know that the hills and the trees, the distant panorama  
And the bold imposing façade are all being rolled away –  
Or as, when an underground train, in the tube, stops too long  
between stations  
And the conversation rises and slowly fades into silence  
And you see behind every face the mental emptiness deepen  
Leaving only the growing terror of nothing to think about;  
Or when, under ether, the mind is conscious but conscious of  
nothing –  
I said to my soul, be still ...

(*East Coker*, III)

Here the 'going under' is more distinctly and more steadily conveyed than in the earlier poems; it is placed in a clearer framework of experience. So, too, the moving 'Death by Water' from *The Waste Land* is surpassed in the corresponding passage, the sestina in *The Dry Salvages* (II):

Where is the end of them, the fishermen sailing  
Into the wind's tail, where the fog cowers?  
We cannot think of a time that is oceanless  
Or of an ocean not littered with wastage  
Or of a future that is not liable  
Like the past, to have no destination.

We have to think of them as forever bailing,  
Setting and hauling, while the North East lowers  
Over shallow banks unchanging and erosionless  
Or drawing their money, drying sails at dockage;  
Not as making a trip that will be unpayable  
For a haul that will not bear examination.

Eliot's verbal invention comes out here in 'oceanless' and 'unpayable', with its compound of opposites – the solemn ('beyond profit or loss') and the sardonic ('priceless'). And his ever-present sense of the futility of human effort is now more compassionate and more objective than before.



### PART THREE

superb command of language and his determination to find a pattern in human experience. The poems rest on a statement of faith. But it is difficult to feel sure how far the total pattern they communicate is due to the mastery of horror and boredom, and how far it is simply an aesthetic ideal.

We owe an immense debt to Eliot for extending the range of English poetry. But it is a chilling reflection on the poet and on his age that so distinguished a writer should have spent so much of his energy in negation.

### NOTES

1. See T. S. Eliot's Introduction to *Selected Poems of Ezra Pound* (London, 1928), and 'From Poe to Valéry' (1948: repr. in *Literary Opinion in America*, ed. M. D. Zabel, New York 1951). For details of French influence on Eliot, see the books of Greene Smith, and Wilson listed in Part IV below; and cp. Arthur Symonds *The Symbolist Movement in Literature* (London, 1899); G. M. Turnell 'Jules Laforgue', *Scrutiny*, Vol. V (1936); and P. Mansell Jones, *The Background of Modern French Poetry* (Cambridge, 1951) and *Baudelaire* (Cambridge 1952).

2. Leavis *Education*, p. 96 [see Part IV, below].

3. Eliot, *Selected Prose*, pp. 86-91.

4. *The New Criterion* IV (1926), pp. 752-3; cp. Eliot in *A Garland for John Donne*, ed. T. Spencer (Cambridge, Mass., 1931), p. 8.

5. Cp. Van Wyck Brooks, *New England: Indian Summer, 1865-1915* (London, 1940).

6. See Eliot's essay on *Hamlet* (*Selected Essays*), of the same year as *Gerontion*; and cp. Leavis in *Commentary* XXVI, pp. 401-2.

7. Eliot's review of *Ulysses* is repr. from *The Dial* (1923) in *Forms of Modern Fiction*, ed. William Van O'Connor (Univ. of Minnesota, 1948); cp. G. Melchiori, *The Tightrope Walkers* (London, 1956), p. 71.

8. On Eliot's criticism, see Buckley; Leavis, in *The Common Pursuit*, *Commentary* XXVI, and D. H. Lawrence: *Novelist* (London, 1955); and Yvor Winters, *The Anatomy of Nonsense* (Norfolk, Conn., 1943; repr. Unger, pp. 75 ff.).

9. *Selected Essays* (1932 ed.), pp. 229, 374. Cp. Mario Praz, 'T. S. Eliot and Dante' *The Southern Review* II (1937).

10. *The Use of Poetry*, pp. 118-19; *On Poetry*, pp. 30, 86-7; cp. Matthiessen, pp. 89-90, and Ronald Peacock, *The Art of Drama* (London, 1957), ch. IX.

11. Eliot, in *The Athenaeum* (1919), p. 362, and *La Nouvelle Revue Française* (1926: quoted, René Taupin, *L'influence du symbolisme français sur la poésie américaine, 1910-20* (Paris, 1929), pp. 224-5); cp. *Selected Essays* (1932 ed.), pp. 96, 134 ff.

12. See F. W. Bateson and Eric Thompson in *Essays in Criticism* I-2 (1951-2).

T. S. ELIOT

13. See Note 7, above, and Smith, pp. 59-60, 71 ff.; cp. Matthiessen, pp. 34-45. For detailed studies of *The Waste Land*, see Leavis (in *New Bearings*) and Brooks.

14. On *Four Quartets*, see Harding and Leavis (*Education*, pp. 87 ff.). Preston and Unger, pp. 374 ff. ('T. S. Eliot's Rose Garden') give studies of the imagery; on the versification, see Gardner, ch. 1, and Eliot, *On Poetry*, p. 80.

# CRITICISM AND THE READING PUBLIC

ANDOR GOMME

*Extra-Mural Tutor, the University of Glasgow*

CRITICISM ... must always profess an end in view, which, roughly speaking, appears to be the elucidation of works of art and the correction of taste. The critic's task, therefore, appears to be quite clearly cut out for him; and it ought to be comparatively easy to decide whether he performs it satisfactorily, and in general, what kinds of criticism are useful and what are otiose. But on giving the matter a little attention, we perceive that criticism, far from being a simple and orderly field of beneficent activity, from which impostors can be readily ejected, is no better than a Sunday park of contending and contentious orators, who have not even arrived at the articulation of their differences. Here, one would suppose, was a place for quiet cooperative labour. The critic, one would suppose, if he is to justify his existence, should endeavour to discipline his personal prejudices and cranks - tares to which we are all subject - and compose his differences with as many of his fellows as possible, in the common pursuit of true judgment. When we find that quite the contrary prevails, we begin to suspect that the critic owes his livelihood to the violence and extremity of his opposition to other critics, or else to some trifling oddities of his own with which he contrives to season the opinions which men already hold, and which out of vanity or sloth they prefer to maintain. We are tempted to expel the lot.

This famous passage from one of the most distinguished of Mr Eliot's essays, on 'The Function of Criticism', was written in 1923. Reviewing the essay himself thirty-three years later, Mr Eliot said that he found it impossible to recall what all the fuss was about. The facts, so far as the early twenties are concerned, are there to discover simply by looking in the files of the literary and semi-literary magazines of the day. But actually Mr Eliot's words would quite accurately describe the situation today. The most immediately noticeable change is that there has been a certain congealing: a good many differences have



been composed, though the result has not generally been any advance toward true judgement (and Mr Eliot's present bewilderment may well be the outcome of composing too many differences with the wrong kind of fellow). If there is now a rather less confusing array of contention and dispute, the element of clique and coterie, with its snobbism, its pushing of personal and arbitrary values, is perhaps even more apparent. It remains true, as Arnold said in *Culture and Anarchy* (1869), that

Each section of the public has its own literary organ, and the mass of the public is without any suspicion that the value of these organs is relative to their being nearer a certain ideal centre of correct information, taste, and intelligence, or farther away from it.

What is not true now is that there would be agreement between those counting themselves educated on the direction in which the ideal centre lies. With much talk of the relativity of values, there is often doubt as to whether the ideal centre exists; and for the rest the idea of the élite, implying a dedication to values that are generously and broadly human, has been superseded by that of the gang,<sup>1</sup> with its motivation derived from private or arbitrary sources. The confusion of critical standards is as marked as ever it was: it has merely become a little more lumpy.

The period has been one of a great general cultural upheaval, in which mass literacy and the enormous increase in the power and range of mass media have been accompanied by an apparently final decay and disintegration of traditional sanctions of belief and behaviour. Thus the literary tradition comes to have a greater importance than ever, as on it alone now depends the possibility of maintaining a link with the past by which we can draw on the collective experience of the race. We are at a stage in civilization which demands more and more consciousness, when the individual cannot be left to be formed by the environment but must be trained to discriminate and resist.

The 'collective experience' sounds now almost an empty phrase, so fragmentary are the relics of any homogeneous culture that we may have had. Yet this is the kind of culture that the person for whom literary criticism seriously matters must strive toward; the culture in

### PART THREE

which it will be possible to appeal to the common reader as Johnson did, in which individual judgements will be confirmed and amplified in an experience of civilized living which is more than individual, where personal concerns meet in the creation of the standards by which a civilization lives.

Only on the basis of a common reader who can be appealed to in this way, who is part of a homogeneous culture with 'more-than-individual judgement, better-than-individual taste', can literature flourish and perform its function in the community. The 'literary court of appeal', then, which James looked for<sup>2</sup> is the very reverse of an academic preserve of rules of good writing. The appeal must always be from the general judgement to the particular, but to the particular seen as part of 'a coherent, educated and influential reading-public, one capable of responding intelligently and making its response felt', for it is only then that 'standards are "there" for the critic to appeal to: only where there is such a public can he invoke them with any effect'. Standards are 'there' only in a community, a coherent (though not necessarily conscious) body of thought and feeling, because the standards appealed to, common to all men, are not created individually; for living is a more-than-individual process.

The absence of adequate standards of intelligence and taste, together with the inflation of private and temporary ones, is naturally seen at its worst in the dance of the reviews. Already in 1893, Henry James could remark that reviewing is 'a practice that in general has nothing in common with the art of criticism'; and his description of the way in which 'the great business of reviewing' carries on 'in its roaring routine' holds admirably for today:

Periodical literature is a huge open mouth which has to be fed. ... It is like a regular train which starts at an advertised hour, but which is free to start only if every seat be occupied. The seats are many, the train is ponderously long, and hence the manufacture of dummies for the seasons when there are not passengers enough. A stuffed manikin is thrust into the empty seat, where it makes a creditable figure till the end of the journey. It looks sufficiently like a passenger, and you know it is not one only when you perceive that it neither says anything nor gets out. The guard attends to it when the train is shunted, blows the cinders from its wooden face and gives a



### PART THREE

our language goes on changing; our way of life changes, under the pressure of material changes in our environment in all sorts of ways; and unless we have those few men who combine an exceptional sensibility with an exceptional power over words, our own ability, not merely to express, but even to feel any but the crudest emotions, will degenerate.

(Eliot, 'The Social Function of Poetry')

Literature, as Ezra Pound said in one of his manifestos,<sup>4</sup>

has to do with the clarity and vigour of 'any and every' thought and opinion. It has to do with maintaining the very cleanliness of the tools, the health of the very matter of thought itself. Save in the rare and limited instances of invention in the plastic arts, or in mathematics, the individual cannot think and communicate his thought, the governor and legislator cannot act effectively or frame his laws, without words, and the solidity and validity of these words is in the care of the damned and despised *litterati*. When their work goes rotten – by that I do not mean when they express indecorous thoughts – but when their very medium, the very essence of their work, the application of word to thing goes rotten, i.e. becomes slushy and inexact, or excessive or bloated, the whole machinery of social and of individual thought and order goes to pot. This is a lesson of history, and a lesson not yet half learned.

The absence of a responsive and responsible public, and the consequence of not living in 'a current of ideas in the highest degree animating and nourishing to the creative power', will always be felt most tellingly by the artist who is thereby deprived of the critically healthy and creatively stimulating environment necessary for the making of work which has a value and meaning both in its own time and place, and permanently, acting as 'nutrition of impulse'. Society in Sophocles' and in Shakespeare's time was, says Arnold, 'in the fullest manner permeated by fresh thought, intelligent and alive; and this state of things is the true basis for the creative power's exercise, in this it finds its data, its materials, truly ready for its hand'. And James saw the reverse in his time, commenting that 'to be puerile and untutored' about literature 'is to deprive it of air and light, and the consequence of its keeping bad company is that it loses all heart'. The great artist, the really distinguished individual, will suffer, no

doubt, less in his art than others. Yet even he cannot write entirely without an audience; and the want of a reciprocal and health-giving relation between the writer and his public marks – a notable example – much of the late work of James himself, a work clearly and painfully deriving much more from the writer's own intense mental effort than from real commerce with a living environment. On the other hand, coming to too easy terms with an intellectually ingrown and complacent society has led Eliot, in his writing since *Four Quartets*, into modishness and triviality.

The worst effect will unquestionably be seen in the way in which the age makes use of its minor talent, which will always be the majority of talent and has much to do with keeping society 'fresh, intelligent and alive' or letting it become the reverse. And here the history of poetry and of poetical reputations in the last thirty years, a period in which immature talent has again and again been hailed as genius, and caught and held in an atmosphere wholly subversive and hostile to mature development, amply documents the dangers of not living in an animating and nourishing current of ideas. For as Dr F. R. Leavis put it, in discussing this very 'Poetical Renaissance',

Favourable reviews and a reputation are no substitute for the conditions represented by the existence of an intelligent public – the give-and-take that is necessary for self-realization, the pressure that, resisted or yielded to, determines direction, the intercourse that is collaboration (such collaboration as produces language, an analogy that, here as so often when art is in question, will repay a good deal of reflecting upon: the individual artist to-day is asked to do far too much for himself and far too much as an individual).

The resistance always required of the writer to his age is now of a deeper and more exhausting kind: he must write, as it were, against the public potentially so willing to do him the wrong kind of honour. The environment, and its vocal representation in the reading public, is the reverse of nourishing.<sup>5</sup>

It is inevitable, therefore, that for anyone seriously concerned for the function of criticism at the present time, the creation and maintenance of a coherent and responsible reading public must be a matter of the greatest urgency. That there is now an extraordinary amount of writing about writing is no indication that the issue is being faced. A

### PART THREE

notable aspect of the situation has indeed been the display of new literary organs, the enormous number of reviews, 'little magazines', and book sections whose production has become one of the major small industries of the century. Almost all of these have seen their function as catering for the local interests of small sections of the public, and presenting them as matters of universal concern. Almost none has been devoted to maintaining or re-creating human values in literature, or human criteria of relevance in judgement. An early (and partial) exception was the *Athenaeum*, which kept up an independent existence as a weekly from 1919 to 1921, before being submerged in the *Nation*. Under the lively if uneven editorship of John Middleton Murry, it was responsible (among much that was infuriatingly silly) for a standard of reviewing which at its best - particularly in the regular work of Murry and Katherine Mansfield - was incomparably better than anything in weekly journalism today.

Even the *Athenaeum*, however, was something of a catering agency. The first real attempt this century to create the nucleus of an influential reading public coherent enough to keep the function of criticism served at all came with *The Calendar of Modern Letters* (1925-7), a first-rate review whose early death was one sign of the difficulty of the undertaking. *The Calendar* in fact saw its purpose as the creation of such a body as had (in its own comparison) been represented by *The Quarterly*, *The Edinburgh*, and *Blackwood's*. Its position was stated bluntly in the first editorial:

In reviewing we shall base our statements on the standards of criticism, since it is only then that one can speak plainly without offence, or give praise with meaning.

That these standards represent - in so far as *The Calendar's* critics were able to call on them - a mature public attesting to the existence of a 'contemporary sensibility' is evidenced throughout in the continuously high level of response and attention expected from readers,<sup>6</sup> and in the tone of its confident appeal to a judgement embracing far more than the personal reaction of the writer. At its most explicit, *The Calendar's* relation to its reading public is brought out in Douglas Garman's excellent article on 'Audience', one of the first after Arnold to realize the importance of the audience in the creation of literature and to distinguish between poetry and various types

of pseudo-poetry which only exist 'to season the opinions which men already hold, and which out of vanity or sloth they prefer to maintain'.

The strength of *The Calendar* - which in only two years and a half yielded three anthologies of reviews and articles of permanent critical value<sup>7</sup> - is manifested not only in the quality of individual contributions (including the first appearances of Lawrence's 'Art and Morality' and 'Morality and the Novel': Lawrence was a fairly regular reviewer), but in the high level of work maintained by the various writers as a team of reviewers. It comes out at its most characteristically impressive in such a review as Edgell Rickword's of Eliot's *Poems 1909-1925*, an article whose significance lies in an exact appreciation of the importance of Eliot's work - the struggle with technique by which he 'has been able to get closer than any other poet to the physiology of our sensations' - with an insight which can pinpoint the dangerous 'personal' tendencies (the arbitrary or obstinately private collocations) to which Eliot was prone and which lessened the public availability of his poetry. The value of Eliot's contribution is thus all the more surely established and the essay, written in 1925, is an amazing achievement at a time when Eliot was everywhere greeted with bewildered or contemptuous hostility.<sup>8</sup>

*The Calendar's* weakness - seen from time to time in a rather unthinking acceptance of the counters of the poetical academy (awe in front of *Prometheus Unbound* or *Saunson Agonistes*), in a naiveté of tone (as when Muir complains that Eliot doesn't appreciate Milton and Wordsworth as much as Marvell and Dryden), and in occasional uncertainty of judgement with regard to contemporary writers (an over-estimation of Joyce and even Wyndham Lewis at the expense of Lawrence) - seems to come partly from a refusal to attempt live critical judgements of past literature in terms of present needs and aspirations as well as present viewpoint and availability; and partly in a refusal to go outside literature (in the directions in which literature leads), and thus display and strengthen the foundations of literary judgement. Possibly it is this last that lies behind the cryptic hint thrown out in the 'Valediction forbidding Mourning' in the final issue:

the present situation requires to be met by a different organization, which we are not now in a position to form.

### PART THREE

*Scrutiny* (1932-53), by far the most important and – it will prove – most influential critical review of the century, started not only with the experience of *The Calendar* behind it, but also with the immediate stimulus of Q. D. Leavis's *Fiction and the Reading Public* (1930), a book whose fully documented account of the development of popular reading habits during the hundred years or so in which fiction-reading had become largely responsible for spreading a lazy shoddiness of thought and feeling, represented a new realization of the cultural crisis of mass literacy accompanied by the collapse of a widely held community of taste and judgement. *Scrutiny*'s aim and practice were more widely and firmly grounded than those of *The Calendar*, with a concern not merely for literary values, but that their influence should be felt in a world which hardly holds literature to matter at all: the 'intelligent educated and morally responsible public' which *Scrutiny* sought to nourish was to be one which had, with its experience of a training in sensitive judgement, a real effect in fostering a free play of constructive thought on all the conditions of the human situation:

*Scrutiny* stands for co-operation in the work of rallying such a public, the problem being to preserve (which is not – need we say? – to fix in a dead arrest) a moral, intellectual and, inclusively, humane tradition, such as is essential if society is to learn to control its machinery and direct it to intelligent, just and humane ends.

(*Scrutiny*, II, iv. 332)

While first place was always given to the importance of literary culture, as the guardian of collective wisdom, the standards discovered in live contact with the literature of the present and that of the past which is vital for us today were applied in criticism of other issues in the contemporary cultural and social scene, and particularly in the educational movement with which *Scrutiny* was associated from the start.<sup>9</sup> Indeed, the whole project of *Scrutiny* involved necessarily a movement towards the resurrection of standards in education to ensure a training of general non-specialist sensibility adequate to meet the pressures of contemporary life – not only for the sake of individual well-being but to lead to a common realization of human ends, unrelated to which practical and political action is likely to be worse than useless.



The bringing of literature, and of the values inherent in it, to bear on the conditions of everyday practical affairs is something that can only happen through a public educated in this way. *Scrutiny's* main effort, then, was towards the defining – that is, forming – of a 'contemporary sensibility':

What it should be possible to say of 'the skilled reader of literature' is that he 'will tend, by the nature of his skill', to understand and appreciate contemporary *literature* better than his neighbours. The serious critic's concern with the literature of the past is with its life in the present; it will be informed by the kind of perception that can distinguish intelligently and sensitively the significant new life in contemporary literature.  
(xix, iii. 178)

The function, as an early editorial put it,

is essentially cooperative – involving cooperation and fostering it ... The critic puts his judgements in the clearest and most unevadable form in order to invite response; to forward that exchange without which there can be no hope of centrality. Centrality is the product of reciprocal pressures, and a healthy criticism is the play of these.

(ii, iv)

or if standards are only 'there' in an intelligent, educated, morally responsible public, they are only worked out and displayed in collaborative exchange between critics. In a later article Dr Leavis expanded the conception of the process hinted at above:

A judgement is a real judgement, or it is nothing. It must, that is, be a sincere personal judgement; but it aspires to be more than personal. Essentially it has the form: 'This is so, is it not?' But the agreement appealed for must be real, or it serves no critical purpose and can bring no satisfaction to the critic. What his activity of its very nature aims at, in fact, is a collaborative exchange or commerce. Without a many-sided real exchange – the collaboration by which the object, the poem (for example), in which the individual minds meet, and at the same time the true judgements concerning it, are established – the function of criticism cannot be said to be working.

(xviii, iii. 227)

### PART THREE

Standards derive from centrality (which is 'the product of reciprocal pressures'), the many-sided exchange working to eliminate the merely personal element of prejudice and eccentricity, which characterizes to some degree the initial individual response, and to develop the genuine individual judgement into an understanding of the significance of the work in the community of values upon which the culture is built. And the kind of exchange found throughout *Scrutiny* is in fact almost the only example we have of a cooperative attempt to discover and make palpable values which are essentially and broadly human and not simply those of a coterie. The initial agreement of its contributors was on *function*, on the nature of the discipline undertaken in literary criticism and its relation outside itself in the influence it can bring to bear in the world at large.<sup>10</sup> They formed in fact a group of highly intelligent common readers (whose intelligence was certainly *not* common in the usual sense), who had trained themselves in the discipline of a central but non-specialist cultural activity: they were, in short, one centre of the élite upon whose existence the survival of humane values has come entirely to depend.

*Scrutiny's* contribution to the defining of a contemporary sensibility (its firm but sensitive assessing, in the first place, of contemporary writing) depended upon a revaluation of our past literature which was pursued rigorously and intelligently. As one friendly but impartial critic put it, this work amounted to a whole new conception of the English literary tradition; and the same writer's judgement elsewhere may be allowed to stand:

Richards wrote *Practical Criticism* but *Scrutiny* was practical and criticized. Cleanth Brooks wrote notes for a new history of English poetry but in essay after essay *Scrutiny* accumulated a new history *in extenso*. Burke and Ransom extended the boundaries of critical discussion but *Scrutiny* actually occupied the territory and issued new maps.

(Eric Bentley, in *Kenyon Review*, Autumn 1946)

And as Dr Leavis himself was able to claim, not only have the main *Scrutiny* revaluations become generally current, but all the work of 'affecting radically the prevailing sense of the past' was done in *Scrutiny*.

So impressive was this achievement that it has been implied by the editor of a review with claims towards something of *Scrutiny's*

vigilance that *Scrutiny's* 'task of revaluation' had been completed, the work done and now safely docketed so that the judgements could be drawn on by those with the more urgent purpose in hand of 'responding' to the contemporary literary scene. The apparent compliment, of course, distorts the place that this radical, critical, and scholarly rewriting of English literary history had in *Scrutiny's* programme. Revaluation is not something that is done once for all, the judgements being established for all time: it is the discovery of how the literature of the past is alive in the present. As such - and because the present is always changing - no revaluation is ever final, however much permanent conditions may be pointed to: the many differences within *Scrutiny* itself testify to an understanding of this.

*Scrutiny* lasted for twenty-one years - in itself something remarkable. Its final decline and death came not directly from the hostility and neglect with which it was normally treated in more institutional quarters so much as from the dislocation caused by the war, which dispersed the contributors and destroyed the network of collaboration which had been made. *Scrutiny* outlasted the war by eight years, but 'never again was it possible', as the valedictory editorial says, 'to form anything like an adequate nucleus of steady collaborators'. This way of putting it shows immediately how important to the whole scheme was essential agreement among contributors on the function of the discipline they were engaged in. *Scrutiny* was never a haphazard collection of articles on literary matters. A breadth of interest and concern was implicit in the conception from the start, and the marked narrowing of attention which is so plain in the later issues is a sign that to some degree the world had transpired, and the literary critic was no longer to be found who could tell that he had anything important to say outside his own literary field. Fewer books were reviewed, and those on a much smaller range of subjects. Moreover articles became longer, more 'exhaustive', and at the same time less stimulating. Where earlier essays (for example, Leavis's on *Othello*) had taken one or two central issues raised by their subject to suggest lines where further inquiry would be profitable, there seemed to be a tendency towards the end to assume that the work had not been properly done unless every possible aspect had been covered, every possible approach explored. Sometimes indeed subject-matter seems to have been embarked on just for the sake of having some-

thing new to say. The opening, for example, of D. A. Traversi's essay on *Henry V*<sup>11</sup> must immediately arouse in the reader concerned for relevance a suspicious, defensive attitude:

There are, among Shakespeare's plays, those which seem to have eluded criticism by their very simplicity. ...

The implication (alas, borne out in the sequel) seems to be that Mr Traversi will now set out to remedy not only the shortage of criticism but also the simplicity. Indeed the heavyweight treatment that Shakespeare received at the hands of Mr Traversi and others seems to lead away altogether from an interest in the plays as live literature and to find its significance in the tracing of patterns of imagery almost for its own sake – an activity which is pursued quite intensively enough in universities and academic journals as it is. This kind of treatment is at times only too close in feeling and intention to such an offering (to take an example conveniently to hand) as appeared in a recent number of *Essays in Criticism*, where a contributor has ploughed through 'the structure of imagery in *Henry Richmond*' – an undertaking which immediately demonstrates the futility of engaging in literary business without a live critical sense: for the right critical deduction would have shown at the start that the subject itself couldn't maintain the interest required of the reader or rightfully demand his spending time and attention on it.

Mention of *Essays in Criticism* (founded 1950) in connexion with *Scrutiny*, however, can only be made in order to establish their essential difference, which is the difference, in general, between academic literariness uncontrolled by critical insight, and the benefit of working with a sense of relevance, always in sight of Arnold's 'central, truly human point of view'. And *Scrutiny*'s limitations and shortcomings seem in retrospect a small thing compared with the entire failure of any other journal to maintain anything like a true perception of the function of criticism at the present time.

\* \* \*

For the function of criticism to be properly served the media must be created in which individuals can carry on 'the common pursuit of true judgement'. But there must, too, be distinguished critics ready to use the occasion to its best advantage. In this, our age has been



### PART THREE

for the view that *Emma* is a great novel, and no intelligent account of its perfection of form. It is in the same way true of the other great English novelists that their interest in their art gives them the opposite of an affinity with Pater and George Moore; it is, brought to an intense focus, an unusually developed interest in life. For, far from having anything of Flaubert's disgust or disdain or boredom, they are all distinguished by a vital capacity for experience, a kind of reverent openness before life, and a marked moral intensity.

(*The Great Tradition*, pp. 8-9)

This grasp of criteria is what enabled Leavis to map out and define the significant tradition of the English novel from Jane Austen, through George Eliot, James, and Conrad, to Lawrence - which, as Leavis himself says, 'has become a fact of general acceptance ... with the implication that it has always been so'.

The appropriateness of these criteria in criticism of the novel would now perhaps be generally granted. But, as Leavis has shown in the course of practical analysis and revaluation of English poetry, they carry over into all literature, remain central to our judgement. In the sensitive and penetrating analysis of verse Leavis has certainly no master, but always his concern for 'practical criticism', for close attention to 'the words on the page', is a concern for something which far transcends the limits usually implied by these phrases: the accuracy arises out of a need to establish the relevance of a passage in the work as a whole and, by extension, the place which the work should take up in our cultural consciousness.<sup>12</sup>

Technique, in short, 'can be studied and judged only in terms of the sensibility it expresses'. The need to find and realize our contemporary sensibility should lie behind all discussions of technique, and justifies, in Leavis's case, the attention given to it.

The *locus classicus* for inquiry into the relation between technique and the feelings and attitudes which it expresses has been for the last thirty years a passage from one of the finest of Eliot's essays which has been reprinted as 'Poetry in the Eighteenth Century', in Volume IV of the present series (*From Dryden to Johnson*):

after Pope there was no one who thought and felt nearly enough like Pope to be able to use his language quite successfully: but a good many second-rate writers tried to write

something like it, unaware of the fact that the change of sensibility demanded a change of idiom. Sensibility alters from generation to generation in everybody, whether we will or no; but expression is only altered by a man of genius. A great many second-rate poets, in fact, are second-rate just for this reason, that they have not the sensitiveness and consciousness to perceive that they feel differently from the preceding generation, and therefore must use words differently.

Eliot's own work as the man of genius who altered expression is intimately bound up with that of the critic who saw that 'every vital development in language is a development of feeling as well'. The technique that has mattered in our day is the outcome of

an intense and highly conscious work of critical intelligence [which] necessarily preceded and accompanied the discovery of the new uses of words, the means of expressing or creating the new feelings and modes of thought, the new rhythms, the new versification. This is the critical intelligence manifested in those early essays: Eliot's best, his important, criticism has an immediate relation to his technical problems as the poet who, at that moment in history, was faced with 'altering expression'.<sup>13</sup>

'Never', Leavis has said, 'had criticism a more decisive influence.' The intimate connexion between Eliot's poetry and criticism was what drew attention to the truly classical statements that his early essays contain. In 'The Perfect Critic', which came out first of all in *The Athenaeum* and was reprinted in *The Sacred Wood*, Eliot noted the likelihood that the critic and the creative artist should frequently be the same person. And more recently he rightly said of his own best criticism that it consists of essays on poets and poetic dramatists who had influenced him. The essay on Marvell, for example, is a model of critical conciseness, accuracy, and suggestiveness - evaluating (with a little helpful practical analysis by the way) Marvell's own personal distinction, generalizing to probe the nature of the quality (wit) which he shared with the earlier metaphysicals and with Dryden and Pope, then back again to isolate the precise tone of its appearance in Marvell. No better introduction to a poet could be found; it leaves most of the work to be done by the reader himself, while making clear the lines which can profitably be followed up. And in so doing it makes

generalizations which open up new ways of approach to English poetry as a whole. It is hardly too much to say that this essay and its two companions in the pamphlet *Homage to John Dryden* began the whole movement of re-appraisal in which *Scrutiny* later played the most important part.

But the connexion between Eliot's decline as a poet (decline, that is, from *Four Quartets* to the subsequent plays in verse) and the frequency with which he has come to produce arbitrary and unsubstantiated critical dogmas will not seem a chance one. And just as there are forced and unrealized collocations in *The Waste Land*, as Edgell Rickword pointed out, so even in the early criticism appear ideas and doctrines (among them some that have been widely influential) which are arbitrary, being unrelated to his general critical insights or to the creative successes that seemed to lend them force. The dogma of impersonality, which began its career in 'Tradition and the Individual Talent' (see in *Selected Essays*) is the most notorious of these. In this essay, Eliot, extending the idea of the poet as the supreme representative of consciousness in his time, expels the poet's mind and individuality from having any part in the poetic process. The poet's mind is represented as

a receptacle for seizing and storing up numberless feelings, phrases, images, which remain there until all the particles which can unite to form a new compound are present together.

How this uniting happens we never learn – only that 'floating feelings' come together:

The ode of Keats contains a number of feelings which have nothing particular to do with the nightingale, but which the nightingale, partly perhaps because of its attractive name, and partly because of its reputation, served to bring together.

The mind of the poet is said during this process to be as unaffected as the shred of platinum used as a catalyst (even though somehow it 'digests' and 'transmutes' 'the passions which are its material'). We hear a good deal – here and throughout Eliot's work – of the business of poetry being to express emotions, though whose or what must remain in doubt. In the end the complete divorce postulated between 'the man who suffers and the mind which creates' opens the door for





judged. James's book on Hawthorne, his essays on Flaubert, Maupassant, and Zola (and on Arnold), Lawrence's on Galsworthy and Verga, his 'Morality and the Novel', and his *Study of Thomas Hardy* are classics of criticism which should have far more recognition than they have received.<sup>14</sup>

The parallels can be interestingly extended. Both did much practical criticism in the way of reviewing: for James and Lawrence at least, a review was an occasion for delicate and precise judgement; and the valuations they then directly made have remained astonishingly secure. James's review of *Our Mutual Friend* is in its way a masterpiece, a model of accurate and refined judgement, excellent in its tone, in the seriousness with which it treats its subject, in the way in which, while condemning Dickens's work, it enables one to see by what high standards it is being, and must be, judged. James's poise at the age of twenty-two is amazing:

Insight is perhaps too strong a word [for Dickens]; for we are convinced that it is one of the chief conditions of his genius not to see beneath the surface of things. If we might hazard a definition of his literary character, we should, accordingly, call him the greatest of superficial novelists. We are aware that this definition confines him to an inferior rank in the department of letters which he adorns; but we accept the consequence of our proposition. It were, in our opinion, an offence against humanity to place Mr Dickens among the greatest novelists. For, to repeat what we have already intimated, he has created nothing but figures. He has added nothing to our understanding of human character.

The assurance with which these generalizations are made and grounded on accurate and pertinent observations of detail in the novel is entirely convincing. An even more impressive case is the review, written nine years later, of Flaubert's *La Tentation de Saint Antoine*, particularly its magnificent ending in which James fixes permanently the deficiencies of the society which produced the book, in such a way as to make quite clear the measures against which it is found wanting:

His book being, with its great effort and its strangely absent charm, the really painful failure it seems to us, it would not have been worth while to call attention to it if it were not

that it pointed to more things than the author's own deficiencies. It seems to us to throw a tolerably vivid light on the present condition of the French literary intellect. M. Flaubert and his contemporaries have pushed so far the education of the senses and the cultivation of the grotesque in literature and the arts that it has left them morally stranded and helpless. In the perception of the materially curious, in fantastic refinement of taste and marked ingenuity of expression, they seem to us now to have reached the limits of the possible. Behind M. Flaubert stands a whole society of aesthetic *raffinés*, demanding stronger and stronger spices in its intellectual diet. But we doubt whether he or any of his companions can permanently satisfy their public, for the simple reason that the human mind, even in indifferent health, does after all need to be *nourished*, and thrives but scantily on a regimen of pigments and sauces. It needs sooner or later – to prolong the metaphor – to detect a body-flavor, and we shall be very surprised if it ever detects one in 'La Tentation de Saint Antoine'.

This measure James to a great extent found in the American society for whom he was writing (most of the best reviews were for *The Atlantic Monthly* and the *American Nation*), and which evidently provided him with an intelligence and responsiveness of a high order, on which he could continuously count. There is, in his early criticism, a sense of being secure among values which were accepted as the natural basis of a civilized society: for James's poise and self-confidence are more than personal – they are those of a distinguished individual who is nonetheless closely related to a poised and confident society (though one which he understood well enough to criticize shrewdly – see especially *The Europeans* and *Washington Square* – and which in the end failed to provide him with what, as a novelist, he needed). This feeling of knowing for whom he was writing disappears in some degree from James's later work. The criticism which James wrote at the same time as his last novels has something of the same air of having been written in unread loneliness, so strained and involved is the very process of writing. And the work is correspondingly more cautious, more hesitant even – and more distant from us. Even in the essay on Flaubert, one of his best, which has all James's admirable perceptiveness and understanding, he doesn't push his judgements to their logical conclusions:

Emma Bovary, in spite of the nature of her consciousness and in spite of her reflecting so much that of her creator, is really too small an affair. ... Why did Flaubert choose, as special conduits of the life he proposed to depict, such inferior and in the case of Frédéric such abject human specimens? I insist only in respect of the latter, the perfection of *Madame Bovary* scarce leaving one much warrant for wishing anything other. Even here, however, the general scale and size of Emma, who is small even of her sort, should be a warning to hyperbole. If I say that in the matter of Frédéric at all events the answer is inevitably detrimental I mean that it weighs heavily on our author's general credit. He wished in each case to make a picture of experience – middling experience, it is true – and of the world close to him; but if he imagined nothing better for his purpose than such a heroine and such a hero, both such limited reflectors and registers, we are forced to believe it to have been by a defect of his mind. And that sign of weakness remains even if it be objected that the images in question were addressed to his purpose better than others would have been: the purpose itself then shows as inferior.

This is excellent, not only in the directness with which the individual judgements are made, but, again, in their grounding. How fine a sense James has of what it is relevant to bring in, and how delicate a feeling for the life to which Flaubert seems to offer an insult. But James's perception and honesty have undermined the general judgement: 'the perfection of *Madame Bovary*'. The particular and the general judgements don't hang together, and Flaubert's genius, after James's criticism, is not enough to resolve the contradiction. Much the same applies, rather less obviously because the writing is more confused, to the extremely high rank that James gives to Balzac in face of very severe limiting judgements.

Like Lawrence's, James's competence as a reviewer extends over an extraordinarily wide field: his essay on Arnold remains one of the finest broad assessments we have, as well as being itself a model of taste and discretion. But it is for his work on the novel that one returns to him with most profit, and this again links him to Lawrence, in whose work too the importance of the novel is central. For James the novel must 'represent life', its province is 'all life, all feeling, all observation, all vision', the essence of its 'moral energy' is to 'survey



'when the novelist has his thumb in the pan, the novel becomes an unparalleled perverter of men and women'.

The relevance of these passages to Lawrence's own work is very clear. But the insight they show – the insight of a novelist of supreme moral openness and integrity – acts also as a marvellously sure foundation for his criticism of other novelists, and enables him to go to the heart, for instance, of the fatal weakness which makes Galsworthy so palpably second-rate, while it also accounts for his continuing popularity:

Why do we feel so instinctively that [the Forsytes] are inferiors?

It is because they seem to us to have lost caste as human beings, and to have sunk to the level of the social being, that peculiar creature that takes the place in our civilization of the slave in the old civilizations. The human individual is a queer animal, always changing. But the fatal change to-day is the collapse from the psychology of the free human individual into the psychology of the social being, just as the fatal change in the past was a collapse from the freeman's psyche to the psyche of the slave. The free moral and the social moral: these are the abiding antitheses.

Lawrence, then, all the time traces the links between the books he writes of and the wider interests that they raise, and which he brings relevantly to bear, generalizing to their presence and significance in the world itself. The relation of the novel to the life it serves is always the criterion. So it is in the brilliant short essays on Verga, where so much is said, so many openings made, Verga himself sensitively placed and the value of his work surely indicated, while the issues that his books bring to the fore are further explored and generalized; and so, on a larger scale, in the *Study of Thomas Hardy*, where the novels provide the natural occasion for some of Lawrence's most daring and impressive statements on the morality of art and the morality of life.

Lawrence's genius as a critic is one with his genius as a novelist; there is in him no division of personality: everything he deals with he approaches as 'whole man alive'. It is this which enabled him to write the finest brief statement on the nature of criticism that we have.

Literary criticism can be no more than a reasoned account of the feeling produced upon the critic by the book he is criticising. Criticism can never be a science: it is, in the first place, much too personal, and in the second, it is concerned with values that science ignores. The touchstone is emotion, not reason. We judge a work of art by its effect on our sincere and vital emotion, and nothing else. All the critical twiddle-twaddle about style and form, all this pseudo-scientific classifying and analysing of books in an imitation-botanical fashion, is mere impertinence and mostly dull jargon.

A critic must be able to *feel* the impact of a work of art in all its complexity and force. To do so, he must be a man of force and complexity himself, which few critics are ...

More than this, even an artistically and emotionally educated man must be a man of good faith. He must have the courage to admit what he feels, as well as the flexibility to *know* what he feels. So Sainte-Beuve remains, to me, a great critic. And a man like Macaulay, brilliant as he is, is unsatisfactory, because he is not honest. He is emotionally very alive, but he juggles his feelings. He prefers a fine effect to the sincere statement of the aesthetic and emotional reaction. He is quite intellectually capable of giving us a true account of what he feels. But not morally. A critic must be emotionally alive in every fibre, intellectually capable and skilful in essential logic, and then morally very honest.

(Essay on Galsworthy)

\* \* \*

In a short chapter it isn't possible to do more than sketch a few lines of approach. One cannot possibly include all those critics whose work has been influential in one way or another, or even all those to whom one can now return with some prospect of profiting by the journey. For since Eliot wrote the polemic quoted at the start, there have emphatically been 'certain books, certain essays, certain sentences, certain men, who have been "useful" to us'. So much so, indeed, that one can only be appalled at the forces at large in the world which have prevented their making the great impression on contemporary life - or even on the literary scene - which one might expect, and which comparable or lesser critics of earlier periods could certainly count on making. In the early eighteenth century, the

### PART THREE

thought of the *Spectator* and *Tatler* reviewers was the thought of the common reader ('who were common, because to live in a homogeneous culture is to move among signs of limited variety'); the influence of the incisive critical insight of Johnson was great; Coleridge's presence was felt very impressively. By the end of the nineteenth century, the effect of Arnold, of James, of Leslie Stephen, was a very much less substantial affair and had tended to become almost exclusively literary; that it had not been so before the influence of Coleridge on Mill testifies. But the situation today is very much worse than ever Arnold or James conceived. During the period covered by this book we have had the astonishing good fortune of at least three and a half great critics: it is not too much to say that their influence on the large issues of contemporary life has been negligible. Yet this influence is something that we do without at our peril.

### NOTES

1. 'The gang' - a term used of themselves by prominent members of 'the poetical renaissance', who, amongst other things, had the run of Eliot's review, *The Criterion*. Spender's autobiography, *World Within World*, is, from its title onwards, a revealing document of the operation of a metropolitan literary clique. It can hardly be recommended on other grounds.

2. In 'The Lesson of Balzac', reprinted in Edel, *The House of Fiction* (London, 1957) '... the appeal I think of is precisely from the general judgement, and not to it; it is to the particular judgement altogether: by which I mean to that quantity of opinion, very small at all times, but at all times infinitely precious, that is capable of giving some intelligible account of itself.'

3. 'Criticism', included in *The Art of Fiction*, edited by Morris Roberts (New York, 1948). Orwell's essay, 'Politics and the English Language' (reprinted in the *Penguin Selected Essays*), is an interesting extension of this theme.

4. *How to Read*, reprinted in *Literary Essays of Ezra Pound* (London, 1954). This and other of Pound's manifestos have useful propaganda material (especially 'The Teacher's Mission'), though what active criticism they contain is generally perverse. Pound's frequent impercipience and irresponsibility make even the use of his propaganda a dangerous business and liable to misinterpretation. See Leavis, *How to Teach Reading*, reprinted as Appendix II to *Education and the University* (2nd. ed.) (London, 1948).

5. 'If a poet gets a large audience very quickly, that is a rather suspicious circumstance: for it leads us to fear that he is not really doing anything new, that he is only giving people what they are already used to.' (Eliot, 'The Social Function of Poetry'.) Eliot had said in his essay on the Metaphysical Poets (1921) that 'it appears likely that poets in our civilization, as it exists at present, must be difficult. Our civilization comprehends great variety and complexity, and



this variety and complexity, playing upon a refined sensibility, must produce various and complex results.' An interesting comparison can be made between the reception of Eliot's own (admittedly difficult) poetry and that of more recent 'modern' poets, who have had it far too much their own way. And cf. a review by Edwin Muir in *The Calendar*: 'The writer who does not resist his age, defending himself against all its claims crowding in upon him and overwhelming him, will belong to the literature of fashion. The writer who refuses to realize his age is not likely to belong to literature at all.'

6. Muir's review already cited is a good - and typical - example. The difference between work like this and the reviews that Muir later wrote for *The Observer* is a significant and distressing one: it reflects very largely on what the two journals expect in their readers.

7. *Scrutinies I and II*, edited by Edgell Rickword; *Towards Standards of Criticism*, edited by F. R. Leavis.

8. 'The impression we have always had of Mr Eliot's work ... may be analyzed into two coincident but not quite simultaneous impressions. The first is the urgency of the personality, which seems sometimes oppressive, and comes near to breaking through the so finely-spun aesthetic fabric; the second is the technique which spins this fabric and to which this slender volume owes its curious ascendancy over the bulky monsters of our time. For it is by his struggle with technique that Mr Eliot has been able to get closer than any other poet to the physiology of our sensations (a poet does not speak merely for himself) to explore and make palpable the more intimate distresses of a generation for which all the romantic escapes had been blocked. And, though this may seem a heavy burden to lay on the back of technique, we can watch with the deepening of the consciousness, a much finer realization of language...' (*Calendar*, II, pp. 278-9).

9. A glance at the contents of a typical issue illustrates the range tackled: for instance, Vol. II, No. 4 contains essays on Burns (John Speirs) and on Swift (Leavis); on the Scientific Best Seller (J. L. Russell); 'What shall we teach?' (Denys Thompson); 'Fleet Street and Pierian Roses' (Q. D. Leavis). The books reviewed included three popular books on art, *Music and the Community*, Baden Powell's autobiography, *Change in the Farm*, and books on anthropology, history, and sociology as well as a number on more strictly literary topics. Nor was this variety ever allowed to become indiscriminate.

The most important product of this educational movement was Leavis's *Education and the University*, a book of great and central significance.

10. Cf. 'The Kenyon Review and Scrutiny', *Scrutiny* XIV. II. 136: 'Scrutiny has no orthodoxy and no system to which it expects its contributors to subscribe. But its contributors do, for all the variety represented by their own positions, share a common conception of the kind of discipline of intelligence literary criticism should be, a measure of agreement about the kind of relation literary criticism should bear to "non-literary" matters, and, further, a common conception of the function of a non-specialist intellectual review in contemporary England. They are, in fact, collaborators.'

The work of Yvor Winters, as being that of an impressive intelligence

### PART THREE

apparently isolated from collaborative exchange, is the most notable case of a fresh and vigorous taste and judgement, which, while aspiring to be much more than individual, have too often remained obstinately personal and idiosyncratic. His work is however of great interest, strikingly original and often penetrating, particularly noteworthy in a scene in which reputations are too easily made and taken for granted.

11. Vol. ix, No. iv. His *Coriolanus* essay (vi. 3) is a different matter. I owe to Mr J. M. Newton much of my understanding of these trends in *Scrutiny* and elsewhere.

12. '... to insist that literary criticism is, or should be, a specific discipline of intelligence is not to suggest that a serious interest in literature can confine itself to the kind of intensive local analysis associated with "practical criticism" - to the scrutiny of the "words on the page" in their minute relations, their effects of imagery, and so on: a real literary interest is an interest in man, society and civilization, and its boundaries cannot be drawn.' Leavis, *Scrutiny*, xiii, i, 78.

13. Leavis, 'T. S. Eliot's Stature as Critic', *Commentary* (New York), Vol. 26, No. 5, November 1958, a valuable essay from the point of view of both its author and its subject. It contains a very fine treatment of the whole doctrine of 'Impersonality'.

14. James's and Lawrence's criticism has never been properly collected, though in Lawrence's case there is a useful volume edited by Anthony Beal, *Selected Literary Criticism* (London, 1955), which contains all the essays mentioned in this chapter as well as much of the Hardy and the *Studies in Classic American Literature*. The Galsworthy essay and one or two others are in the Penguin *Selected Essays*; many more appear in *Phoenix* (new edition, London, 1961). James's Hawthorne (and Lawrence's *Studies*) is reprinted in Wilson, *The Shock of Recognition* (London, 1956). James's own collections *French Poets and Novelists*, *Partial Portraits*, and *Notes on Novelists* have long been out of print; and the only readily available work now is in Mordell, ed., *Literary Reviews and Essays* (a compendious anthology of James's excellent early reviews) (Grove Press, 1957), Edel, *The House of Fiction* (London, 1957), and perhaps still Roberts, *The Art of Fiction* (London, 1948).

# THE POETRY OF W. H. AUDEN

R. G. COX

*Senior Lecturer in English Literature, The University of Manchester*

ONE could expect fairly general assent to the statement that of living poets Auden (b. 1907) ranks next in importance to Eliot. When, however, we ask just how near is 'next' and what is the precise nature of the importance, opinions at once diverge. He has no universally accepted masterpieces, nothing as central as *The Waste Land* or *The Tower*, and there is little agreement either about the relative success of his poems or the best way to describe their nature. Auden, we hear, is the Picasso of verse; Auden is mainly a poet of general ideas; Auden is primarily a satirist; Auden's poetry is fundamentally romantic; Auden is most successful in light verse. Some of this is due to the variety of stages that his thought and feeling have passed through in thirty years and to the immediate sensitiveness with which he has registered the changing moods and opinions of his time. For many of his contemporaries there is a sense of being directly and personally implicated in his poetry. Such topical urgency may lend a spurious liveliness to work which later appears dated and ephemeral, and it would seem that Auden's younger readers today show some tendency to be bored by the social and political concerns of the thirties and to question their permanent interest as poetic themes. With the problem of sifting out the mere journalism from Auden's work go fundamental questions of pre-suppositions and belief – psychological, moral, political, and religious. At a more technical level there is a constant experimenting with new forms and manners. And perhaps most essentially confusing to the critic is the presence throughout of a peculiarly deep-seated inequality and unevenness, cutting across all the changes in thought, subject-matter, and general attitude.<sup>1</sup> Having regard to the variety of stages through which Auden's work has passed, it seems best to take a broadly chronological view of his development.

Auden's first volume, published in 1930 when he was twenty-three, made an immediate impact. Here was unquestionably a new

### PART THREE

talent, the voice of an individual sensibility alive in its own time and capable of vigorous expression. Everywhere there were striking and memorable phrases: 'gradual ruins spreading like a stain', 'spring's green Preliminary shiver', 'Events not actual in time's unlenient will', 'brave sent home Hermetically sealed with shame'. Imagery of unusual force was often matched with expressive and moving rhythms:

O watcher in the dark, you wake  
Our dream of waking, we feel  
Your finger on the flesh that has been skinned: ...

The song, the varied action of the blood  
Would drown the warning from the iron wood  
Would cancel the inertia of the buried:

Travelling by daylight on from house to house  
The longest way to the intrinsic peace,  
With love's fidelity and with love's weakness.

The originality was of course tempered by a normal proportion of the derivative: it is easy to find echoes here of Eliot, Edward Thomas, Wilfred Owen, Emily Dickinson, Robert Graves, Laura Riding, and perhaps the Pound of Mauberley:

Issued all the orders expedient  
In this kind of case:  
Most, as was expected, were obedient,  
Though there were murmurs, of course;

as well as of Skelton, Old English poetry, and the sagas. Less healthy signs were an excessive dependence on purely personal association and a frequent use of private jokes and allusions. The difficulty of some of these poems seems far beyond what is demanded by the depth or complexity of the thought to be expressed. Some of it is a trick of over-elliptical grammar and syntax: some of it can be cleared up by reading the psycho-analytical writings in which Auden was so deeply interested at this time, but there remains much that looks merely irresponsible. Christopher Isherwood has recorded<sup>2</sup> Auden's early habit of constructing poems out of good lines salvaged from poems that his friends had condemned, 'entirely regardless of grammar or sense'. We need not take this too literally, but the suggested

attitude is revealing. However, this was, after all, a first volume and it still seems reasonable that its positive originality and its promise should have received the main stress. If the feeling for words and imagery could be controlled by a fuller and profounder organization of experience there was every reason to expect a great deal.

Meanwhile the themes and atmosphere were new and exciting, however much the genuine feeling might seem mixed with adolescent elements. The sense of a doomed civilization, the references to disease and the death-wish symbolized as a mysterious Enemy, the imagery of guerilla warfare, ruined industry, railheads, and frontiers, had not yet become the stock-in-trade of all up-to-date verse as they were to a few years later – a point that modern readers may easily forget. And in *Paid on Both Sides*, the 'charade' which so curiously mingles the heroic and modern worlds, the sagas, and the spy-story, Auden seems to penetrate at times to a level of something like universal human tragedy. The most successful of the *Poems* are perhaps xi, the typical landscape with symbolic overtones subsequently called 'The Watershed'; ii, the archetypal quest poem now entitled 'The Wanderer'; iii, the address of the Life Force to modern man later given the whimsical caption 'Venus will now say a Few Words'; and xvi, the long personal meditation on the element of dissolution in modern culture, which, in spite of some awkward passages of elliptical grammar not unfairly described by Mr John Bayley as 'pidgin English', has an unusual accent of personal sincerity and maturity in its better parts. The opening paragraph arrests the attention with a powerful contrast:

It was Easter as I walked in the public gardens  
 Hearing the frogs exhaling from the pond,  
 Watching traffic of magnificent cloud  
 Moving without anxiety on open sky –  
 Season when lovers and writers find  
 An altering speech for altering things,  
 An emphasis on new names, on the arm  
 A fresh hand with fresh power.  
 But thinking so I came at once  
 Where solitary man sat weeping on a bench,  
 Hanging his head down, with his mouth distorted  
 Helpless and ugly as an embryo chicken.









'Lighter poems' in *Another Time* (1940) provides instances: why in volume after volume should Auden have gone on reprinting 'Victor' and 'Miss Gee'? He has always championed light verse – even editing an Oxford Book of it in 1938 – as a proper use of talent and an antidote to Victorian over-solicitude about poetry, but it has often betrayed him into a peculiar uncertainty of tone and recourse to irony of the self-protective kind.<sup>6</sup> 'The Wives', an early poem which survives in the short version used in *The Dog Beneath the Skin* (1935), seems to metonymically unsure how serious it intends to be. An allied uncertainty affects some of the political satire: the once popular 'A Communist to Others' (reprinted without title in *Look, Stranger!* (1936) but dropped from later collections) is typical in its hesitation between virulent intensity and facetious exuberance.

Auden's more serious poetic output of the thirties is to be found in the two volumes *Look, Stranger!* (entitled in the U.S.A. *On this Island*) and *Another Time*, with the verse sections of *Journey to a War* (1939). As compared with the first poems these show less taut bareness of language, less elliptical compression, and less awkwardness; but at the same time something has been lost in pressure and urgency of feeling. The technique has more surface competence, and this can give at its best a greater ease and fluency, but it sometimes emerges as a smooth slickness which provides a ready mask for irresponsibility or the absence of a deeper organization. That often-quoted song 'Our hunting fathers', for example, owes rather too much to sheer rhetorical vigour and assurance (borrowed, perhaps, partly from Yeats). It appears to combine subtle complexity with epigrammatic logic in a way that analysis cannot quite substantiate:

Our hunting fathers told the story  
Of the sadness of the creatures,  
Pitied the hunts and the lack  
Set in their finished features;  
Saw in the lion's intolerant look  
Behind the quarry's dying glare,  
Love raging for the personal glory  
That reason's gift would add,  
The liberal appetite and power,  
The rightness of a god.



THE POETRY OF W. H. AUDEN

Who nurtured in that fine tradition  
Predicted the result,  
Guessed love by nature suited to  
The intricate ways of guilt?  
That human ligaments could so  
His southern gestures modify,  
And make it his mature ambition  
To think no thought but ours,  
To hunger, work illegally  
And be anonymous?

The general meaning is fairly clear: 'Love' must of course be taken as something like instinctive energy, or the Life Force: it has vague overtones from psycho-analytical theory and constitutes the main positive value explicitly recognized in Auden's earlier work. The 'result' in the second stanza is presumably the result of the tradition, not the result of love's achievement of reason's gift, but why then insist on the modification of love's southern gestures by 'human ligaments'? The important contrast would seem to be that between the 'fathers' and the present generations, and surely 'love' must have been embodied in 'human ligaments' in both? One may find answers to these questions individually, but the fact is there are, throughout, various loose ends of possible meaning not completely organized. If we rule them out the poem becomes a simpler statement of Marxist or Freudian doctrine than it appears at first: if not, it must be seen as a less unified whole.

Technical facility, indeed, comes to seem Auden's chief danger henceforward. Poem after poem contains brilliant or powerful lines but is less successful as a whole because he has not been able to resist the irrelevant elaboration, the chasing of too many hares at once, the smart epigram, or the multiplication of self-conscious ironies. Too many possibilities present themselves as he writes, and he accepts them without adequate discrimination. Some of his methods lend themselves particularly to these dangers. The illustration, for example, of a general state or mood by a series of revealing details or particular instances can sometimes become a mere catalogue. The acknowledged inequality of 'Spain' arises chiefly from the list of activities typical of the present and future, where almost any item, one feels, might have something else substituted for it, yet at its best the poem focuses sharply on the immediate crisis:

THE POETRY OF W. H. AUDEN

Who nurtured in that fine tradition  
Predicted the result,  
Guessed love by nature suited to  
The intricate ways of guilt?  
That human ligaments could so  
His southern gestures modify,  
And make it his mature ambition  
To think no thought but ours,  
To hunger, work illegally  
And be anonymous?

The general meaning is fairly clear: 'Love' must of course be taken as something like instinctive energy, or the Life Force: it has vague overtones from psycho-analytical theory and constitutes the main positive value explicitly recognized in Auden's earlier work. The 'result' in the second stanza is presumably the result of the tradition, not the result of love's achievement of reason's gift, but why then insist on the modification of love's southern gestures by 'human ligaments'? The important contrast would seem to be that between the 'fathers' and the present generations, and surely 'love' must have been embodied in 'human ligaments' in both? One may find answers to these questions individually, but the fact is there are, throughout, various loose ends of possible meaning not completely organized. If we rule them out the poem becomes a simpler statement of Marxist or Freudian doctrine than it appears at first: if not, it must be seen as a less unified whole.

Technical facility, indeed, comes to seem Auden's chief danger henceforward. Poem after poem contains brilliant or powerful lines but is less successful as a whole because he has not been able to resist the irrelevant elaboration, the chasing of too many hares at once, the smart epigram, or the multiplication of self-conscious ironies. Too many possibilities present themselves as he writes, and he accepts them without adequate discrimination. Some of his methods lend themselves particularly to these dangers. The illustration, for example, of a general state or mood by a series of revealing details or particular instances can sometimes become a mere catalogue. The acknowledged inequality of 'Spain' arises chiefly from the list of activities typical of the present and future, where almost any item, one feels, might have something else substituted for it, yet at its best the poem focuses sharply on the immediate crisis:



Who nurtured in that fine tradition  
 Predicted the result,  
 Guessed love by nature suited to  
 The intricate ways of guilt?  
 That human ligaments could so  
 His southern gestures modify,  
 And make it his mature ambition  
 To think no thought but ours,  
 To hunger, work illegally  
 And be anonymous?

The general meaning is fairly clear: 'Love' must of course be taken as something like instinctive energy, or the Life Force: it has vague overtones from psycho-analytical theory and constitutes the main positive value explicitly recognized in Auden's earlier work. The 'result' in the second stanza is presumably the result of the tradition, not the result of love's achievement of reason's gift, but why then insist on the modification of love's southern gestures by 'human ligaments'? The important contrast would seem to be that between the 'fathers' and the present generations, and surely 'love' must have been embodied in 'human ligaments' in both? One may find answers to these questions individually, but the fact is there are, throughout, various loose ends of possible meaning not completely organized. If we rule them out the poem becomes a simpler statement of Marxist or Freudian doctrine than it appears at first: if not, it must be seen as a less unified whole.

Technical facility, indeed, comes to seem Auden's chief danger henceforward. Poem after poem contains brilliant or powerful lines but is less successful as a whole because he has not been able to resist the irrelevant elaboration, the chasing of too many hares at once, the smart epigram, or the multiplication of self-conscious ironies. Too many possibilities present themselves as he writes, and he accepts them without adequate discrimination. Some of his methods lend themselves particularly to these dangers. The illustration, for example, of a general state or mood by a series of revealing details or particular instances can sometimes become a mere catalogue. The acknowledged inequality of 'Spain' arises chiefly from the list of activities typical of the present and future, where almost any item, one feels, might have something else substituted for it, yet at its best the poem focuses sharply on the immediate crisis:

### PART THREE

On that arid square, that fragment nipped off from hot  
Africa, soldered so crudely to inventive Europe,

On that tableland scored by rivers,  
Our fever's menacing shapes are precise and alive.

Other technical mannerisms which sometimes get out of hand are the surprising simile and epithet. The first, which is often an effective source of expressive vitality:

such a longing as will make his thought  
Alive like patterns a murmur of starlings  
Rising in joy over wolds unwittingly weave

sometimes degenerates into a kind of compulsive nervous tic: 'And lie apart like epochs from each other', 'Encased in talent like a uniform', 'Anxiety receives them like a grand hotel', 'added meaning like a comma'. The second is that peculiar feature of Auden's style which often concentrates all the more striking part of his meaning into the adjectives, or into the tension between an adjective and the noun it qualifies. Edwin Muir, reviewing *Another Time*,<sup>8</sup> objected that Auden used the adjective to express a controversial attitude to things rather than the qualities of things, but Mr Hoggart<sup>9</sup> has reasonably argued that this adjectival comment may function as a play of wit and irony, bringing experiences into new relationships – as perhaps in 'the habit-forming pain', 'eternal and unremarkable gestures Like ploughing or soldiers' songs', 'Death's coercive rumour', 'the low recessive houses of the poor'. It must be admitted, however, that often the adjective adds nothing or merely injects a perfunctory sophistication: 'the necessary lovers touch', 'the striped and vigorous tiger', 'the luscious lateral blossoming of woe', 'the flower's soundless hunger'.

With an increasing tendency in the later thirties to general intellectual comment, there went a remarkable fondness for personifying abstract qualities. Some lines in 'A Summer Night 1933' evoking

evenings when  
Fear gave his watch no look:  
The lion griefs loped from the shade  
And on our knees their muzzles laid  
And Death put down his book







that Auden applies Rilke's symbols and techniques to his own anti-aesthetic ends and emphatically human concerns. Even here he remains the generalizing moralist:

We envy streams and houses that are sure  
But we are articted to error; we  
Were never nude and calm like a great door,  
And never will be perfect like the fountains;  
We live in freedom by necessity,  
A mountain people dwelling among mountains.

These lines from the last sonnet 'In Time of War' call to mind a technical device present in Auden from the first but strongly confirmed by Rilke's influence - the use of geography and landscape to symbolize spiritual and mental states:

Lost in my wake the archipelago  
Islands of self through which I sailed all day ...

To settle in this village of the heart ...

This, too, is a device that can be overworked:

Or money sang like streams on the aloof peaks  
Of our thinking ...

He hugged his sorrow like a plot of land ...



Our plans have all gone awry  
 The rains will arrive too late,  
 Our resourceful general  
 Fell down dead as he drank . . .

Elsewhere there occur some jarring transitions of tone: it is difficult to see what is gained by the Gilbertian element in the song of the Wise Men or the excessively exuberant nastiness of the Voices of the Desert. Among the more impressive parts are the Annunciation song and Mary's lullaby in the Manger scene, but on the whole the apparent intellectual and doctrinal intention is far from being adequately realized.

*The Age of Anxiety*, the 'Baroque Eclogue' of 1948, is again experimental both in substance and style. Through the minds of four characters meeting by chance in a New York bar in wartime Auden attempts to create a general modern consciousness – rootless, isolated, insecure, obscurely dominated by fear, guilt, and the awareness of failure. The verse throughout is highly artificial, an adaptation of old alliterative forms, handled as usual with great virtuosity, but seldom appearing inevitable or unselfconscious, and often showing signs of strain in the choice of words to maintain the sound-pattern ('our dream-wishes Vert and volant, unvetoes our song'). As always there are striking phrases ('the light collaborates with a land of ease') and the occasional memorable expression of a profounder insight:

We would rather be ruined than changed,  
 We would rather die in our dread  
 Than climb the cross of the moment  
 And let our illusions die

But the general unsatisfactoriness remains: as Mr G. S. Fraser has remarked, in this poem 'the theme of our awkward malaise was all too faithfully mirrored in the elaborate maladroitness of handling'.<sup>14</sup>

Auden's work of the last decade is found in the two partly overlapping volumes *Nones* (1951) and *The Shield of Achilles* (1956).<sup>15</sup> These give a modern rendering of most of the moods and qualities of his earlier work. The technical ingenuity continues in a number of

experiments with assonance and internal rhyme and in the appearance of a new long line, rather loose and informal, mostly used for discursive reflection and lending itself rather too readily to diffuseness. It is even found linked with the manner of an essay or broadcast talk, so that a poem will begin 'I know a retired dentist who only paints mountains'. The example comes from the sequence of 'Bucolics', meditations on 'Winds', 'Mountains', and so on which are sometimes witty but sometimes sink to the merely whimsical. More than one poem tails off into an uneasy flippancy like the last line of 'Lakes': 'Just reeling off their names is ever so comfy'. More effective use of landscape and 'the spirit of place' is found in the Horatian *tour de force* 'Ischia', or 'Air Port' with its expression of modern rootlessness, or in what is perhaps the best-known poem of this group, 'In Praise of Limestone'. This uses a favourite geographical symbol to convey insights into psychology, history, and man's place in the scheme of things:

Not to be left behind, not, please! to resemble  
The beasts who repeat themselves, or a thing like water  
Or stone whose conduct can be predicted, these  
Are our Common Prayer ...

and the limestone landscape becomes finally a symbolic aid to imagining 'a faultless love Or the life to come'.

Auden is still fond of the generalizing aerial view of civilization, as in the 'Ode to Gaea' or 'Memorial to the City' with its vision seen by the 'eyes of the crow and the eye of the camera'. Unfortunately the crow has to be 'on the crematorium chimney' and the sketches of historical epochs in terms of the ideal city of each have the facile quality of some of the earlier biographical epigrams. Similarly the old difficulty of pastiche appears once more: in 'The Proof', for instance, the bemused reader, catching some echoes and suspecting more, wonders what a parody of Tennyson imitating Shakespeare ('When stinking Chaos lifts the latch') has to do with Pamina and Tamino. Something of a new quality appears in the title poem of *The Shield of Achilles*, where Thetis, looking over Hephaestus's shoulder with traditional expectations as he engraves the shield, is confronted with a vision of modern inhumanity stated with considerable directness and force:

The mass and majesty of this world, all  
 That carries weight and always weighs the same  
 Lay in the hands of others; they were small  
 -And could not hope for help and no help came ...

This poem is unusual in presenting tragedy without comment: in these volumes an orthodox Christian view is usually in the background if not explicit. The most ambitious attempt at poetry directly on Christian themes is the sequence *Horae Canonicae*, where the seven traditional Church offices provide the framework for a Good Friday meditation on the modern world and the human situation generally. Inevitably there are echoes of Eliot, suggesting comparisons which tend to be damaging:

This mutilated flesh, our victim,  
 Explains too nakedly, too well,  
 The spell of the asparagus garden,  
 The aim of our chalk-pit game; stamps,  
 Birds' eggs are not the same, behind the wonder  
 Of tow-paths and sunken lanes,  
 Behind the rapture on the spiral stair,  
 We shall always now be aware  
 Of the deed into which they lead ...

Here the restless internal rhyming, too, is typical of the general over-conscious experimenting. It is only occasionally that we feel this to be properly controlled by the profounder thoughts and concerns that the poet is clearly trying to express, and the tone is frequently as uncertain as ever: in the culminating stanza of 'Compline', for example, we find:

... libera  
 Me, libera C (dear C)  
 And all poor s-o-b's who never  
 Do anything properly, spare  
 Us in the youngest day when all are  
 - Shaken awake ...

No more than any other of the longer works can the *Horae Canonicae* sequence be said to succeed as a whole.

Auden's latest work, in fact, leaves us with the same problem of unevenness on our hands that has arisen at every stage in his career.

It comes to seem a fundamental quality of his talent, almost a necessary condition of his creative activity. He can always be relied on to be more interesting, lively, provocative, wide-ranging, psychologically penetrating, technically skilful, and ingenious than most of his contemporaries. He has given us a small number of successful poems and a great many incidental and fragmentary brilliances. But he has never gathered up and concentrated all his powers in a major achievement, and never quite fulfilled the promise of the first volumes. This is not merely the obstinate prejudice of those who, in the special Auden number of *New Verse* twenty-two years ago, were taken to task for refusing to recognize that a poet's development might be twisted and obscure and that 'a wet day in April is not the end of summer'. It is Auden's most sympathetic interpreters today whom we find doubting, even after the fullest possible survey of his poetic range and quality, whether he can be claimed as a major artist. He remains a peculiarly representative figure whose work and career raise the important question: what is it in the present relation of the poet, his critics, and his public which apparently makes it more difficult than at any earlier time for genuine talent to grow to its full stature?

## NOTES

1. A further grave complication is Auden's habit of making numerous textual alterations and revisions at different re-printings. The whole question has been investigared in detail by Joseph Warren Beach in *The Making of the Auden Canon*. References to titles added to earlier poems at a later date are taken from the volume of *Collected Shorter Poems, 1930-44* (1950).

2. In a contribution to the *New Verse* special Auden number (November 1937).

3. An interesting analysis of this poem appeared in an article on 'Maxim and English Poetry' by D. A. Traversi, *Arena* I, p. 199 (1937).

4. In *The Present Age from 1914*, p. 121.

5. E.g. John Bayley in *The Romantic Survival*, A. Alvarez in *The Shaping Spirit*.

6. The point was discussed in a number of reviews of Auden's early work by F. R. Leavis (*Scrutiny* III, 76; V, 323; IX, 200, and see also 'This Poetical Renaissance' in *For Continuity*).

7. Richard Hoggart, in his *Auden, an Introductory Study*, gives a helpful commentary on the poem but does not, I think, quite solve the problem.

8. In *Purpose* XII, 149 (1940). The same number contains an essay by Auden on Thomas Hardy, whom he claims as his 'poetical father'.

THE POETRY OF W. H. AUDEN

9. *Auden, an Introductory Study*, pp. 90-2. I am indebted to the whole chapter on Auden's technique, which raises many interesting points.
10. See the review by R. O. C. Winkler, *Scrutiny* x, 206.
11. In an article 'Late Auden: the satirist as lunatic clergyman', *Summer Review*, Winter, 1951.
12. See the essay 'Reluctant Admiration' in *The Apothecary's Shop*.
13. L. C. Knights in an essay on Bacon (*Explorations*, p. 110).
14. See 'Auden's Later Manner', in *Vision and Rhetoric*.
15. A later volume published in the U.S.A. has not yet reached this country.





lower-middle class. Simply in that shift, the process of social change is plain enough. Snow, of course, is not the only witness to the results of the process – one needs *Anglo-Saxon Attitudes* and *Lucky Jim* as well – but he does effectively qualify the complacent, Forward-With-The-People, version of it, without obliging us to accept Waugh's helpless disgust. (See the opening pages of *Brideshead Revisited*.) As Edward Hyams remarks, 'People forget that the Managers began their revolution in the second year of the war'.<sup>1</sup>

### *Evelyn Waugh* (b. 1903)

Evelyn Waugh's first novel, *Decline and Fall*, appeared in 1928; his most recent, *The Ordeal of Gilbert Pinfold*, in 1957. Today, he is the author of fourteen novels, a collection of short stories (1936), several travel books in the thirties, a study of Rossetti (1928), and a biography of Edmund Campion (1935). The novels fall into two well-defined groups: up to and including *Put Out More Flags* (1942); and from *Brideshead Revisited* (1945) forwards. The second group is less homogeneous than the first. There are one or two satires in the earlier manner of which *The Loved One* (1948) is the best known; two novels in a trilogy about the war; and a historical novel, *Helena* (1950), in which the author's Roman Catholicism prominently figures. For reasons which will appear, it is possible to discuss Waugh as a pre-war novelist. It is certainly necessary to do so in this chapter.

Waugh has objected to the common description of his early work as social satire on the ground that this is impossible in a society which provides the satirist with no acceptable norms of behaviour, attitude, and belief.<sup>2</sup> The analysis is arguable, though, in view of the negative emphasis of the novels themselves, it is worth bearing in mind. But in the first instance, 'satire' is hard to do without. The kind of observation – 'Mrs Ape watched them benignly, then, squaring her shoulders and looking (except that she had really no beard to speak of) every inch a sailor, strode resolutely to the first-class bar' – the recourse to parody – 'you will find that my school is built upon an ideal – an ideal of service and fellowship. Many of the boys come from the very best families' – the stretches of dead-pan quotation from real speech, the sequence of fantastic and grotesque events, run in the end to an impression reasonably described in the Penguin editions as 'pungent satire upon the coteries of Mayfair'. It seems pointless to



(see the sentence in brackets, above). If the passage accepts anything, it is only the honest Ishmaelites who ate the European colonists raw.

*Scoop* and *Black Mischief* move into a slightly different world from that represented by *Lady Metroland* and the coteries of Mayfair, though the two are not unconnected, of course. But in doing this, they only extended to new material a manner and an attitude already characteristic.

It was called a Savage party, that is to say that Johnnie Hoop had written on the invitation that they were to come dressed as savages. Numbers of them had done so; Johnnie himself in a mask and black gloves represented the Maharanee of Fookapore, somewhat to the annoyance of the Maharajah who happened to drop in. The real aristocracy, the younger members of the two or three great brewing families which rule London, had done nothing about it. They had come on from a dance and stood in a little group by themselves, aloof, amused but not amusing. Pit-a-pat went the heart of Miss Mouse. How she longed to tear down her dancing frock to her hips and dance like a Bacchante before them all. One day she would surprise them all, thought Miss Mouse.

(*The Echo*, p. 55)



milieu anything like a criticism. In *Decline*, Paul Pennyfeather is very explicitly *not* allowed to do so (see pp. 187-8). In *Vile Bodies*, Adam Fenwick-Symes is, like his predecessor, the passive victim of his group, but in a subtler way. He belongs to the coterie, but even though he suffers from the trivializing folly of its attitudes, he still accepts them. The action details his unsuccessful attempts to get rich so that he can marry Nina. With her, he shares a feeling towards which we are expected to be sympathetic. Yet neither this feeling (nor even the old Edwardian order represented by Anchorage House) is set up in opposition to the demonstrated meaninglessness of their social life. Adam fails to get rich, Nina marries someone who is, and Adam ingeniously cuckolds her husband by pretending to be that husband on a Christmas visit to Nina's home. War interrupts this idyll, and the novel concludes ('Happy Ending') with Adam reading a letter from Nina in the midst of 'the biggest battlefield in the history of the world'.

As a sort of reason for all this misery, Waugh offers in the mysterious person of Father Rothschild, S.J. this comment on the Bright Young Things: 'But these people have got hold of another end of the stick, and for all we know it may be the right one. They say, "If a thing's not worth doing well, it's not worth doing at all." It makes everything very difficult for them' (p. 132). And an exchange between Adam and Nina at a crisis in their fortunes appears to make the 'difficulty' more general:

'Adam, darling, what's the matter?'

'I don't know ... Nina, do you ever feel that things simply can't go on much longer?'

'What d' you mean by things ... us or everything?'

'Everything.'

(p. 192)

It would, of course, be impressive to describe this as an intimation of class-decadence, but the view is so restricted, the analysis so slight, and the treatment so external, that 'class' is not a possible term. It is never more than a question of Society.

We have to conclude, I think, that in these two novels the writer is reporting a situation which, strictly, he cannot interpret. His attitude towards its particular meaninglessness is one of half-fascinated, indulgent horror. He makes gestures of protest, but does not see

them through. On the other hand, he is far from a ruthlessly amoral exploration. The neutral assurance again and again exposes sudden crystallizations of hatred and disgust; and the story moves easily towards the grotesque and the nightmarish. But one thing distinguishes the two earlier satires: a quality of nihilistic acceptance which refuses to escape into the general securities – the country-house, patriotism, 'culture' – hinted at (though never wholly accepted) in the later ones. This makes for a peculiar tension which, already slackening in *Scoop* and *Put Out More Flags*, disappears altogether from the post-war writing (except in *The Loved One*). Waugh now allows himself to take up attitudes for which in the early period he had nothing but distaste.

Waugh's only novel of the decade, not merely satirical, is *A Handful of Dust* (1934). It is not possible to discuss it in detail, but since it is sometimes referred to as a minor classic, one comment is necessary. We seem to be reading about a typical relationship of upper-middle-class society in the thirties. Yet when we explore for the real substance of the marriage and its breakdown, try to realize the motives and sympathies of wife, lover, and husband, as the seriousness of their situation appears to invite us, we run up against a blank silence. The neutral presentation seems designed to baffle and confuse the development of those very responses it begins by invoking. Our sympathies are engaged, but never exactly. We are manipulated into accepting as 'real' characterizations and substantial moral involvements people and a story that are scarcely there at all. Except in a kind of brilliant faking, Waugh never goes beyond the external accuracy of observation which served him in the satires. We are left, as a result, with an extreme statement of personal disillusion, but masked as an impersonal analysis and an objective account.

Waugh then represents the pre-war period in a peculiar way. His novels do not provide insights into the special aspect of his time that he knows, but they recognize its symptoms. (Compare *Vile Bodies* with Greene's *A Gun For Sale*.) The situation he speaks about is a fragmentary social experience scarcely related at all to the encompassing society and culture to which it belonged. Auden and Huxley, writing from a comparable condition, generalize and interpret in a way that sometimes disguises and even falsifies. Waugh avoids this. He seems admirably careful to submit to the discipline of a

faithful report. But the report itself is really serving the rigidities of fixed emotion ('those vile bodies'); a state of affairs which can obstruct 'meaning' quite as effectively as an over-zealous pursuit of it.

### Graham Greene (b. 1904)

Graham Greene's writing career is almost exactly contemporaneous with Evelyn Waugh's. His first novel, *The Man Within*, was published in 1929; and he is still writing today. In 1959, he is the author of seventeen novels; or, excluding the first three – which the author himself described as *juvenilia* – and starting with *Stamboul Train* (1932), fourteen main titles. Six of these belong to the thirties, three to the forties, and five to the fifties. Full novels alternate with 'entertainments' (Greene's name for his less serious works) more or less evenly over the whole thirty years. There is an early volume of poems (1925). There are collections of short stories, essays critical and autobiographical, travel books, and, recently, plays.

Unlike Waugh, Greene has always been a highly topical writer. The depression, international capitalist monopolies, war-scare, survivors from torpedoed ships, diamond-smuggling by neutrals, spy-scare, the Cold War, anti-Americanism – this list of headlines comes only from *England Made Me* (1935), *The Heart of the Matter* (1948), and *The Quiet American* (1955); and even if Greene's topicality extended only to the sensations of the national dailies, it would still be worth stressing. This is one of the ways in which Greene has been popular, without being any the less serious. But the sense for news penetrates more deeply than this. Greene is also very sensitive to climates of opinion, and in his novels these emerge, not through spokesmen for (quaintly) period-views, but through their mood, their general feeling about the topical events made use of by the plots. In *A Gun For Sale* (1936), for example, the fear of war is neither simply a device for the story, nor an emotion certain people experience: it emerges also from the way the scene of the action is presented, from the buildings, the streets, the anonymous crowds who fill them. Its presence 'in the air' of the novel is underlined in a contrast with *Vile Bodies*, whose conclusion adopts the same topical fact of war-scare, without any of Greene's compelling social actuality. Waugh's 'biggest battlefield in the history of the world' belongs to a nightmare appropriate enough





this condition, and at the same time to account for its formal obscurity, is to consider the actual art which is its vehicle.

In *Brighton Rock* (1938), the first of Greene's Catholic novels, the corrupt lawyer, Mr Drewitt, to whom Pinkie applies for advice about his marriage, fittingly quotes Mephistopheles. 'Why, this is Hell,' he says, 'nor are we out of it', and the remark applies, of course, to the career of the damned Pinkie. But it also indicates a feature of the novel less explicit than its theology. The presentation of Brighton, full as it is of convincing period detail, can be called 'realistic', but 'hell' is also a very fair description. Apart from Ida – and the novel's argument sets her apart – Pinkie's individual response to the scene is completely endorsed throughout the novel, even when the viewer is Hale. The novel's 'realism', that is, cooperates with Pinkie's state of mind by the language it uses and the currents of feeling this sets going, through, in a word, its mood. This mood has been compared with the relevant sections of *The Waste Land*, and the comparison underlines not only a common emphasis on seediness, sterility, and despair, but a common method of establishing it. Like Eliot, Greene works through metaphor to convey a particular range of feeling which ratifies, almost proves, an unstated general view of life. (E.g. 'Jug, jug to dirty ears' – the last two words overpower the whole implication of what has gone before, and somehow exclude protest or dissent.) Yet unlike the poem's, the novel's mood emerges not within a formal poetic organization (with all the reservations that that brings into play), but underwritten by the apparently unquestionable guarantees of 'realism'. This is not to imply that in *Brighton Rock* Greene is 'a poet' trying to be 'a novelist' and failing. *Brighton Rock* is a successful novel, and this part of its structure contributes to that success. Greene's earliest work, *Stamboul Train* for example, is over-metaphorical, but as he develops, Greene turns not to the 'symbolist' inventions of Lawrence, but to the analytical procedures of James and Conrad: distanced characterization, significant description, multiple point-of-view narrative, 'credible' plots. The ambiguous 'realism' is, in a sense, Greene's particular addition to these methods. In *Brighton Rock* the effect of this is to objectify Pinkie's moral condition. Brighton/Hell exists both in its own right, and as a vehicle for Pinkie's character, a projection of his sterile guilt. This balance works both ways, so that the personal guilt and the particular character de-

fine themselves in 'real' social environments. Neither environment nor moral condition predominates; neither is the cause of the other; and as a result, both together, Pinkie and Brighton, combine in the novel to suggest an absolute human condition, of no particular social or historical identity. The modified 'realism' helps both to make topical and to generalize Pinkie's total estrangement from the meaning of his life. Greene, of course, goes on to interpret this condition theologically. But novels can be more socially conscious than novelists, and this is the case here and with a number of Greene's novels; Pinkie's condition is socially meaningful, not because he is the victim of a particular kind of social outrage which Greene, blinkered by his religion, refuses to name. It is his failure to belong to his own experience that matters. Loss of meaning, loss of control, loss of contact, not simply with others, but, except in crude glimmerings, with one's own actual experience - there is no need to elaborate the reasons for this having been felt more generally, more acutely, and more persistently in our society between 1930 and 1945. What Greene diagnoses as an absolute human condition - 'why, this is hell, nor are we out of it' - existed as an experienced social fact. And as a result, Greene's sense for topical mood was able to connect, and connect significantly, with his own themes. The same reason may account in his more recent work for the falling-off in relevance of this kind.

What, of course, makes it hard to identify the social consciousness of Greene's novels is either the exclusion in the early ones of any explicit comment, or, in the later ones, the insistence of the theology. More and more, this works to convert the novels into parables with just sufficient contemporary detail to make them apply. That does not mean that *ipso facto* the Catholic novels fail; or that their theses can, either for agreement or dismissal, be disengaged from the situations they interpret. But it does make possible two critical questions: does the official interpretation evade or confuse the meaning of the novel's situation? or if it does not, as an argument, how seriously is it being offered? The first question applies to *The Heart of the Matter*, which I discuss below, but since *The Power and The Glory* (1940) is also a candidate for Greene's best novel, it is worth applying the second question there. Clearly, its thesis is appropriate enough to the situation, but in at least one instance it seems disingenuously offered. The

'radical' policeman is completely routed in his arguments with the 'reactionary' priest, but only for two reasons which have little to do with the real content of the argument. The policeman's position is a parody of what it is supposed to be, and the priest's arguments get their real force from the priest's experience. That experience, especially in the prison scene, is so much finer, so much more vivid than the hollow interchanges of the subsequent argument, that it seems to justify the novelist's glaring partiality for the priest's view of the case. In a slightly different way, the same holds for some of the earlier novels of the thirties. Admittedly there is no thesis there, but the richness of scene and characterization accumulates an effect powerful enough to underline the novelist's refusal to be explicit about it.\* *It's A Battlefield* (1934) and *England Made Me* (1935), certainly studies in the moral absolutes of betrayal, guilt, and loneliness, are also novels about identifiable social and political conditions. But these conditions are never identified in the novels, and this withholding portends the cruder juggling of the issues in *The Power and The Glory*. The final stage in this process seems to be *The End of the Affair*, where an over-articulate thesis dominates characters and setting so completely that 'social-documentary padding' does seem the correct description for the presence of the blitz, and wartime London. From this point of view, then, *The Heart of the Matter* is Greene's most successful novel because it best coordinates argument and example; better even than *Brighton Rock*, where the plan is more unevenly realized, perhaps because it is only an 'entertainment'. Thus, the West African colony is familiar enough in being English, because a colony; but strange, because for the same reason it is not England. The scene is better able to provide Scobie's tragedy with its objective guarantee; yet the details of this successfully inhibit any irrelevantly 'social' interpretation of his state of mind. (Put Scobie in London, and his troubles either dissolve, or generalize themselves into recognizable social tensions. Compare the Assistant Commissioner in *It's A Battlefield*.)

Scobie's experience hovers in a kind of no-place between the condition of personal nightmare, subdued only because he feels he has chosen it; and that of a general waste land in which, though they do not know it so thoroughly as Scobie, all human beings share.

\* But perhaps the climate of literary opinion in the thirties accounts for this reticence.



up Bond Street. He couldn't tell that this was one of those occasions a man never forgets: a small cicatrice had been made on the memory, a wound that would ache whenever certain things combined – the taste of gin at midday, the smell of flowers under a balcony, the clang of corrugated iron, an ugly bird flopping from perch to perch.

(p. 4)

In each case, a combination of physical accidents generates a mood and a point of view whose main consciousness is Scobie. Thus, because the prison's 'lack of liberty' is, by metaphor, an actual smell, it emerges not as a particular social condition with particular causes, but as an irreducible fact of life. The argument of the first quotation grows, therefore, from a context which makes it seem the only possible one. It is in this way that Scobie's personal morality is projected on to an environment from which, at the same time, it seems inevitably to grow. In the most extreme cases, the result is nightmare. Here is Scobie's act of self-damnation:

Father Rank came down the steps from the altar bearing God. The saliva had dried in Scobie's mouth: it was as though his veins had dried. He couldn't look up: he saw only the priest's skirts like the skirt of the mediaeval war-horse bearing down upon him: the flapping of feet: the charge of God. If only the archers would let fly from ambush ... But with open mouth (the time had come) he made one last attempt at prayer, 'O God, I offer up my damnation to you. Take it. Use it for them', and was aware of the pale papery taste of his eternal sentence on the tongue.

(p. 272)

As well as being a poetic statement of mood and attitude, *The Heart of the Matter* narrates the history of certain human relationships. Scobie's isolation, his sense of being moral in relation to a world which is immoral, and yet immoral in relation to the morality of God, has to be proved there as well. And since he is, in a sense, an Everyman, the voice of the moral man's complaint against the nature of life itself, his story must protect him from over-specific charges against his character as an individual man. Here Greene runs into difficulties: the story purports to be an unbiased record, concealing nothing significant to the moral situation. Yet there is more than one person



may be right or wrong – that is not the point – but to insinuate it into Scobie's story by way of plot-contrivance (however subtly and skillfully) is to invite at least the charge of limited seriousness. Put beside the more candid intensities of local feeling and particular vision (e.g. the last of the above quotations, Scobie's reaction to the dying child, or to the dawn-sea) the argument of the plot seems rather slabby.

The point is impossible to discuss fairly in short space, but because it emerges so intimately from Greene's method as a novelist, it has to be mentioned. Greene's art attempts to reconcile the narrow strength of a very specialized vision – Kenneth Allott has described Greene's world as 'an underworld' – with an easily accessible novel structure whose purpose is to generalize the vision. At the level of what I have called 'mood', the reconciliation succeeds, but beyond that it begins to involve serious evasions and ambiguities. And this is certainly one of the ways in which Greene is a minor novelist. A 'major' treatment of his underworld would involve either a different quality in the supporting argument or a fuller commitment to the special vision – in either case, a very different kind of novel. On the other hand, the ambiguities evidently spring from the writer's belief that the condition he diagnoses is absolute, and demands an expression of itself which says so. So, at this point, the discussion can only go forward by questioning the belief, i.e. by going beyond the currently accepted limits of criticism.

### C. P. Snow (b. 1905)

In 1959, C. P. Snow is the author of seven novels in a sequence still to be completed, whose title will be that of the first-published member of the sequence, *Strangers and Brothers* (1940). (*The Search*, which first appeared in 1934 and was reprinted in 1958, does not belong to this sequence.) In the preface to his most recent novel, *The Conscience of the Rich* (1958), Snow describes the series as having two aims: to give 'some insights into society' by relating the stories of several individuals over a period of time, roughly 1920 to 1950; and to follow the moral growth of Lewis Eliot, the narrator of these stories, as he experiences the struggle for power, both private and public, within his own life and in that of his friends. Each novel can be separately read, but they are all closely linked, not only by their common themes, but by the persons, incidents, and places used in the





blown through by the winds of scepticism or individual protest or sense of outrage which were our native air. And those forms were not only too cut-and-dried for us: they would have seemed altogether too rigid for nineteenth-century Englishmen. The evidence was all about us, even at that wedding-party: quite little things had, under our eyes, got fixed, and, except for catastrophes, fixed for good.

(*Homecomings*, 1956, p. 283)

He was propounding the normal Foreign Office view that, since the amount of material was not large, it was the sensible thing to distribute it in small portions, so that no one should be quite left out; we should thus lay up credit in days to come. The extreme alternative view was to see nothing but the immediate benefit to the war, get a purely military judgment, and throw all this material there without any side-glances. There was a whole spectrum of shades between the two, but on the whole Eggar tended to be isolated in that company and had to work very hard for small returns. It was so that day. But he was surprisingly effective in committee; he was not particularly clever, but he spoke with clarity, enthusiasm, pertinacity and above all weight. Even among sophisticated men, weight counted immeasurably more than subtlety or finesse.

(*The Light and The Dark*, 1947, pp. 333-4)

There was a chance, how good I could not guess, that the [atomic] pile would still work quickly; it meant giving Luke even more money, even more men.

'If you're not prepared for that,' I said, hearing my voice sound remote, 'I should be against any compromise. You've either got to show some faith now - or give the whole thing up in this country.'

'Double or quits,' said Rose, 'if I haven't misunderstood you, my dear chap?'

I nodded my head.

'And again, if I haven't misunderstood you, you'd have a shade of preference, but not a very decided shade, for doubling?'

I nodded my head once more.

Rose considered, assembling the threads of the problem,

the scientific forecasts, the struggles on his committees, the Ministerial views.

'This is rather an awkward one,' he said. He stood up and gave his polite youthful bow.

'Well,' he said, 'I'm most indebted to you and I'm sorry to have taken so much of your valuable time. I must think this out, but I'm extremely grateful for your suggestions.'

(*The New Men*, 1954, pp. 123-4)

This social documentation is only one aspect of these three novels. Into each account of public events Snow interweaves a personal story; and this structure roughly corresponds on the one hand to the social insights, and on the other to the struggle for power. But the private histories are the least successful parts of these novels. Snow's powers of characterization, limited chiefly to speech-style, and very often amounting to little more than a few typical phrases per character, are scarcely adequate to the demands of his scheme. The novels are very thin in their physical and emotional life. Thus, Eliot's difficult relationship with his first wife as told in *Homecomings* (1956), or equally difficult friendship with Roy Calvert (*The Light and the Dark*, 1947) are present in the novels only through Eliot's personal account of his own feelings. His responses are 'there', but not the objects which are supposed to account for them. This failure in realization is important enough in itself, but it extends farther, to the narration of the public events as well. The various incidents, considered apart from the local use that Eliot makes of them, resolve into mere aggregate of social-documentary detail. Eliot is therefore the only explicit source of each novel's judgements, so that a contradiction between his essential attitudes and the ostensible scheme of the novels cannot be compensated elsewhere. The success of the scheme stands or falls by Eliot's ability to unify and interpret its material. In two ways it seems to me that he fails to do this, so that the necessary connexion between his history and the social insights he mobilizes is never forged.

The first dissonance between Eliot and 'the material' concerns the theme of power. On this issue, Eliot is principally an interested observer, who rarely passes judgements, except in the special cases of his own renunciations (see *A Time of Hope* and *Homecomings*). Ostensibly, the illustrative incidents are left to speak for themselves,

and on a number of occasions it is possible to discern the submerged workings of an attitude which, since it is not Eliot's, can only be the novelist's. This attitude can be described as a quickened feeling for the actual process of decision-taking, as distinct, that is, from the content or the meaning of the decision. In, for example, *The Light and The Dark*, Snow recounts the arguments for and against the decision to launch regular night-bombing against the Germans. Bomber Command's view is that it will boost civilian morale in such a way that the great expense in men and materials will be worthwhile. Eliot and, more importantly, his friend Francis Getliffe think the expense too great. Getliffe is an influential man because of his war-work on radar, and he throws himself into the business of pressuring and lobbying the appropriate committees. However, the decision goes against him, and because he continues the fight to the very last moment, he hopelessly identifies himself with a losing cause. As a result, he is relegated to unimportant work. Now, in the meanwhile, Eliot's friend Roy Calvert, who already knows about the heavy losses from conversations with Eliot, decides to become a bomber pilot. His personal life (whose tensions the novel is mainly concerned with tracing) has reached the point at which he no longer cares whether he lives or dies. Bomber Command provides him with an honourable solution; and so, in due course, he becomes one of the 'losses who might have fought longer' and his friend Eliot is left alone with his memories and grief. This, very briefly, is the point at which the public decision, whose mechanics we know in some detail, interlocks with the private history. But in doing so, its *public* significance disappears, to be replaced by its *private* effect on three individual lives. Calvert dies *privately*, not as a patriot; Eliot mourns him as a friend, not as a type of the heavy losses; Getliffe is demoted; and as everybody knows, the bombing went on. This implies (and I say 'implies' because it is a case of what is not said, rather than what is) that the only kind of individual participation in public life is at the level, not of responsibility, but of power. Eliot's neutrality (unawareness?) at this point offers no other solution. Choice, control, understanding: these ideas are confined to the private histories, which are lived out in a public context determined on quite different principles. In their private lives some people stoically accept the fact that they are victims of uncontrollable forces. In public, however, other people make decisions which direct

### PART THREE

these forces one way or another to the more or less severe detriment of many private lives. But the two kinds of decision remain separate, and their meeting in Eliot's narration of his experience only underlines their hiatus. Eliot's attitudes belong to the sphere of private life; the public history remains significantly uninterpreted.

The second dissonance must be more briefly mentioned. Eliot's deepest response to the complexities of personal friendship is that of Arnold: 'Yes! in the sea of life enisled . . . We mortal millions live alone'. And since Snow is unable to provide Eliot with a context which speaks up for the opposite feeling (i.e. that we mortal millions live socially if we live at all), Eliot's morality dominates the novels, becomes in fact the felt morality of the novelist, and this considerably magnifies the importance of his failure to oppose Eliot through the realization of other and different characters. It is this failure that makes Snow's ambition to show realistic 'insights into society' virtually impossible to achieve - except, that is, in the external manner of the above quotations. Necessarily, the novelist of 'social insights' whose presentation of social experience is so remote and so static as Snow's defeats his own hope. In the last analysis, the sequence seems less to be about society than about Lewis Eliot's personal journey through various sections of the English class-structure.

### NOTES

1. *Taking It Easy* (1958), p. 5.
2. F. J. Stopp, *Evelyn Waugh: Portrait of an Artist* (1958), cited pp. 194-5.
3. K. Allott and M. Farris, *The Art of Graham Greene* (1951).

# METAPHOR AND MATURITY: T. F. POWYS AND DYLAN THOMAS

DAVID HOLBROOK

*Tutor, Bassingbourn Village College, Cambridgeshire*

TODAY, as for the last two decades, T. F. Powys (1875-1953) is a neglected writer, the creator, in Dylan Thomas's words, of 'Biblical stories about old sextons called Parsnip or Dottle'. Thomas (1914-53), on the other hand, who exploited the urge to 'make up in the Tavern the time we have lost in the Mosque' (in Matthew Arnold's words), captured a wide audience and a considerable reputation which it is still *infra dig* to question - even though one doubts whether he is really *read* more than Powys.

The difficulty in discussing Dylan Thomas is to know what it is one is discussing, since the words are usually small clue. It is remarkable how such critics as Mr Bayley in *The Romantic Survival* and Mr Elder Olson in *The Poetry of Dylan Thomas* are able to produce what appear to be, one would think, incontrovertible expositions of Thomas's verbal weaknesses, without noticing that they have virtually demolished his claim to be considered a serious artist. Here, for instance, is Mr Olson:

... curiously enough he never achieves lucidity; the obscurity wrought by his early terseness slips into the obscurity wrought by his final verbosity ... working upon us too obviously, even exciting himself unnecessarily ... [in *The Death of A Child*] ... he does not suffer imaginatively the experience of the child, does not share in it in the least; he sees the pain and the horror from without, and the resolution he reaches is for him, not the child ... [his] imagination could transport him anywhere, through all space and all time; but it is also true, that wherever it takes him, he sees nothing but himself ...

*(The Poetry of Dylan Thomas, Elder Olson)*

Yet Olson can continue:

he is a Keats, a Byron, a Yeats, or an Eliot ... these limitations ... must not be taken seriously.









... He moved with the maggots in the dew-wet carcass of a rabbit ... He tickled naughty Nellie till she blamed the fleas ... The footed sound was His. The soft longings of Mrs Cuddy - ?

(*The Left Leg*)

And there is a morbidity in his work not unrelated to that of Dylan Thomas in his dealings with love. At his best, Powys draws a wonderfully sensitive distinction between lust and love, particularly in the love story of Jenny Bunce and Luke, and with his vindication of what W. I. Carr has called the 'sanctities' of marriage.<sup>2</sup> But elsewhere he is often at odds with himself. Michael's love for Tamar, for instance, in *Mr Weston's Good Wine* is presented merely as a matter of physical appetite, and our response becomes confused:

'I know her well. She has a brown birth-mark about the size of a sixpence just a little above her navel ... She has a cherub face and pleasant breasts ...' etc.

The words 'pleasant' and 'merry' are often used by Powys, as in some of the more erotic of our folksongs, to mean appetizing, 'a dish for Time to feed on' (Michael's words); they are an attempt to give the irony of Tamar's 'sacred' love a greater depth. The trouble with the relationship between Michael and Tamar, however, is that it is not ironically enough presented, but offered with an uncertainty that almost undermines the book's best positives. There is too little but vicarious relish, and the archangel becomes too much like a Leopold Bloom. Similarly with Mrs Nicholas Grobe the playfulness seems hardly to come, in its grotesque naïvety, from the same pen as the love of Luke and Jenny. Mrs Grobe's love is presented, but not placed, as childish:

She would ... display herself in so wanton a manner that Mr Grobe's heart would beat with violence and his hand would turn over the pages of the Holy Bible with hurried zeal.

And thus throughout Powys there is a strong sense of his inward struggle to justify sexual passion against some revulsion which tends to express itself in whimsy or morbidity. Although Powys' power resides in his apprehension of love as being that which is closer to awareness of death (because its sensory rapture

### PART THREE

our chief earnest of our physical mortality), he is often guilty of an offensive preoccupation with 'dead maidens', and reveals a corpse-exhuming tendency, as if to imply savagely that this is all love comes to in the end, the loss of the self in passion as in the grave:

'Tis as if a wild creature, who do talk like a fool, did hold 'ee.  
'Tis as if cold death grinned at 'ee, but 'ee don't never heed him.

When the Mumbys are shown the body of the Ada Kiddle they raped, Powys is revealing the consequences of greed, lust, and 'German philosophy', that bears out the Mumbys' 'belief that they may have all the women and cigarettes they need, and pay for nothing' ('"The Devil!" said Mr Weston a little hastily'). In the following passage from *Unclay*, however, he is offering us an offence to love. His intention is to shock us into becoming aware of the conditions of human life:

[John Death is talking] 'I know a great deal about women ... I have been the first with a number of them. They lie in bed and call to me to come to them. Of course I tantalise them a little. One cannot always be potent in an instant when one is required ... I give them pains for their pennies. Their tortured bodies cry and groan and drip blood because of my sweet embraces ...

(*Unclay*)

All he succeeds in doing here is to make both love and death appear revolting: the writing is obsessional and only weakens our powers of living, by evoking recoil. This is not the Powys who accepts death as inevitable, or approaches - as he can approach - the 'tragic view' of acceptance; death is here rendered as some derisory, hideous perversion of 'the powers'.

At his best, however, Powys's originality resides in his recasting of certain traditional English forms of word-art for the purposes of dealing with our twentieth-century experience. He re-creates something of the essence of the English rural tradition, and adapts a mode derived from Bunyan, the Psalms, the Liturgy and the Bible, Herbert, ballads and folksong, something of Shakespeare's drawing on the language of ordinary people as in *A Winter's Tale*, and something of the pre-Christian tragic view which emerges in such a work with

wild roots as *Wuthering Heights*. In his writing the mode becomes sophisticated – he has his admiration for Jane Austen and for learned divines such as Law too. And yet, of course, his intentions are very different from many of his sources, such as Bunyan, which are devotional. Or it is as if we took from folk culture its feeling for the universal patterns of life, for the permanent conditions of life, and its prevalent stoical belief in death as oblivion ('a ground sweat cures all disorders'), and forgot its Christian intrusions. Yet it seems that in life, Powys, like Hardy, could not detach himself from the organized practice of the Christian religion, and went to church, like the only penitent, to make the responses.

In *Mr Weston's Good Wine* (1927), Powys's modes are the servants of a poetic, metaphorical inquiry into the most troubling aspects of human life, chiefly those which relate to man's attempts to explain the meaning of his life, 'before the worms have him'. *Mr Weston's Good Wine* is virtually devoted to pondering, as a poetic allegory, the teleological problems suggested by Mr Weston himself speaking into his pint mug in the village inn:

I form the light and create the darkness: I make peace and create evil: I, the Lord, do these things.

This is set beside Landlord Bunce's

'Be'en wold Grunter or God Almighty who do all the mischief in Folly Down?'

Is God or Adam responsible for sin? Shall we blame God, or the stories we have invented, to explain away the conditions of our existence? The village clergyman produces the artist's own solution: 'God is indeed different from Mr Grunter ... for He doesn't exist ... we must blame ourselves.' The comedy of this book therefore has a subtlety bred out of the very ambiguity of Powys's religious attitudes – for, whatever his uncertainty of faith, his poetic hold never falters. Even if God were to exist as he exists in man's poetry we would not be able to blame God for these the inescapable conditions of our life. It is, in effect, a discussion of the relevance of our conceptions of God, our experience of God, to the way we live.

Mr Weston's intervention in the life of Folly Down has a strong

moral pattern, and powerful and unambiguous consequences – the morality is quite clearly a morality. The value chiefly indicated in the book is love. The water in Landlord Bunce's well is turned to wine (as at the wedding at Cana), and Luke Bird's union with Jenny Bunce emerges as primary and substantially superior to Tamar's somewhat ironically treated sacred love, in its potent and tender phallic qualities. It has a quality of approval of love in the whole being, delineating how the egotisms of lust are surmounted in Luke, that is rare in English writing. It is truly erotic; and this is no mean achievement.

In all that Luke did now he only thought of, and saw Jenny. What he ate was Jenny, when he cut the yellow butter it was her flesh that he divided, and he spread her flesh upon his bread. In his little room there was only himself and emptiness. Nothing, nothing upon earth, could fill that emptiness but only Jenny.

It is by stages of such plain, simple and *meant* delicacy that Powys can lead us, having removed our shoes, as it were, to the sanctified consummation of the courtship:

Instead of a pipe of red wine there was, behind the curtain of the van, Jenny Bunce, fast asleep. Luke didn't wait a moment; he raised her in his arms and carried her into his cottage, and laid her down upon his bed. As he laid her there, she partly awoke, and nestled against him most lovingly. She sat up, smiled at him, and began to undress.

Mr Weston softly closed the cottage door – he had joined their hand in the parlour. He now stepped into the Ford car and drove away.

It is almost too decent for us to bear, and it is the kind of simple plainness which causes sophisticated readers to react unfavourably.<sup>3</sup>

The light wine brings a thirst for the dark: love leads us to a maturity which accepts death. Powys's other preoccupation is with acceptance of death, and this is enacted around the clergyman who has lost his faith, the Reverend Grobe. Mr Grobe loses his faith because his wife died in a futile accident (actually occasioned by the child Tamar's infatuation for angels). While Jenny and Luke drink the light wine of love, the mature man is eventually brought too (he is a

'good customer' - a fit recipient for the moods of God) to an appetite for the dark wine, for death as oblivion. Death, as conceived by Mr Weston, the creative artist of creation, is the perfect end to the picture: and the chief grief of Mr Weston himself is that he may not yet drink of it - until the Last Day when he shall drink of it and all his customers too. Meanwhile, he says,

'I would willingly exchange all that I am with any simple child that lives and dies in these gentle valleys and is then forgotten ...'

The poetic seriousness is mingled easily with a controlled comedy which often walks with astonishing security over the pitfalls of facetious blasphemy: Mr Weston has never been inside a church because there the customers order his wine, but never 'pay' - they refuse to accept the awareness his wine brings.

It is this compassionate humour with its comic ironic depths that makes *Mr Weston's Good Wine* so much the most interesting of Powys's works. The savage assault on the reader that tends to mar *Mr Tasker's Gods* (1924) with its naïve offering of a social worker as a positive, the whimsy of *Kindness in a Corner* (1930), the morbid nastiness of much of *Fables* (1929; or *No Painted Plumage*, as it was called in 1934), and the rustic affection of the mode of Powys's writing itself - all these are transcended, the novel is a masterpiece in spite of them all. The tone is mostly assured, because the moral seriousness is firm, and the progress of the book sustained by an artistic certainty. This certainty has to do with the presence of Mr Weston himself. Interestingly he is virtually the embodiment in the poetic drama of man's capacities for God-like compassion for all Creation, and its limitations. He is not, like Eliot's bullying 'guardians' or his Sir Harcourt Reilly, a mere megaphone for the author's sermonizing: he has a life of his own, as God made in man's image, with man's failings: 'He seemed a man somewhat below an ordinary man's size...'

Himself an ironic-comic portrayal of those hopes of fame, acquisition and eternity by which men delude themselves, Mr Weston does not delude himself, for he reads Psalm 104 to Luke ('The earth is satisfied with the fruit of thy works ... wine that maketh glad the heart of man ... Thou takest away their breath, they die ... Thou renewest the face of the earth'):

'You are sure you don't think too poorly of that?' he asked Luke when he sat down again.

'No,' replied Luke, 'I like it all very much indeed.'

'I only meant it as a picture,' said Mr Weston, 'but had I the proof in my hands now I would certainly, when I think how much has been said against my writing, alter the last verse.'

'I know what you would say,' said Luke smiling. 'You would say, "Let the critics be consumed out of the Earth".'

Mr Weston nodded. He regarded Luke for a little while in a most living manner.

That which is not 'criticism' – that which makes a 'good customer' – is awareness of the conditions of human life, including an acceptance of love and, finally, death. This is the maturity towards which Powys, at best, leads us. Much is brought to the characters, and to us, by parable, by a vignette exemplum of the kind Bunyan's interpreter shows Christiana, for instance of a dog killing a hare:

Luke Bird blushed. His own heart accused him. The second time in the space of five minutes he had wished to be as brutal as the Mummys, and when he saw the fierce dog spring upon the tired hare, the dog had only done what he wished to do to Jenny Bunce. He would have done worse than the dog. The greyhound had left the hare dead upon the grass, but Luke would have torn Jenny limb from limb in the excess of love....

The recognition of our inward nature, and of the admixture in us of love, lust, the impulse to cruelty and destruction is valid, serious, and important, in the art-fable – and transcends what seems to be Powys's acceptance of Freud's theories of our needs to 'curb' impulses to 'excess'. Again, the recognition of death is done by Powys in a mature way, though it has sometimes the uncertainties of an ambivalent attitude: here for instance it seems a bitter mockery, rather than a mature acceptance of the inevitable that Mr Weston offers Nicholas Grobe:

Mr Weston took a chair beside Mr Grobe ... 'I have brought another wine with me ... when you drink this wine you will sorrow no more.'

'My Alice,' said Mr Grobe, 'shall I see her, shall I see her, if I drink your black wine?'





### PART THREE

of thing which makes one claim this novel as a considerable work. It represents the culmination of Powys' approach to 'the tragic view' - this, 'the weeping clod', is the inevitable end of all passion: yet here it is the untimely consequence of greed and lust. It makes Grunter-Adam abandon his wish to be thought Great as a seducer, or to cling to man's ambition to supplant God in his craving for power and responsibility: moulding and destroying may be left to the Creator. We must resign. Yet the Creator Himself, here, weeps compassionately over the life, death, suffering, and evil He has Himself created. Coming together with the tender rendering of the love of Luke and Jenny, it represents a claim for the sanctity of love, its creation out of the complexities of lust and our feeble nature being a triumphant human potentiality: and it represents the artist's approach to 'the tragic view' in a mature, achieved form.

### NOTES

1. It is unfortunate that in the first serious critical book written on Powys, Mr H. Coomber offers us so much of *Unclay* for approval. Thus it seems to me extraordinary that he can comment approvingly on the passage I have quoted on p. 422; for if one accepts it, it makes pretty much nonsense of the rest of Powys.

2. 'T. F. Powys', by W. I. Carr, *Delta* No. 19, 1960.

3. As a student said to me, she had read James Hadley Chase 'without blushing', but Powys was 'filthy'. Chase is prurient: Powys is erotic.

# THE TWENTIETH-CENTURY BEST-SELLER

P. N. FURBANK

THE best-seller (and here we shall only be dealing with best-selling fiction) forms a large but very recognizable category somewhere between literature proper, in the sense in which the word has been used elsewhere in these volumes, and mere pulp fiction. *Uncle Tom's Cabin* is a best-seller in our sense, perhaps the most celebrated there has been. It is also a 'steady-seller'. The best-seller, according to S. H. Steinberg, is

a book which, immediately on, or shortly after, its first publication, far outruns the demand of what at the time are considered good or even large sales; which thereafter sometimes lapses into obscurity, making people wonder why it ever came to the front; but which sometimes graduates into the rank of 'steady-sellers'.

(*Five Hundred Years of Printing*, 1955)

The strongest objection to the 'mass' organization and dissemination of culture is that it may foist off on the public something that it would never have positively wanted. Its menace is the menace of the rival, the thing which is too dead and empty to have intrinsic interest, but yet is thrust down people's throats until they become accustomed to triviality and expect it. This cannot fairly be said of the best-seller, and even less of the steady-seller, for they have a life of their own and express strong needs and deeply felt beliefs.

What, then, makes a best-seller? There is first of all its intrinsic appeal; and later in this chapter I try to analyse one or two favourite themes and patterns in best-selling writing in the hope of throwing light on this. Otherwise, a number of more or less accessory factors come in: the effect of advertisement, of reviewing, of the novel's being made into a film or television play or becoming a paper-back, of its success with the circulating libraries or its adoption by a book-club, of some exceptionally deliberate and successful promotion on the author's part, or finally of pure luck - the novel is

middlebrow readers, and the fear that they stifle individual curiosity and choice is probably not very real, for this class of readers is not adventurous at the best of times.

The paper-back has similarly opened an enormous new market to the best-seller. The competition for paper-back rights is now very fierce, and they are often sold even before a book has been completely written, let alone published. The major paper-back publishers usually issue a popular novel reprint in a first edition of about 30,000 to 50,000. The real formula for success, however, is publication as a paper-back immediately after a successful film version – as may be seen from the case of John Braine's *Room at the Top*, which sold half a million paper-back copies in seven months.

Finally, it may be asked, to what extent does the best-selling novelist ever deliberately manipulate his public, in the sense of foisting off on it what he knows to be inferior? It is usually said that to have true best-seller appeal a writer must believe passionately and absolutely in what he writes. But of course there may very well be absolute conviction at one level and calculation at another. In her indispensable *Fiction and the Reading Public*, Q. D. Leavis quotes a number of popular authors who discuss their own artistic intentions. I shall content myself here with a passage from Denis Wheatley's Cantor Lecture to the Royal Society of Arts (1953), which nicely catches the mixture of innocence and cunning with which much best-selling writing is done:

The novelist ... must settle on the type of people he wishes to interest with his book.

Is it to be the more intellectual public that appreciates fine prose and takes pleasure in following the involved ramifications of the human mind; or is to be some section of the vast public which gets its weekly supply of light literature mainly from what used to be known as the twopenny libraries? If the former, he must concern himself with some unusual personality, the eternal triangle, or a family, and with these people's psychological reactions to certain more or less normal events ...

Of course there is a limited number of authors who have succeeded in having the best of both worlds. John Buchan, Graham Greene, Dorothy Sayers, Nevil Shute, Agatha Christie, and Francis Heslop spring to mind. ... I, too, have been

most fortunate in that respect, but only owing to a most laborious technique which consists of writing two separate books and dovetailing them into one another.



The rise of the best-seller in England may conveniently be dated from the mid nineties, when the convention of the three-volume novel was at last abandoned. The implications of this event were two-fold: it made possible the commercialization of fiction on a scale hitherto impossible, but plainly called for by the new reading public brought into being by the Education Act of 1870; and at the same time it opened the way for the sort of aesthetically or socially 'advanced' novel which would not have found a publisher previously. A novel which would only appeal to the few could be published, and might sell sufficiently, at the price of six shillings without the aid of the circulating libraries; and the short novel, which many serious novelists of the period wanted to attempt (in imitation of the French) need not now be padded out to three-volume length. This event, therefore, both expresses the separating paths of popular and highbrow fiction and assisted this separation, and thus inaugurated the modern fictional scene, with its double or multiple standards and its divided audience.

The best-seller, and especially the middlebrow best-seller, is in many ways a special genre, and not merely a special version of an accepted genre of literature. It explores a special tract of country, and has particular techniques and a peculiar potency of its own. Its apologists usually say, in various tones of voice, that at least it has powerful emotional force, and unlike highbrow fiction it does tell a story. There is more to it than that, though; the best-seller has laws of its own, and much ingenuity and novelty in obeying them. There is, first, a feature that has always belonged to sentimental fiction, but has been developed and elaborated in many ways in our period. Mary Berry (Horace Walpole's Miss Berry) once very sensibly pointed it out.

The false pictures given of human life in most novels, and which alone (in my opinion) makes them dangerous reading for young people, is, not that the sentiments and conduct of the hero and heroine are exalted above the common level of

humanity, for there is no well-conceived novel which is not read by many an ingenuous and noble mind, who can reflect with pleasure that they have acted on some occasion with all the high sense of honour, the exalted generosity, the noble disinterestedness described in their author. But what they must not look for in real life, what they would expect in vain, what it is necessary to guard them against, is supposing that such conduct will make a similar impression on those around them, that the sacrifices they make will be considered, and the principles on which they act understood and valued, as the novel writer, at his good pleasure, makes them.

(*Extracts of the Journals and Correspondence of Miss Berry from the year 1783 to 1852*, ed. Lady Theresa Lewis, 1865)

Popular sentimental novels, that is to say, tend to take the form of a 'congratulation-system'. For instance, in *A Town like Alice* (1930), Nevil Shute tells the story of his heroine through the lips of a staid old family lawyer who himself falls gradually in love with her. And further, when she courageously rides forty miles through the Australian bush to get help for an injured farmer (though she had scarcely ever ridden before), the story of her heroism is at once made known to everyone concerned by being broadcast from the local radio station. In Warwick Deeping's *Sorrell and Son* (1925), the ex-officer hotel-porter, persecuted by a bullying sometime-N.C.O. who is placed over his head, thinks his wrongs are ignored and misunderstood; but all the time the God-like owner of the hotel has been aware of all that is happening, has recognized the sacrifices he is making for his son's career, secretly acknowledges him as a gentleman and an equal, and finally gives him a hotel to run for himself.

If characters, by accident or design, have their actions misinterpreted, then the whole dynamic of the book will be to make the reader wait anxiously for the moment of explanation. An ingenious device of this kind is used in Florence Barclay's *The Rosary* (1909). It is a splendidly preposterous novel, of course; yet at first sight you can't say that the course of the plot is itself illogical. A very plain, masculine-looking woman, with, however, a fine singing-voice, discovers that the beautiful and successful young painter Garth Dalmain, adored of many women, has fallen in love with her (he has been swept off his feet by the beauty of character revealed by her singing). She fears that if he marries her, his love of physical beauty would soon make him

regret it, and so she tells him that she cannot take his love seriously. They part. He accidentally blinds himself on a shooting expedition. She meanwhile has repented of having refused him. But how shall she now persuade him that she is returning out of anything more than pity? A friend suggests that she go to him under the assumed identity of the petite, fluffy Nurse Gray, and whilst nursing him back to health and restoring his will to live, hope that the truth can eventually be brought home to him. Marvellously far-fetched though this is, at first sight there seems nothing wrong with it logically. But why, one then asks, does the masquerade part of the novel go on so long? Not, it transpires, because of the necessities of the plot, but from the requirements of a 'best-friend' or 'built-in-audience' device. For the longer Jane Garth can masquerade as Nurse Gray, and encourage Garth to talk about his old love, the more tributes she can elicit to herself.

A second feature of the best-seller is what we may call 'romantic disproportion', the use of incongruity to introduce the emotion of the wonderful or the pathetic. The hero of W. J. Locke's *The Beloved Vagabond* (1906), for instance – the unshaven, Bohemian, absinthe-drinking 'wandering scholar' Paragot – has been to Rugby, and thirteen years ago won the Prix de Rome for architecture. Raffles, again, is a gentleman and a cracksmen. The same quality appears in the love of disproportionate human relationships: Paragot makes a companion of a small boy; the heroine of *The Constant Nymph* (1924) is a child with adult problems; in *Sorrell and Son* father and son share a passionate, quasi-marital, relationship. (Of course much of the pathos in Dickens springs from just such anomalous relationships – the adult as child or the child as adult.) This vein of sentimental disproportion is a very powerful and precarious one, and easily turns into a positive delight in disproportion – so that Deeping is led on to propose (what would be rather monstrous if you took it seriously) that not only should the father sacrifice health and social position to his son's career, but that he should constantly remind the son that he is doing so, and that the son should make it the great sacrificial task of his life to repay the debt.

A third feature of best-selling writing is dependence on nostalgia, the feeling that past things are moving and significant simply because they are past. Here we are in strictly best-seller country. The popular novelist can depend on this distancing of events, by itself, to create

pathos. Arnold Bennett sometimes used it in this way. Bennett was not a best-selling novelist proper; but he delighted to play the part of the business man of letters, and his whole career is very important for our subject. When he writes deliberately in a best-selling vein, as in *Sacred and Profane Love*, his cynicism is too obvious for the thing to have the power of the natural article. On the other hand, when he is writing with complete integrity, certain weaknesses of a best-selling kind hamper him. In *The Old Wives' Tale* (1911) he means to show, in accordance with naturalist doctrine, that every detail of these commonplace lives is interesting and moving when you see the pattern it contributes to. But in fact he gives significance to the lives of his heroines, less by the logic of events, than by a constant appeal to 'Life', a facetiously ecstatic tone in describing their commonplace emotions, which sometimes sounds like genuine imaginative sympathy and sometimes like contempt; and, again, by an appeal to nostalgia, a dwelling on the pastness of what is past for them. There is a passage in Maupassant's *Une Vie* (Bennett's model for *The Old Wives' Tale*) in which Jeanne, old and half-crazy, finds a bundle of calendars belonging to her youth, and, pinning them to the wall, spends whole days asking herself 'Now, what was I doing then? and then?' In the later pages of *The Old Wives' Tale* Bennett sometimes seems to have no more to say than poor Jeanne in her morbid nostalgia.

\* \* \*

Various elements in English culture and contemporary history have their best-selling exponents. The imperial idea is important in the earlier part of our period, especially for that group of novelists (Buchan, Sapper, Dornford Yates, Edgar Wallace in *The Four Just Men*, 1905) who present a self-elected élite of friends, of high position or connexions, leaving their clubs or their Scottish castles to defend the country or the Empire's interests – or perhaps merely to right private wrongs. There is an echo of the Boer War in this, the group forming a kind of 'Commando', skilled in self-defence, masters of disguise and cover, using Europe as their 'veldt'. As Richard Usborne points out, the keynote is success; everyone is 'highly thought of in the White House' or 'the second most dangerous man in Europe'. For Buchan himself, the idea must have been partly inspired by Milner's 'kindergarten', of which he was a member; it must, indeed, have

seemed natural to these young men, picked from the universities to do the business of the Empire, to think of *themselves* as a chosen, privileged, inside group called on to arrange the world at their own pleasure.

If one looks for the father of the modern thriller of this kind, that is to say the adventure story in a contemporary social setting, it is probably Conan Doyle, with some hints from Stevenson's *New Arabian Nights*. From Doyle comes the concept of the master criminal with his extreme technical inventiveness – this combines with a late Romantic conception of the criminal as artist. As the thriller has developed, the hero has increasingly employed the same technical ingenuity as the villain. And at the same time the moral status of the hero has sunk. Novels of the Peter Cheyney, Ian Fleming school work on the assumption that violent and treacherous enemies can only be combated by violence and treachery; thus the reader can enjoy in fantasy the full criminal life, save that he remains theoretically on the side of law, virtue, and patriotism. Sapper's Bulldog Drummond remains a gentleman, with Edwardian standards of honour, entering into competition with his enemies with only his courage and various sporting skills to defend him (though in an emergency discovering unsuspected mental resources – a mixture of Watson and Holmes, in fact). The issues remain ostensibly moral, for Drummond's motives are decency and patriotism as against vicious and alien codes and designs. He uses his fists to defend himself, since they are the weapons proper to his code and class – though (an interesting ethical distinction) he cheerfully uses tortures and beatings to *punish* his quarry when he has captured them, should they belong to the categories – such as foreign fiends, Bolshevik Jews, or trade-union leaders – for whom they are suited. In the newer thriller the moral issue becomes perfunctory, or, as in James Hadley Chase, non-existent; 'topping girls' are replaced by casual or tough sex; and the hero is no longer a gentleman, but, as in Ian Fleming's recent James Bond series, an efficient and savage animal, with gleaming teeth, lean body, and narrow hips; an anonymous engine for detection, murder, and fornication, the driving of fast automobiles and the consumption of branded goods.

Some other favourite themes of the first period of the best-seller were scandal-in-high-life (Marie Corelli), highly coloured soul-drama (Hall Caine), Ruritanian romance, and erotico-Ruritanian as refurbished with tiger-skins and mad passion by Elinor Glyn in



*Three Weeks* (1907). Ruritania was invented by 'Anthony Hope' in *The Prisoner of Zenda* (1894), which itself looks back to the romance-writing school of the eighties. Stevenson was in some sense its father, as he was of other elements in the best-seller. It is interesting how many of the themes which he started in his oblique, playful, mandarin manner were taken up more seriously, or at least more literally, by later popular writers.

The First World War inspired one or two from-school-to-war novels, such as Ernest Raymond's *Tell England* (1922), of a high, romantic-religious, class-conscious, idealized-homosexual ethos, an ethos still Edwardian, and close, for example, to that of Horace A. Vachell's famous school story *The Hill* (1905). A reversal of these values in the name of romanticized post-war disillusion and sexual emancipation produced a complementary best-seller, Michael Arlen's *The Green Hat* (1924), in which the idealized young upper-class hero who 'dies for purity' is really a sham, who kills himself on his wedding-night because he has syphilis. Two important best-sellers, *Sorrell and Son* (already mentioned) and A. S. M. Hutchinson's *If Winter Comes* (1921), concern the returned officer in a post-war world, out of a job and up against the 'mob', who resent his pretensions to gentlemanliness. By the end of the novel these heroes assume almost Christ-like dimensions as representatives of the 'new poor'.

The First World War seems to have remained English society's true inoculation to death, and the shock of it can still be felt; its bitter division of soldier and civilian and angry aftermath of class-antagonism are reflected in the hysteria and romanticism of its popular novels. The country was psychologically better prepared for the Second World War and less profoundly stirred by it. Best-sellers on the subject, like Nigel Balchin's *The Small Back Room* (1943) and Nicholas Monsarrat's *The Cruel Sea* (1951), are full of technical information and matter-of-fact in tone. Nevil Shute, perhaps the most characteristic post-war best-seller, carries on this tradition. He takes his reader through some enterprise detail by detail, step by step. His heroes are the people who get things done, ordinary people obsessed by some vision; the last section of *A Town Like Alice*, in which the heroine introduces shoe-manufacture into a remote Australian farming settlement, is a sort of parable of private enterprise, with strong political overtones. Against this element of new-style Defoe, which is his



often tell us quite frankly what they are doing. 'My story will take you into times and spaces alike rude and incivil,' says Maurice Hewlett, in his best brocaded style; on the first page of *The Forest Lovers* (1898). 'Blood will be spilt, virgins suffer distresses; the horn will sound through woodland glades; dogs, wolves, deer and men, Beauty and the Beasts, will tumble each other, seeking life or death with their proper tools ...' Most authors of this kind write with some such formula or recipe of ingredients in their mind. The charm of the genre lies in its being, to some extent, a charade, the modern bodies and feelings remaining recognizable under the period disguise. And, characteristically, the authors often make their plots turn on dressing-up. Thus, in an early Georgette Heyer, *Powder and Patch* (1923), the hero, a rugged country-bred youth (a hearty modern boy, as we really feel), though despising the effeminacy of wigs and patches and paint, is compelled to make himself into a model fine gentleman. Again, Jeffrey Farnol's *The Amateur Gentleman* (1913) tells of an inn-keeper's son who studies to impose himself on high society. And, in rather a similar way, the young republican hero of Rafael Sabatini's *Scaramouche* (1921) makes himself the best swordsman in France, so that he can turn the hated symbol of the *ancien régime*, the duel, against its devotees. This kind of 'dressing-up' plot is the most natural way of bringing period stage-properties into the foreground of the novel.

The more recent favourites in this genre, like C. S. Forester, have a touch of self-consciousness not present in the full-blooded narratives of Sabatini and the Baroness Orczy, and hint faintly that they are playing at this sort of thing. Georgette Heyer achieves quite a skilful pastiche of a Jane Austen plot and style in *Bath Tangle* (1955), the values and the drift of the dialogue, however, remaining essentially modern, and contrasting intentionally with the well-caught Regency phraseology. C. S. Forester sophisticates his material (and gets the best of both worlds) by making his hero a bluff, hearts-of-oak seadog straight out of Marryat, who is at the same time a sensitive and self-doubting modern soul consciously impersonating this simple period role. The staple of Forester's Hornblower novels, however, is a loving and extremely technical analysis of nautical operations. It is this that gives a degree of conviction to the odd amalgam, and it links him, of course, with the 'technological' school of Nevil Shute (so that, indeed, he really gets the best of three worlds).

## THE TWENTIETH-CENTURY BEST-SELLER

Finally there is the detective story, 'use-literature' in its extremest form. Unlike the novels of Wilkie Collins, the modern detective novel is deliberately designed to raise and solve its problems without emotionally involving the reader. It seems to offer the normal constituents of fiction without actually doing so. It makes little difference if the background and characters are taken from life or simply from other fiction, for what happens is not meant to illuminate them, but only to make bewildering use of them. If the motive for a murder turns out to be concealed paranoia on the part of a *Cranford*-esque spinster, then the important lesson is that the reader could never unaided have guessed this; it takes the superior intellect of the detective to reveal such things. It is a middle-class art and taste. The problem is set against a background of absolute security; and though this security is momentarily interrupted by violence, order is soon efficiently though miraculously restored. The detective puzzle, moreover, enables the reader to remain detached from, and superior to, the human issues involved. The conventions of the genre are now set and will obviously be fruitful for many years ahead.

The transcendent and eccentric detective; the admiring slightly stupid foil; the well-intentioned blundering and unimaginativeness of the official guardians of the law; the locked-room convention; the pointing finger of unjust suspicion; the solution by surprise, deduction by putting one's self in another's position (now called psychology); concealment by means of the ultra-obvious; the staged ruse to force the culprit's hand; ... the expansive and condescending explanation when the chase is done ...

(H. Haycraft, *Murder for Pleasure*, N.Y., 1941)

One should add that the detective novel has the distinction of being the first best-selling genre to celebrate not deeds but the human reason. It has handed over its heroic elements (battle of wits with the master-mind of crime) and its atmospheric elements (pursuit and chase in the urban labyrinth) to the thriller, and what it has left to offer is a game or pastime. Its value to its readers (who are traditionally schoolmasters, clergymen, lawyers, dons, etc.) is purely therapeutic; and since they form the modern 'clerisy', it is fitting that their pastime literature should be a celebration of the intellect.

# MASS COMMUNICATIONS IN BRITAIN

RICHARD HOGGART

*Senior Lecturer in English, The University of Leicester*

THIS chapter is not about 'serious' or 'good' literature; nor is it about literature alone. It is about that extraordinary and complicated range of recreational activities put out by the media of mass communication, activities which reflect and affect aspects of British 'culture' today. Somewhere outside them stands the work of the novelists, poets, and dramatists discussed elsewhere in this volume; so do older forms of popular urban entertainment such as working-men's club concerts, brass bands, chapel choirs, comic postcards, and *Peggy Paper*; so do officially established cultural organizations and arrangements, such as the Arts Council and the sixpenny rate which local authorities may spend on the arts. But here, in the centre for the moment, are: *Reveille*, *Criss-cross Quiz*, *The News of the World Tonight* (the television magazine), *Mrs Dale's Diary*, *This Is Your Life*, *The Daily Mirror*, *Emergency Ward 10*, *The Brains Trust*, the advertisements on I.T.V., *Double Your Money*, *Juke-Box Jury*, the columnist Cassandra and the minor host of 'Paul Slickeys', *Panorama*, television Westerns, *Woman*, *The Archers*, *Monitor*. The relation of all these to literature, and to the 'high culture' of which literature is a part, is not immediately clear. But there is a relationship, direct and important, and one which anyone interested in literature and in society will do well to think about.

Many people have been thinking about it, of course; discussion about mass communications has been persistent, confused, and heated in this century. But it is not essentially new. It is a development in contemporary terms of a larger debate, with a long history. A recent historian and critic of this larger debate, Mr Raymond Williams, begins his examination with Edmund Burke and moves – to name only some major figures – through Coleridge, Newman, Lawrence, and Eliot (if we regard Eliot as British). This list spans more than one hundred and fifty years, and in Britain alone. If we look more widely, to European and American writers, we can span a roughly similar

period by moving, say, from Alexis De Tocqueville to Ortega y Gasset.

The larger debate is about 'culture' and society, that is, about the quality of the life which democracies offer and encourage. 'Culture' here, then, has to do with the quality of the imaginative and intellectual life these societies express, most obviously though not only through the place they give to the creative arts and to intellectual inquiry. The debate is also, inevitably, about the relation of culture to 'class', to wealth, to work, and to educational provision. What place, if any, do traditional forms of 'high culture' (those arts and inquiries largely produced and sustained, formerly, by members of the middle and upper classes) have in a universally literate and fairly prosperous democracy? What future, if any, have the elements of a differently phrased and local 'working-class' culture? Is a good, widely diffused, 'popular' or demotic culture possible in such democracies? What kinds of persuasion, by government or by non-statutory bodies, are legitimate and desirable?

Such a debate is not expressed only in writing. In nineteenth-century Britain the sustained and devoted efforts by some members of the 'privileged' classes to disseminate the benefits of education and culture to those less fortunately placed is part of the same movement (as in the development of extra-mural teaching by the universities, which was begun by Cambridge). Similarly, many of those resourceful nineteenth-century reformers who were themselves from the working-classes believed that they had a cultural as well as a political and economic mission (to take another example from adult education: the universities did not there plough a virgin field; many grass-roots organizations for the cultural improvement of working-people existed before the universities entered).

This is a very simple outline of a complex background, meant to indicate chiefly that the discussion of mass communications is part of a larger and longer inquiry. But there are sound reasons why the inquiry should be especially active today and should have the particular emphasis we go on to describe. The twentieth century is the first century of the truly *mass* media of communication, and this gives a special emphasis to questions of the kind enumerated above. Is 'high culture' bound to be peripheral to the driving and overriding forces of mass communications? Are all older types of culture likely to be

submerged in new substitute forms, in what the Germans call 'kitsch'? What is the relation of the creative arts and of disinterested intellectual activity to these new means of communication?

But, first, what are the mass media and how did they arise? No definition can be precise, but a workable definition can be reached. The chief forms of mass communication, as the phrase is normally used today, are sound and television broadcasting, the press (with certain exceptions), the cinema, and some types of advertising. In general, and this is their distinction, all these activities are addressed regularly to audiences absolutely very large and relatively undifferentiated by class, income, background, or locality (thus, most books are not in this sense mass media). All these activities are products of the last eighty years; before then, broadcasting and the cinema did not exist; the press and advertising existed, but not in forms which would have allowed them properly to be called mass media.

Several social and technological factors combined to produce these modern forms of communication. Two are usually given overriding importance and must be mentioned first. In fact, the illumination they give of the more subtle aspects of the problem – those to do with direction and quality – is not great. These two factors are technological advance and universal literacy. Obviously the two interact and some mass media (especially popular publications) have particularly developed from the interaction; on the other hand, cinema and broadcasting need hardly attend on literacy. The most striking primary cause for the appearance of contemporary mass communications, then, was technical knowledge and its application. The last decades of the nineteenth century, in particular, saw an enormously accelerated development in all parts of this field.

In Britain, it is true and important, these advances roughly coincided with the appearance of a new reading public. Towards the end of the nineteenth century the Registrar-General was able to announce that Britain – no other nation had preceded her – was substantially literate. And the total population was growing, and has continued to grow. There is plenty of evidence, especially in the biographies of the first press-lords, that some energetic men appreciated the commercial opportunities presented by this large, new, literate, but not intellectually cultured, audience.

Three further qualifications have to be made, however, so that





in the real wealth of many Western countries. Many more things are being made and have to be sold, competitively. Thus in Britain a large body of people who previously spent almost the whole of their income in providing, and often barely providing, for necessities now have money to spend on goods which are not essential – though they may be pleasant to have. This is generally true, though not evenly spread throughout society. Since the war marginal spending by teenagers, in particular, has encouraged, and been encouraged by, substantial businesses; by contrast, pensioners and others past working age have not so much benefited from post-war prosperity (compare the attention paid by commercial television to 'youth' with that to the aged). This general improvement may or may not accompany a levelling of incomes within a society. The crucial element is the over-all rise in real wealth which has ensured that a large number of people who were previously below the level at which they attracted serious and concerted attention from the makers of non-essential consumer goods are now above that level. These are what market-research specialists call 'new markets', especially for tastes previously enjoyed chiefly by middle- and upper-class groups, or 'potential markets' where a more novel taste or invented 'need' has to be encouraged.

In Russia and China the mass media are substantially arms of government, with positive and comparatively single-minded functions. In different democracies their use differs, according to the structure and underlying assumptions of each society. We can say roughly that in America the main emphasis is on the commercial use of the means of mass communication – they tend to be aids to selling, or profit-making organizations in their own right. In Britain, which is both a stratified society with a responsible and still fairly powerful Establishment and yet a commercial 'open' democracy, the use of mass communications reflects this piebald character. The British like to use direct governmental controls as little as possible, but their strong tradition of public service and public responsibility causes them (where it is not possible or relevant to support existing voluntary agencies) to establish semi-autonomous chartered bodies under regular, but not day-by-day, government surveillance. The Universities Grants Committee and the Arts Council are typical of such bodies. This tradition helped to ensure that, once broadcasting had begun to

show its powers, in the middle 1920s, a new chartered body was created – the British Broadcasting Corporation – charged with the responsibility for public service broadcasting. After the appearance of television there was considerable pressure for a commercial channel – strengthened by the country's increased prosperity – and so in 1954 the Independent Television Authority was created, to run a second channel from the proceeds of advertisements. Its advocates always point out that programmes on this channel are not 'sponsored' by the advertisers as they are in the United States. This is true, but the similarities between American television and British television on I.T.A. are greater than the differences. And the general tendencies of both are markedly different from those of the B.B.C. It would be more accurate to call the British second channel 'commercial television' rather than 'independent television'. In media so centralized and which reach instantaneously so large an audience there can be no full independence: one chooses to try to fulfil, as objectively as possible, one's public service responsibilities; or one is pulled by the pervasive general requirements of those who pay for the advertisements. At the present time these two channels, each competing for the attention of the British people, and each representing one main form of 'dependence', are the most striking evidence for the two themes of this essay: the intrinsic power and importance of the organs of mass communication; and the curiously piebald relationship of Great Britain to the use of these organs – relationships decided partly by history and tradition, and partly by newly emerging commercial and cultural pressures.

In Great Britain, particularly during the last thirty years, three factors – technological advances, universal literacy, increased public self-consciousness, and increased consumption of goods – have encouraged two striking changes in almost all forms of public communication. To some extent these changes towards centralization and concentration; must develop as the means of communication become means of mass communication: in Britain they have developed very quickly.

(e.g. Denmark Street and its environs for popular songs). There are a number of reasons why this process should have moved particularly quickly in Britain. The country is highly industrialized, densely populated, small in area, and has good communications. Practically everyone can be reached instantaneously by sound or television broadcasting, or within a few hours by a national newspaper. The United States has roughly three-and-a-half times the population of Britain but thirty times her land area. Holland and Belgium have most of the characteristics listed above, but the relative smallness of their populations makes it less likely that really massive organizations can be founded in the field of communications. Nor has Britain any strong regional centres of cultural and intellectual activity. Edinburgh and Manchester can make some claim, but a comparison with, say, Naples or Milan shows how limited the claim is.

Centralization in communications reflects the centralization in commerce and industry. Similarly, concentration reflects larger economic movements. If centralization makes for the production of almost all material of one kind from one source, concentration makes for a reduction in variety within each kind. In industry, the production of motor cars is an obvious instance. Several kinds of car are available (family saloon, sports car, limousine, estate car) but the number of different makes and so of models within each kind is small. The large markets thus ensured bring obvious advantages: lower price, relative stability of employment, concentration of resources for research. Occasionally, some of these advantages can be usefully taken in the *distribution* of good intellectual and imaginative works, as in the issue of excellent books in paper-back form which now flourishes in the United States and to a lesser degree in Britain. But this is chiefly a matter of 'marketing' an existing product of good quality (and for every publication of this sort the same machines produce several of an exceptional poorness). The real problems which concentration in cultural matters poses lie here: that concentration does not simply distribute existing material but to a large extent decides the form and nature of all new material, reduces variety in approach and attitudes, seeks manners which will gain a mass audience most of the time. Motor-cars are not really very important; if by centralizing and concentrating their production we get workable models cheaply we may well be satisfied. But cheap-

ness, speed, modernity, smartness are all profoundly irrelevant to intellectual and imaginative affairs and, worse, are often bought at the cost of what is profoundly relevant to them.

Sound and television broadcasting are products of a highly technological period and have been since their birth both centralized and concentrated. The cinema, since it is almost entirely a profit-making industry, has been centralized and concentrated almost since its beginning, and our pleasure when something even mildly exploratory is attempted in a film sufficiently suggests what a loss this has meant. But changes in the British press and in periodical publication during the last thirty years show most clearly the trend towards centralization and concentration, since these types of production originally had a great variety of outlets and attitudes.

The number of provincial papers still published might seem to suggest that here at least centralization and concentration have not gone far. Certainly the evening provincial papers sometimes have more independent life than those published in the morning. But a close reading of most provincial papers reveals that centralization and concentration are here too. Ostensibly a paper may belong to a provincial town and the editor live in its suburbs. But in most important respects these papers are often no more than provincial outlets, printing offices, for large London combines and, though they include a moderate amount of local news and views (rather after the manner of the local insets in a parish magazine), the major comment and editorials, the background articles, the judgements on all topics other than those of a purely local interest, are likely to be issued by teletype from London each day and so syndicated in papers under the same central control all over Britain.

Concentration is even more striking here. Many people still think that Britain has eight or nine national popular daily newspapers, of roughly equal effect. Eight or nine there certainly are, but a glance at the differences in their circulations shows how far concentration has advanced. Among the popular national morning dailies, two alone account for about two-thirds of all sales on any one day. The position is similar in popular Sunday newspapers and in weekly family magazines, and is even more marked in women's magazines.

It is simply not sufficient to say, as some of the mass media are only means of communication, that the large-scale

distribution of material whose character is not affected by the manner in which it is distributed. Yet there is some truth in the claim, and it underlines the undoubted advantages mass communications can bring. Television, it is true and we are told often enough, can suggest a range of worthwhile interests and pleasures far wider than most of us would otherwise have known. It can give millions the chance to see at the same time a really informed discussion on some matter of public interest; it can occasionally give an unusually close sense of the characters of admirably impressive individuals who would otherwise have been no more than names to us; it can present from month to month plays, well acted and produced, which most of us would have passed a lifetime without seeing. In all this television is acting as a transmitter, a multiple transmitter; and it can be extremely valuable.

Some other forms of mass communication also seem to be acting as 'straight' transmitters, in less obvious or simple ways. They appear to have taken over from scattered and varied oral agencies the work of sustaining an elementary folklore. In this shadowy but powerful symbolic world some of the strip-cartoons now work alongside and are probably beginning to replace a dark network of urban stories and myths. This harsh but meaningful sub-world has not been much examined either by writers on mass communications or by students of literature or - we may be glad, since they might make use of it - by the advertising copywriters.

Most of the work of the mass media is done in a more self-conscious light. And the fact that this work is produced for a mass audience radically affects its character. Its situation almost always forces certain qualities upon it; and these are weakenings of the qualities of those established arts on which mass communications must feed.

Mass communications are usually led, first, to avoid clear psychological and social definition. Sharp definition is possible in 'high art', and concrete definition of a certain kind is possible in 'low' art, since each depends on a limiting of the audience. The first audience is nowadays largely self-selected, without overriding reference to social or geographic factors. This is, for want of a better term, the 'highbrow' audience composed of people who, during the times that they are being 'highbrows', are not in a disabling sense also clerks in Sheffield, mechanics in Manchester, or stockbrokers in Croydon -

though these may be their everyday occupations and should reinforce their reading. Yet they are, whilst forming this audience, in a certain sense disinterested. A clerk can read *Anna Karenina* with essentially the same kind of attention as a stockbroker or a mechanic, though the life of upper-class Russian civil servants in the nineteenth century has little social similarity with any of theirs.

The second audience is limited by class or geography or both. It can allow a kind of definition within a specific way of life because this way of life is local or socially accepted. This is the audience of, say, *Peg's Paper* or the *Tatler*.

The mass media can only occasionally accept either of these types of audience. The first is too small to be of much use; the second is a series of audiences, of roughly the same type though divided by habit and custom. Essentially the job of the mass media is to weld this second series of audiences into one very much larger group. There is an immediate loss. Compare only the texture of working-class life embodied in Lawrence's *Sons and Lovers*, or even the particularity and denseness of working-class life assumed in an old-fashioned working-class women's magazine, with the life embodied and assumed in one of the newer classless women's magazines, or that in the posters and pamphlets issued by either of the main political parties in Britain.

The overwhelming use of the 'realist' or photographic method in mass art underlines this situation. The mass media, especially in a commercial society, dare not genuinely disturb or call in question the *status quo*. Basically their function is to reinforce the given life of the time; to help their new or emerging mass audience to accept the 'reality' that is offered them. Everything has to be shown as 'interesting' and yet as equally interesting, since to do otherwise would be to inspire distinctions and so create minorities. By this means most of existence is presented as a succession of entertaining items, each as significant as the next: a television 'magazine' programme or a weekly illustrated magazine will successively give the same sort of treatment – the visual, the novel, the interesting – to a film actress, a nuclear physicist, a teenage singing star, a great 'man of letters'; or similar treatment will be given to close-up photographs of a personal tragedy or a new technique for building roads. Order and significance give way to sheer spectacle, the endlessly fragmented curiousness of brute experience.

### PART THREE

So, though they are exceptionally aware of their huge audience as a huge audience, the mass media dare not have a real closeness to the individuals who compose that audience. They can rarely be so precise and particular as to inspire any one of that audience to say, 'There, but for the grace of God ...' or, 'This attitude I cannot accept ...' They retreat from the dramatic immediate presentations of art to the sterilized world of the 'documentary', where the close detail of individual existence is reduced by being generalized to the status of 'problems which concern us all', problems which are examined in a 'neutral', a 'fair-minded' and 'objective' way. This is the foundation of that standardization, that stereotyping, of character which marks almost all works produced expressly for the mass media.

We are told that the mass media are the greatest organs for enlightenment that the world has yet seen, that in Britain, for instance, several million people see each issue of *Panorama* and several million each issue of *Tonight*. We have already agreed that the claim has some foundation. Yet it is not extensive. It is true that never in human history were so many people so often and so much exposed to so many intimations about societies, forms of life, attitudes other than those which obtain in their own local societies. This kind of exposure may well be a point of departure for acquiring certain important intellectual and imaginative qualities: width of judgement, a sense of the variety of possible attitudes. Yet in itself such an exposure does not bring intellectual or imaginative development. It is no more than the masses of stone which lie around in a quarry and which may, conceivably, go to the making of a cathedral. But the mass media cannot build the cathedral, and their way of showing the stones does not always prompt others to build. For the stones are presented within a self-contained and self-sufficient world in which, it is implied, simply to look at them, to observe – fleetingly – individually interesting points of difference between them, is sufficient in itself.

Life is indeed full of problems on which we have – or feel we should try – to make decisions, as citizens or as private individuals. But neither the real difficulty of these decisions nor their true and disturbing challenge to each individual, can often be communicated through the mass media. The disinclination to suggest real choice, individual decision, which is to be found in the mass media is not simply the product of a commercial desire to keep the customers

## MASS COMMUNICATIONS IN BRITAIN

happy. It is within the grain of mass communication. The Establishments, however well-intentioned they may be and whatever their form (the State, the Church, voluntary agencies, political parties), have a vested interest in ensuring that the public boat is not violently rocked, and will so affect those who work within the mass media that they will be led insensibly towards forms of production which, though they go through the motions of dispute and inquiry, do not break through the skin to where such inquiries might really hurt. They will tend to move, when exposing problems, well within the accepted cliché-assumptions of democratic society and will tend neither radically to question those clichés nor to make a disturbing application of them to features of contemporary life; they will stress the 'stimulation' the programmes give, but this soon becomes an agitation of problems for the sake of the interestingness of that agitation in itself; they will therefore, again, admit a form of acceptance of the *status quo*. There are exceptions to this tendency, but they are uncharacteristic.



a pressing awareness of their audience and a pressing uncertainty about that audience. There is a sense in which we may say that a serious artist ignores his audience (assuming that they will share his interest in exploring the subject); or in which we may say that a popular artist with a defined audience simply assumes that audience because his work is embedded in, and expresses, attitudes which are never called in question. But the worker in the mass media is not primarily trying to explore anything or express anything: he is trying to capture and hold an audience. Manner is more important than matter. The fact that very often there is not one writer on a specific programme but a 'team', each member contributing his tactical items, underlines how far is this process from the serious artist's single strategy towards his recalcitrant imaginative material.

If an artist will cooperate with the mass media on their terms (to their credit some artists go on working with the media for the sake of such success as they can gain in their own imaginative terms), then he may have exceptional rewards. For in the age of mass communications art becomes one of the most elusive and therefore most sought-after forms of 'marginal differentiation'. Culture becomes a commodity. And just as the dilemmas of experience are reduced to a series of equally interesting but equally non-significant snapshots, or to the status of documentary 'problems', so the products of art become an eclectic shiny museum of styles, each of them divorced from its roots in a man or men suffering and rejoicing in certain times and places. You may buy by subscription and renew, as often as you renew the flowers in your sitting room, examples of Aztec art or African art or Post-Impressionist painting or Cubist painting or the latest book (probably about the horrors of mass-society) which a panel of well-publicized authorities have selected for you. And all has the same effect as the last instalment of the television magazine. You have sipped and looked and tasted; but nothing has happened. Culture has become a thing for display not for exploration; a presentation not a challenge. It has become a thing to be consumed, like the latest cocktail biscuit.

The above point needs to be especially stressed because it is altogether too easy to think that the mass media affect only 'them'; that the 'masses' are some large body of people in an outer uncultured darkness. There are probably no masses at all – only operators in the

mass media trying to form masses and all of us from time to time allowing them. But these 'masses' cannot be identified with one social class or even with our usual picture of the lowbrows and the middlebrows (against the highbrows). Not everyone who reads the book page of the *Observer* is automatically free from mass persuasions, even in his cultural interests.

For, as we have persistently noted, one primary need of mass communications is to reach as wide an audience as possible. Class divides. Where the mass media are commercially influenced this need is all the stronger. To sell their centralized and concentrated goods they must seek a centralized and concentrated audience. In this, therefore, the mass media are both reflecting and encouraging much wider social changes. Centralized production, changes in the nature of work (partly through more effective automatic processes), the higher general level of incomes, greater social mobility, educational changes - all these are helping to alter the local and class lines of British life. In part these lines are also related to divisions in types of cultural activity. British society may well be forming new stratifications, by brains, education, and occupation rather than by birth and money. But such a society will need, if it is not to be initiated by constant inner dissent, a sort of common meeting ground of acceptable attitudes. In democracies this assent has to be brought about by a winning persuasion. In commercially powerful and densely populated democracies the acceptable attitudes can include a wide range of seemingly varying attitudes. There is room there for the *Daily Sketch* as much as for *Vogue*, for the *Miss Britain Competitions* as much as for the *Book of the Month Club*. But the variety is only apparent; the texture of the experience they offer is not significantly different at any point in the spectrum. You have then arrived at a sort of cultural classlessness.

This need to reach a large and (whilst they are listening) ~~diverse~~ audience ensures that the mass media can take little for ~~granted~~ granted. What sort of furniture, of reactions, of assertions may be ~~used~~ used? How far dare one go on this line without running the risk of ~~alienating~~ alienating some group? It follows that mass communications tend to ~~take~~ take since they will take the more plainly winning attitude before ~~the~~ the which may disconcert. Much more important, they have ~~the~~ the opportunity for exploring a living relationship towards ~~their~~ their

### PART THREE

Some existing attitudes they may use, after a fashion; others they must freshly introduce, with great care. This explains the strange and limited narcissism of the mass media towards attitudes which have been traditionally acceptable to large numbers of people, especially towards attitudes which can be made to assist in creating the most suitable atmosphere in mass media themselves. Thus, they will accept certain well-established working-class attitudes such as tolerance, lack of meanness, generosity – and extend them into a friendly public buyers' and sellers' world in which – like stuck flowers – they look the same but may soon wither, for want of the soil (of difficulty and tension) in which they had first been nurtured. Programmes such as *This Is Your Life* and *Have a Go* are typical instances of this kind of process – so is the whole tone of much popular journalism, especially that in the gossip columns and correspondence columns.

This kind of extension can only go so far and soon risks foundering on the reefs of excessive generality (over-extending the stereotype) or excessive particularity (alienating part of the audience). Therefore, in a society marked with the fine complicated lines of class distinction, mass communications have to move towards a world which is not too specifically recognizable by any one group or class but is acceptable by all. They have to invent a world which most of us, in the times that we are consumers, are happy to inhabit. This is the origin of the glossy advertising copywriters' world, a world with a fixed grin which most of us at some times could imagine inhabiting, but which is artificial, 'dreamed-up'. Such is the sophistication of mass communications (they are rarely naïve) that there are also built into this world allowances for idiosyncrasy, for the odd 'highbrow', and even for the 'bloody-minded' individual. But all will have in the process been effectively neutered. Mass communications naturally tend towards a bland, a nice, a harmless but bodiless range of attitudes. For more and more of the time more and more of us become consumers of more and more things – from material goods to human relations.

Here we come to the overriding danger of mass communications, unless they are constantly criticized and checked against individual judgement. We are not primarily concerned with whether 'highbrow' books will be read in a society dominated by mass communications (as we have seen, they will still be read, in a certain way); we have to

ask what will be the quality of the life expressed through all the arts and at all levels in such a society. It may be that literature will have relatively a much smaller place in the society which is now emerging than most people who read this chapter have assumed and hoped.

The intricate social pattern which produced, among much else, the 'high culture' that is normally recognized is being changed. At the same time great numbers of people are in some respects freer than before. In a changed society the best qualities which inform 'high culture' may have to find other ways of expressing themselves; so will the best qualities in the old local and oral life of people who were not in a position to make much contribution to 'high culture'. At the moment the one seems likely to be bypassed and the other eroded by the impact of massively generalized communications. There is a considerable fund of common imaginative strength in all parts of society. If a thinner consumers' culture is not to spread overall much more care will have to be taken in seeking relevant connexions, genuine links between things which show this strength (some features of day-to-day life, some work in the arts today, some social organizations, some forms of recreation). It is not possible to define in advance the nature of a decent demotic culture. Unless one believes that such a culture is not possible, one has to try to keep open all lines which may allow for good development as well as to oppose those which are likely to lead to a dead smartness. At present most people with literary interests keep open less effectively than they oppose.

# POETRY TODAY

CHARLES TOMLINSON

*Lecturer in English, The University of Bristol*

OVER forty years ago two Americans and an Irishman attempted to put English poetry back into the mainstream of European culture. The effect of those generations who have succeeded to the heritage of Eliot, Pound, and Yeats has been largely to squander the awareness these three gave us of our place in world literature, and to retreat into a self-congratulatory parochialism. In the years following the Second World War, this tendency has been ever more confirmed, both in the work of the neo-romantics of the 1940s and in the poets who have since reacted against these. As among the social poets of the thirties, we see no one writer who, while acknowledging the point to which the art of poetry has been taken by the three great post-symbolists, has succeeded in working forward supported by a consciousness of their achievement and of its technical potentialities. Instead, in the English poetry of the fifties one has, to use the words of a recent reviewer, an arbitrary attempt 'to criticize the values of subtopia by those of suburbia'. A loss of that finer awareness of the community of European values has made possible verse manifestos of the following kind:

... Nobody wants any more poems about philosophers or paintings or novelists or art galleries or mythology or foreign cities or other poems. At least I hope nobody wants them.

(Kingsley Amis in *Poets of the 1950s*, edited by Enright)

[I] have no belief in 'tradition' or a common myth-kitty or casual allusions in poems to other poems or poets.

(Philip Larkin in the same anthology)

The second of these writers can now publicly indulge a dislike of Mozart and 'a mild xenophobia', and for him the aim of poetry is, he tells us, simply to 'keep the child from its television set and the old man from his pub'. Instead of the conscious formulation of a position, one has a provincial laziness of mind adopted as a public attitude and

as the framework for an equally provincial verse. Against such a background poetic culture in Britain would seem to be living on an overdraft, the overdraft being the work of the writers of the older generation who are still with us.

I have stressed the need for the poet's consciousness of what he is doing, of his need actively to resist the provincialising effect of our suburban culture. Hugh MacDiarmid's *Selected Poems* (1941), and a second selection made ten years later, inadequate as the scope of the choice is, reveals something of what may be won by conscious determination supported by poetic ability. MacDiarmid does not resemble Eliot technically, but like the latter he has retained in his best verse the presence of 'the mind of Europe' and like him he has worked in the full knowledge of what he was about. His aim has been to resurrect the Scottish tradition that peters out with Burns; his achievement has been to forge a Scots verse, neither antiquarian nor provincial, but one in which a modern awareness can nourish itself on the Scottish past, and that can absorb into itself Chaucer, Dunbar, Villon. The *Second Hymn to Lenin* (absent from both selections), *The Seamless Garment*, *The Parrot Cry*, a body of lyrics which would include the best verse in the early *Saugschaw*, *Penny Wheep*, *A Drunk Man Looks at the Thistle* (particularly, *O Wha's Been Here Afore Me Lass*) represent something of MacDiarmid's harvest. His strength shows itself even in such lyrics of a minor range as appear in the *Selected Poems* of 1954:

### PART THREE

Nae wonder if I think I see  
 A lighter shadow than the neist  
 I'm fain to cry 'The dawn, the dawn!  
 I see it brackin' in the East.'  
 But ah  
 - It's juist mair snaw!

The caustic tone, tempered by self-knowledge, gives this poem its sureness of balance. How difficult that balance was to acquire in the conditions of contemporary Scotland becomes evident as one weighs the best of MacDiarmid against his frequent misses. The one disappointing Scots poem in *A Kist of Whistles* (1947) and the slack English verse accompanying it point to that almost inevitable waste of gifts that an age like our own, with its endlessly shifting cultural patterns, entails. And there is a bitter irony in the fact that MacDiarmid who began with a renovation of Scots, should end in drably adequate English with a plea for a universal language (*In Memoriam James Joyce*, 1956).<sup>1</sup>

One reason for juxtaposing the recent poetry of Austin Clarke and MacDiarmid would be to illustrate the way a sense of nationality can deepen a comparatively narrow talent. Clarke is Irish. Yeats wrote of one of his prose romances to Olivia Shakespear in 1932: 'Read it and tell me should I make him an Academician.' Clarke was made an Academician, but Yeats's subsequent hesitations about him and his backing of the far weaker poetic abilities of F. R. Higgins have resulted in his neglect. Clarke's *Collected Poems* (1936) should certainly be reprinted. *Ancient Lights* (1955) and *Too Great a Vine* (1957) show him to be an epigrammatist of remarkable individuality (see *Marriage*, *Nelson's Pillar*, *St Christopher*). A further volume, *The Horse-Eaters*, appeared in 1960. A sense of not only what Ireland is, but what it was, enables Clarke, a minor poet, to speak with a national voice that, like MacDiarmid's at his very fragmentary best, represents not the inertia of chauvinism, but a labour of recovery. Clarke's skill in using traditional Irish rhyming patterns is similarly not merely a technical recovery, but the measure of a worked-for relation with the past. His poem on the death of orphanage children by fire accomplishes what in intention Dylan Thomas sets out to do in *A Refusal to Mourn the Death, by Fire, of a Child in London*:

Martyr and heretic  
 Have been the shrieking wick.  
 But smoke of faith on fire  
 Can hide us from enquiry  
 And trust in Providence  
 Rid us of vain expense.  
 So why should pity uncage  
 A burning orphanage,  
 Bar flight to little souls  
 That set no church bell tolling?  
 Cast-iron step and rail  
 Could but prolong the wailing:  
 Has not a bishop declared  
 That flame-wrapped babes are spared  
 Our life-time of temptation?  
 Leap, mind, in consolation  
 For heart can only lodge  
 Itself, plucked out by logic.  
 Those children, charred in Cavan  
 Pass straight through Hell to Heaven.

The complete technical adequacy of the poem is able to contain and to represent the interplay of satiric anger with pity for the children without resorting either to sentiment or to those plangencies of sound which are Thomas's stock in trade. This is not to claim that Clarke was initially more gifted than Thomas, but to reiterate the point made in Henry James's novel *Roderick Hudson*, namely, that the minor artist, by a scrupulous economy of means, both moral and artistic, may finally accomplish things that the evaporation of a major talent must needs forgo.

To pass from the assured, narrow national strength of Clarke to the vaster resources of an expatriate like Ezra Pound is to realize, as in the case of MacDiarmid, the extent to which the *déracinement* of our century can ultimately entail great unevenness and loss of creative power and balance of tone, even in the finest writers. The continued appearance of Pound's *Cantos* – *The Pisan Cantos* (1920), *Season: Rock-Drill* (1957), *Thrones* (1959) – return one to that criticism which Yeats made of Pound in his preface to *The Oxford Book of Modern Verse* in 1936: 'When I consider his work as a whole', writes Yeats, 'I find more style than form: at moments more style, more deliberate nobility



and the means to convey it than in any contemporary poet known to me but it is constantly interrupted, broken, twisted into nothing by its direct opposite, nervous obsession, nightmare, stammering confusion; he is an economist, poet, politician, raging at malignants with inexplicable characters and motives, grotesque figures out of a child's book of beasts.' Yeats's criticisms, when due qualifications have been made, are still often valid after the passage of over twenty years, but having endorsed them we should do wrong to follow common English opinion and to relegate the Cantos to that total neglect they by no means deserve. As Ronald Bottrall contended in one of the first lengthy appraisals of *A Draft of XXX Cantos* in 1933 (*Scrutiny* II) and as Donald Davie has since argued, the finest work in the Cantos is both nobly impressive and of extraordinary beauty.<sup>2</sup> 'More deliberate nobility and the means to convey it....': Yeats's words still apply to those passages of processional magnificence in *The Pisan Cantos* - 79 (O Lynx keep watch on my fire .../O puma sacred to Hermes), 80 (the lyric, Tudor is gone and every rose), 81 (Yet/Ere the season died a-cold .../all in the diffidence which faltered) - and in *Rock-Drill* - Cantos 90-93 - where Pound evokes the paradisaical elements of myth and folk-memory, as in the earlier and splendid Cantos 17 and 47. Cantos 99 and 106 in *Thrones* are relevant here. This recurrence to the ceremonial aspects of past cultures (see Canto 52, Know then:/Toward summer when the sun is in Hyades ...) links the Pound of the Cantos to Pound the translator (*The Classic Anthology Defined by Confucius*, 1955). A reader who experiences the rhythmic tact of the 'Envoi' in *Mauberley* will recognize that a comparable power is at work in this later volume:

## I

For deep deer-copse beneath Mount Han  
hazel and arrow-thorn make an even, orderly wood;  
A deferent prince  
seeks rents in fraternal mood.

## 2

The great jade cup holds yellow wine,  
a fraternal prince can pour  
blessing on all his line.

## 3

High flies the hawk a-sky,  
 deep dives the fish,  
 far, far, even thus amid distant men  
 shall a deferent prince have his wish.

## 4

The red bull stands ready, and  
 clear wine is poured,  
 may such rite augment the felicity  
 of this deferent lord.

## 5

Thick oaks and thorn give folk fuel to spare,  
 a brotherly prince shall energize  
 the powers of air.

## 6

And as no chink is between vine-grip and tree  
 thick leaf over bough to press,  
 so a fraternal lord seeks abundance  
 only in equity;  
 in his mode is no crookedness.

Sensuous exactness becomes in this translation the defining equivalent for a moral distinction: 'And as no chink is between vine-grip and tree/thick leaf over bough to press ...' And not only have we the power of the sensuous image: the first of these lines, riding forward on its stresses, enacts the vigour of the moral directness which is being recommended. The didactic element and the poetic element are at one, whereas in the weaker sections of the Cantos the morals, whether economic or political, are too much a matter of *a priori* formulation, nakedly and shrilly dogmatic without organic relation to their context. The Cantos can degenerate into abuse; whereas the moral scheme of the Confucian translations unites compellingly with imagery and rhythm. In Pound's *Classic Anthology* is to be found some of the most impressive verse of the fifties. Of his contribution to modern dramatic verse in *Women of Trachis* (first published 1954) a 'version' of Sophocles' *Trachiniae*, suffice it to say that Pound

has given us one of the very few readable translations of Greek drama.<sup>2</sup>

If the wilfulness of Ezra Pound often results in his attempting an epic inclusiveness which he cannot always sustain, will in the poetry of Robert Graves works in the opposite direction. It seems bent on keeping latently major powers within minor forms. Graves continues to write verse of exceptional grace and intelligence, but one is conscious, in looking through the selection he made for Penguin Poets in 1957, of going back to poems written something like a couple of decades ago and more for what is most arresting – to *The Great Grandmother*, *A Country Mansion*, *The Terraced Valley*, or to the forcefulness of *Certain Mercies*:

Now must all satisfaction  
Appear mere mitigation  
Of an accepted curse?

Must we henceforth be grateful  
That the guards, though spiteful,  
Are slow of foot and wit?

That by night we may spread  
Over the plank bed  
A thin coverlet?

That the rusty water  
In the unclean pitcher  
Our thirst quenches?

That the rotten, detestable  
Food is yet eatable  
By us ravenous?

That the prison censor  
Permits a weekly letter?  
(We may write: 'we are well.')

That, with patience and deference,  
We do not experience  
The punishment cell?

# POETRY TODAY

That each new indignity  
Defeats only the body,  
Pampering the spirit  
With obscure, proud merit?

Here attitudes are being weighed, a form of spiritual pride is being refused, and the characteristic self-dramatizing stance of stoicism trenchantly and vigorously parodied. Frequently in his love poetry—take *Theseus and Ariadne* with its shift of the time perspective ironically underlining a changed point of view—Graves exhibits a comparably sharp insight into the self-inflating glamour of half-truth. His best love poetry exists somewhere between those poems like *Cry Faugh* where romantic afflatus is merely indulged and those curious poems of obsession and sexual distaste *The Beast*, *The Succubus*, *Questions in a Wood*. One senses in Graves a desire to simplify rather than to explore, particularly in his dealings with those areas of experience involving nightmare, hallucination, and horror of the grave, which are hinted at in poems like *The Castle*, *The Presence*, and in his recent volume *Steps* (1958) in *Gratitude for a Nightmare*. It is as if the poet had deliberately willed these experiences into a form too constricted to permit of the kind of major development they demand and at times—as in *The Terraced Valley*—are within sight of obtaining. The constriction and the attendant simplification result in a willed curtailment of Graves's powers, a splintering away of the vision into a series of brief lyric statements. Where an extended trajectory is needed, a trajectory capable of deepening the meaning of the experience and implying the mode of its resolution, we are often presented with the naked experience itself, unresolved and unqualified by understanding, as in the two palpitating stanzas of *The Succubus*.

plexity. The object of the poems tends to disappear, as in the early *Letter II* and the later *Bacchus*, with its crossword puzzle approach and its six pages of notes, and we are left with a handful of conceits. There is a peculiar hollowness at the back of the *terza rima*, the villanelle, and the chattering iambic rhythm which Empson has handed on to his successors. Life seems to offer a threat that can be evaded by technical adroitness, but whose presence is betrayed by a diffused sense of torment, helplessness, despair, of the impossibility of knowledge and judgement. The evasive formula was present in an interesting early poem, *This Last Pain*:

Imagine, then, by miracle, with me,  
 (Ambiguous gifts, as what gods give must be)  
 What could not possibly be there,  
 And learn a style from a despair.

Style, as something ready made, a wit and formal smoothness divorced from depth of experience, are what later poets (Alvarez, Bergonzi, Wain) have made of Empson's influence, and it is interesting to note that they have most readily followed his example where his style has hardened into the relatively abstract exercises of his second volume, *The Gathering Storm* (1940). This loss of nerve which must of necessity relegate poetry to a minor art consorted readily with the literary mood of the 1950s. What made that mood possible was in part a reaction against the neo-romanticism of the 1940s to which we must now turn.

Surrealism, with its stress on the role of the irrational in art, has exercised, however indirectly, an influence on our poetic climate. By the 1930s, side by side with and often overlapping the poetry of 'social awareness' (see Auden's charade, *Paid on Both Sides*), a taste for the bizarre and disquieting effects had become an accepted mode for the poet. Surrealism had had the effect of paving the way for a poetry where the importance of precise moral and rational content was now discounted and where communication with an audience meant for the poet, as for the writer of those Gothick tales so popular during the Romantic Revival of the 1800s, the communication of dreams, of inarticulate terrors, and a sense of mystery. Such is the background for a good deal of the poetry of Dylan Thomas and also of George Barker. Thomas's *Eighteen Poems* appeared in 1934, Barker's *Poems*

a year later, at a time when the yeast of surrealism was working. It was to go on even beyond the 1940s, and it was these two poets whose verse was widely influential in establishing an idiom where the startling pun was one of the chief devices of poetic structure and where the unit of poetic composition was the single line directed at the solar plexus.

What Barker and Thomas have in common (Thomas is obviously the more gifted poet) is their status as the representatives of a particular kind of social decline and cultural provincialism. Thomas began to write in the Wales of the depression, deprived of social ideals, of cultural leadership, and of an adequate religious context. Barker has described his own setting and has implied the limiting nature of his reaction to it: 'I write this', he says in a prose work, *The Dead Seagull*, published in 1950, 'in the year that ends the war that succeeded the war. I speak, therefore, as a person of whose life a third has been spent with violent death about it.' The oratorical note of the close brings in with it that excusing self pity which for Barker makes possible the immature punning violence of a writer who feels his time to be the automatic excuse for an answering hysteria in his poetry. The 'expressive' style is applied regardless of subject:

Sweat, wicked kisses in your stark  
Hate of the whitewashed day ...  
Till the winged bloodhorses of sex  
Dead beat, and meet their match

(*Epithalamium for Two Friends*)

Barker, like Thomas, is often content to imply that moral questions cannot admit of any answer. Compare, for example, Thomas's

Every morning I make,  
God in bed, good and bad ...

(*When I Wake*)

with Barker's

Evil is simply this, my friend:  
A good we do not understand.

(*Goodman Jackson and the Angel*)

Incoherence of style and incoherence of moral content are concomitants inherited from Barker and Thomas by the poetry of the 1940s. If the age is violent, then poetry must be violent. This seems

to be the conclusion of neo-romanticism in general and of the New Apocalypitics in particular whose work was anthologized in *The White Horseman* (1941). Described as a dialectical development of surrealism, the poetic norm has here descended to 'filling [the lines] with the explosions of wild vowels':

Cast in a dice of bones I see the geese of Europe  
Gabble in skeleton jigsaw, and their haltered anger  
Scream a shark-teeth frost through splintering earth and lips.  
(J. F. Hendry)

The critical excuse for this kind of excess runs as follows: 'The obscurity of our poetry, its air of something desperately snatched from dream or woven round a chime of words, are the results of disintegration, not in ourselves, but in society...' (G. S. Fraser, *Apocalypse in Poetry*). In short, the poet's responsibility is shifted from poetry to half-articulate protest, a bad poetic is blamed on a bad society. The end of such moral automatism is that poetry must necessarily suffer and critical standards go unhonoured: 'We are thrown back', writes Fraser, 'on the erratic judgements and uncertain impulses of a few intimate friends.' In view of this – the friends, after all, were to contribute to the nucleus of post-war literary London – it is not surprising to find that, when *Apocalypse* had fizzled, their erratic judgements had already lighted on new hopes.

Subsequently the reputations of two other poets have been put forward as offering an alternative to the more violent romanticism of the forties, an alternative which does not, it is argued, forgo what the neo-romantics were concerned with – a sense of mystery and an awareness of levels of personality beyond daylight consciousness. The newer reputations are those of Kathleen Raine (*Collected Poems*, 1956) and Edwin Muir (*Collected Poems*, 1952; *One Foot in Eden*, 1956). Both these poets are united in their use of archetypal myth and symbol as means to a deeper end than, say, poems on contemporary events or poems of ephemeral satire. Miss Raine has a metaphysic for poetry but she has not a poetic. That is to say, that while it may or may not be laudable to write with archetypes in mind, to succeed would require a far more rigorous discipline of the diction of poetry than she has attempted. In short, to elect to write like Blake, as she has done, would require all the syllogistic tautness of Blake's syntactic

habits and the mental tautness which goes with them. But Miss Raine's technique is essentially the technique of improvisation, intuition focused in the telling image but unarticulated for want of an intellectual structure within the poetry. Muir is the author of an excellent autobiography, *The Story of the Fable* (1940), and his poetry is chiefly an attempt to re-explore the central experiences of this in terms of archetypes. While the poems lack the exhibitionism of the neo-romantics, they lack also that linguistic vigour without which true poetry cannot exist. A measure of what is wrong is evident if one places Muir's modern version of *The Brig O' Dread* by its medieval Scots vernacular original. At times one has the impression that Muir is writing in an adopted language, and, as a Scot, he is of course. The connexion of this with his want of verbal alertness offers, at any rate, a tentative explanation for his failure, in poems which claim to be intuitive, to bring to bear those rhythmic overtones and linguistic resonances whereby the poetic intuition is primarily kindled.

The neo-romantic style is still with us in the poetry of W. S. Graham, whose interesting *Night Fishing* (1955) reveals the waste of an evident talent. Such, it seems, is inevitably entailed by this preconceived attitudinizing in singing robes. The time had long been ripe for a reaction. Indeed, it had already begun in the early forties, perhaps most significantly in the work of Keith Douglas.

Douglas, who was killed in the war at the age of twenty-four, belonged to the generation of Sidney Keyes. It was Keyes who received the public recognition which in terms of comparative achievement is so evidently the due of the other poet. For that of a poet who died in his twentieth year, Keyes's work, self-consciously over-literary as it was, showed a great deal of promise (see *Paul Klee, Kestrels, Seascape*), but more than that one cannot say. Douglas's *Collected Poems* did not appear until 1951. The wartime poetry boom, which had made possible three editions of Keyes was over. The fashion was on the point of change - from the excessive verbal luxuriance of neo-romanticism to the slick formalism of Limpson's successors. Douglas, like any original poet, did not fit the picture and although his collection was well received, it seems to have left but little trace on a literary consciousness that swings so readily to journalistic extremes. Its contents, despite the immaturities, suggest that here



### PART THREE

was a poet whose death was a serious loss for English literature. Take, for example, these lines from *Time Eating* (1941):

But as he makes he eats; the very part  
Where he began, even the elusive heart,  
Time's ruminative tongue will wash  
and slow juice masticate all flesh.

That volatile huge intestine holds  
material and abstract in its folds:  
thought and ambition melt and even the world  
will alter, in that catholic belly curled.

Here one has something of the linguistic compactness and steady cumulative attack Douglas brings to his awareness of mutability. Death may be the chief factor behind his verse, but it focuses rather than blurs the vision. Sensuous detail grows compact in its presence; life takes on an edge, as in *The Sea Bird*, *Syria I*, *Egyptian Sentry*, *Cairo Jag*, *Words*, and as in the view of the wrecked houses in *Mersa*:

faces with sightless doors  
for eyes, with cracks like tears,  
oozing at corners. A dead tank alone  
leans where the gossips stood.

I see my feet like stones  
underwater. The logical little fish  
converge and nip the flesh  
imagining I am one of the dead.

What one finds impressive in Douglas, even in those poems where the idiom is not yet equal to the vision, is the intrinsically poetic nature of that vision. In *The Marvel*, for instance, a dead swordfish has 'yielded to the sharp enquiring blade/the eye which guided him' past dead mariners 'digested by the gluttonous tides'; and a live sailor, using the eye for a magnifying glass, burns into the deck of his ship the name of a harlot in his last port. The incident welds into a poetic unity the worlds of life and death, of time and nature.

'To be sentimental or emotional now is dangerous to oneself and to others', Douglas wrote in 1943, and the fruit of this realization is the firm yet malleable tone which can encompass the charmingly satirical *Behaviour of Fish in an Egyptian Tea Garden*, the satiric yet good-

natured *Aristocrats*, and he ironically ambitious *Vergismatist*. The refusal to force himself into stylistic neatness (which in effect has been the attempt of many of the poets of the fifties) meant a certain unevenness and want of finish in his later poems; yet even this is evidence of Douglas's integrity. An Owen or a Rosenberg he is not, but it is difficult to think of an English poet, of his or of a succeeding generation, whose achievement has equalled his potentiality.<sup>4</sup>

Douglas was not alone in his reaction against neo-romanticism, but he was alone in the poetic scope of his integrity. Roy Fuller, for example, after an interesting start with *A Lost Season* (1944), soon turns to that narrowly defensive wit which marks those poets of the fifties who have been assembled in the public mind as the Movement.<sup>5</sup> With Fuller's *Inaction*, poetry, one feels, has begun its present retreat behind the privet hedge:

A strange dog trots into the drive, sniffs, turns  
And pees against a mudguard of my car.  
I see this through the window, past *The Times*,  
And drop my toast and impotently glare.

The kind of spiritual nutriment we are capable of deriving from the ensuing ironies (the poet has been praised for 'poking fun at himself') could scarcely be more limited. 'Poking fun at oneself', as distinct from 'taking oneself too seriously' as the neo-romantics did, has come to represent an odd critical positive and it is this, recommended as 'bed-rock honesty', that is supposed to distinguish that poet whom common consent has chosen as the most significant of the anti-romantic Movement, Philip Larkin (*The Less Deceived*, 1955). Larkin's work shows real promise (*Deceptions*) and some pleasant accomplishment (*At Grass*), though whether his tenderly nursed sense of defeat can take him any further remains to be seen. His subject-matter is largely his own inadequacy, but it requires the technical capacity of a Laforgue or a Corbière to convince us that such a subject is worthwhile. One can only deplore, as one deplores Thomas's attempt to do a Rimbaud seventy years too late, Larkin's refusal to note what had been done by the French before 1890 in the ironic self-deprecating mode. With his knowing humility ('Hatless I take off/My cycle clips in awkward reverence') and his naughty jokes (a bathing photograph to be snaffled from a girl's album, an Irish

### PART THREE

sixpence put in the church collecting box), he is nearer to John Betjeman's *niaiserie* than to mature wit. At all events, a movement in which he is the star performer can scarcely be thought of as having the energy to affect the ultimate destinies of English poetry.

In conclusion, one can say that during the post-war years writers of as intelligent a diversity as Anne Ridler, F. T. Prince, Ronald Bottrall, Norman MacCaig, William Soutar, Patrick Kavanagh, Donald Davie have written individual poems of distinction.\* But what one misses in the literary scene is the presence of that poet who can provide us, as in the past Eliot and Lawrence have provided us, with the conclusive image of our condition and the prophetic image of that which we may attain to. Unless the art of the poet can give us the true measure of ourselves, we cannot properly know ourselves. What we await is the poet whose individuality is strong enough to stamp itself on the processes of our living, and by the keenness of whose insight those processes may be changed.

\* To this list anyone but Mr Tomlinson would certainly have added the name of Charles Tomlinson. *Editor.*

### NOTES

1. For a discussion of MacDiarmid's work see John Speir's *The Scots Literary Tradition* (1940).

2. Donald Davie, 'Forma and Concept in Ezra Pound's *Cantos*', *Irish Writing*, 36, and 'Adrian Stokes and Pound's *Cantos*', *Twentieth Century* (November 1956).

3. See 'Ezra Pound and *Women of Trachis*', in Denis Donoghue's *The Thin Voice* (1959).

4. See G. S. Fraser's *Keith Douglas* (British Academy, 1956).

5. For a history of the Movement see my 'The Middlebrow Muse', *Essays in Criticism*, vii, No. 2.

# THE NOVEL TODAY

GILBERT PHELPS

WHEN we remember the scope and variety of English fiction at the beginning of the century in the hands of such writers as Henry James, Joseph Conrad, E. M. Forster, D. H. Lawrence, James Joyce, and Virginia Woolf, it is only too clear that there has been a steady decline in imaginative and creative power. The trend of the English novel since the war has been analogous to that of the poetry of the period – a turning aside from the mainstream of European literature, a complacent rejection of the culture of the past, and a retreat into parochialism. At the same time it would be wrong to conclude as some critics have done, that the novel as an art form is dead: there are signs of continuing vitality and there are some exceptions to the general rule.

In attempting, within a limited space, to give a picture of post-war developments it is convenient to divide novelists roughly into four main groups: the archaic survivals of the thirties (that is, the writers who appeared to be in the forefront of the literary scene between the wars); novelists who were writing more or less successfully during the same period, but who either did not achieve maturity or failed to gain full recognition until after the war; the so-called 'Angry Young Men' who reacted against both groups; and a few younger writers who belong to no particular category.

The general point to be made about the survivors of the thirties is that for the most part they proved to have insufficient staying-power to make the transition to the post-war world. Some of them, it is true, tried to grapple with the fact of war itself. Charles Morgan, for example, in *The River Line* (1949) wrote about airmen shot down in enemy territory and escaping with the help of the Resistance: but the mood and atmosphere are exactly the same as in earlier novels such as *Sparkenbroke* and the presence of the war merely serves to emphasize the chilly and essentially vapid nature of the philosophizing. Most of the old 'writers of sensibility' in fact have failed to make any fundamental adjustment to new realities: they have gone on writing as if they were denizens of Chekhov's Cherry Orchard, hanging on

long after the trees had been chopped down. They have tended to retreat farther and farther into the fantasy worlds of reverie, reminiscence, self-contemplation, and 'fine writing'. Their state of mind is summed up by Cyril Connolly's valediction in the last issue of *Horizon*:

It is closing-time in the gardens of the West and from now on an artist will be judged only by the resonance of his solitude or the quality of his despair.<sup>1</sup>

It is hardly surprising that the young have reacted against this attitude to life and literature.

Even those novelists who once appeared in the vanguard of contemporary thought have for the most part demonstrated that their vitality was as feeble creatively as it was politically. Rex Warner, for example, emerged from the pseudo-Kafka clouds of *The Aerodrome* (1941) to retreat in his last novel (*The Young Caesar*, 1958) into historical fiction. In some cases it is the period of the thirties itself that has become the never-never land, to be viewed with the same kind of nostalgia that the Edwardian nursery inspired in the novelists of sensibility. Christopher Isherwood's *The World in the Evening* (1954) is an example, and although Aldous Huxley's *Ape and Essence* (1949) envisages a world of the future devastated by atomic warfare, it is in effect a series of set-pieces illustrating a thesis that has changed little with the passing of the years, while *Brave New World Revisited* (1959) is what its title implies. As for George Orwell's *1948* (1950), which aroused so much excitement when it was published, it is now surely apparent that this was almost entirely related to Cold War fever. The writing is far worse than in his pre-war books, tired and flaccid where it is not simply hysterical, while the characterization is shoddy in the extreme.

The dilemma of these uneasy survivors of the thirties is perhaps symbolized by Evelyn Waugh's novel *The Ordeal of Gilbert Pinfold* (1957). In the first chapter, entitled 'Portrait of the Artist in Middle Age', we are shown that little of passion is left to men like Mr Pinfold beyond a few testy prejudices:

... His strongest tastes were negative. He abhorred plastics, Picasso, sunbathing and jazz – everything in fact that had happened in his own life-time. The tiny kindling of charity which came to him through his religion, sufficed only to temper his

disgust and change it to boredom . . . He wished no one ill, but he looked at the world *sub specie aeternitatis* and he found it flat as a map; except when, rather often, personal arrogance intruded. Then he would come tumbling from his exalted point of observation. Shocked by a bad bottle of wine, an impertinent stranger, or a fault in syntax . . .

The candour of the portrait undoubtedly gives the novel a considerable documentary interest.

One other point must be made in this connexion – that it has become increasingly evident that little of the experimentation of the twenties and thirties has borne fruit. There are no heirs to James Joyce, and *Finnegans Wake* (1939) appears to have been a dead-end as far as English fiction is concerned, while Virginia Woolf's last novel *Between the Acts* (1941) was an application of techniques and attitudes that had little relevance to the emotional climate of the times. The more radical challenge represented by D. H. Lawrence has also gone unanswered.

There is however one of 'the novelists of the thirties' who has adapted himself with some degree of success to the world this side of the war. Graham Greene's work – and the difficulty of arriving at a final judgement purely in terms of literary criticism – is discussed elsewhere in this volume; here it is only necessary to stress that the feeling for the contemporary scene that informed his earlier novels has not deserted him, though it can be argued that the peak of his achievement was marked by *The Heart of the Matter* (1948). Greene's sense of topicality is not a matter of mere journalistic detail or of catching the right idiom; it is a deeper response that pervades the style and characterization of each novel. Thus in *The End of an Affair* (1951), whatever its other faults, the atmosphere of war-time London is present in the reader's imagination in a far more fundamental way than in, say, Elizabeth Bowen's *The Heat of the Day* (1949). Similarly in *The Quiet American* (1955) the Cold War, in its particular context of the war in Indo-China, is absorbed into the very texture of the novel in a way that recalls the integration of politics, character, and setting in Joseph Conrad's *Under Western Eyes*.

Another novelist must be mentioned in this group, though he really belongs to a different classification. Wyndham Lewis published *The Childermass* in 1927, but the sequels, *Monstre Gai* and *Malign*

*Fiesta* (which together with the unfinished *Trial of Man* were to form a sequence entitled *The Human Age*), did not appear until 1955. He published other works of fiction too after the war, including the novel *Self-Condemed* (1954) and a collection of short stories. But the date of *Childermass* has some significance, for Wyndham Lewis really belongs to the far more robust ethos of the twenties. His vision of human society (in his painting as well as in his fiction) was formed in the explosion of anger that succeeded the First World War. It is pessimistic and largely destructive, expressed, as far as the sequence of novels is concerned, in terms of fable rather than realistic fiction, and marred by long digressions and clumsiness of technique. But at the same time it is a unified and dynamic vision of twentieth-century man and his predicament as a member of a mass civilization, as victim and participant in the Age of the Machine. It was the very scale of this conception that provided the impetus that carried it without any relaxation of purpose beyond the 1930s; but there was little development in Lewis's basic attitudes, most of which were already apparent in his early novel *Tarr* (1918).

\* \* \*

The most unusual novelist of the second group is Ivy Compton-Burnett. At first sight she strikes one as an eccentric, something in the manner of Ronald Firbank, and she is the kind of writer who tends to attract the distorting attentions of the cult. Her material is peculiarly, not to say idiosyncratically, selective; for she deals almost exclusively with upper-middle-class society of the Edwardian era. She is quite explicit about this:

I do not feel that I have any real organic knowledge later than 1910. I should not write of later times with enough grasp or confidence.<sup>2</sup>

Moreover, her treatment of the Edwardian world is the reverse of naturalistic. She does not consider descriptions of persons or scenes essential to a novel. 'They are not of a play,' she has said, 'and both deal with imaginary human beings and their lives.'<sup>3</sup> And her highly melodramatic plots are conducted almost entirely by means of stylized conversations.

This brief account suggests two obvious considerations: first, that

Ivy Compton-Burnett is quite clear in her own mind what she is doing and why: and second, that in doing it she has imposed upon herself a set of conventions that one might well assume would be utterly inhibiting. They *do* of course restrict her scope – but it is the scope she wants and it is the limitations, so clearly recognized and accepted, that give her strength. The fictional world she presents is consistent, with its own laws of being and its own credibility. It is this consistency and self-sufficiency that tempt one to compare her with Jane Austen. For one thing she has a genuine wit – as distinct from smartness and stylistic ornament – proceeding from a critical but humane assessment of the standards and values of her creations. The comparison of course immediately emphasizes the great differences. Jane Austen was writing about a way of life that was a present and stable reality: her vision was both more profound and more vital, and her humour has a radiance, a redeeming quality that Ivy Compton-Burnett's lacks. She was not deliberately building up a set of conventions: they sprang from a milieu in which she was an active participant. Ivy Compton-Burnett, on the other hand, in order to achieve her effects is forced to isolate her characters in a setting that has already passed away. She may be right when she says her own connexion with it is still 'organic', but her success is to a very large extent dependent upon its historical unreality as far as her readers are concerned (it is real enough artistically of course, within the bounds of each novel). The country house of the 1890s provides her, in fact, with a laboratory in which she is able to make her observations upon human behaviour. She makes this clear in the course of an argument designed to show that people today, because of the wider sphere in which their lives take place, are less 'individualized' than their forbears: they may, she says:



for she has little concern for normal human relationships or for romantic passion, and her world is a narrower and more sombre one in consequence. Many of her novels are about domestic tyrants: sometimes men – as in *A House and Its Head* (1935), *Parents and Children* (1941), and *Manservant and Maid* (1947); sometimes women – as in *Daughters and Sons* (1937) and *Elders and Betters* (1944).

The plots usually depend for their resolution upon violent climaxes, either the actual committing of a crime or the revelation of some terrible skeleton in the cupboard. The crimes include incest in *Brothers and Sisters* (1929), matricide in *Men and Wives* (1931), sundry thefts and fornications in *Darkness and Day* (1951), and attempted suicide in *The Present and the Past* (1953). There is here an interest in violence that in a lesser writer could have degenerated into morbid sensationalism or unconscious farce. She is saved from both by her sureness of touch and the complete freedom from sentimentality in her view of human nature. 'I think', she has said, 'there are signs that strange things happen, though they do not emerge. I believe it would go ill with many of us if we were faced with temptation, and I suspect that with some of us it does go ill.'<sup>5</sup> And when she was criticized (in connexion with *Elders and Betters*) on the grounds that she often allowed the wicked to flourish she argued that her whole point was that wickedness frequently did *not* get punished, 'and that is why it is natural to be guilty of it. When it is likely to be punished, most of us avoid it.'<sup>6</sup>

This does not mean that there is a lack of human values in her work: the absence of sentimentality is indeed a guarantee of their presence. Like Jane Austen she has no illusions about human nature and makes no concessions to complacency or wishful thinking; like her she is distrustful of moral generalizations. But a sympathy and understanding for the victims of human wickedness – the evil-doers included – emerge unmistakably from the drift and texture of the conventionalized dialogues and in the tensions they generate.

It is perhaps surprising that a novelist who consistently writes about a vanished era should have attracted a following in the post-war world. But of course modernity is not a matter of surface detail: it belongs to the depth and quality of the response that a writer makes to the society in which he lives, and if these are present it hardly matters in what period the actual 'fable' is cast. Most of the human

passions with which Ivy Compton-Burnett deals belong to no particular age or society – though it is true that some of them have a special relevance in acquisitive ones – and in depicting them she is in fact doing so in full awareness of the modern world. She writes about Edwardians; but she would have written quite differently if she had been living among them. One cannot doubt, for example, that she is conscious, however indirectly, of a cultural climate that includes Ibsen, Dostoyevsky, and Freud. Her triumph may be a precarious one, depending as it does upon the maintenance of a rather peculiar set of conventions and of a corresponding precision of verbal stylization. There were signs perhaps in *Mother and Son* (1955) that she had been listening to critics who had urged her to be more ‘compassionate’: it is to be hoped that she will reject such pleas; for a relaxation of control might be disastrous. And within the limits she has set herself it is a triumph and she is one of the few writers who have come into prominence since the war whom one can mention in the company of the great novelists of the past without too great a sense of incongruity.

L. P. Hartley must be regarded as one of the others. In some respects he is less original than Ivy Compton-Burnett, in so far as he has literary debts, notably to Henry James, which are more obvious and sometimes become obtrusive. At times, when inspiration flags, he falls back on Jamesian flourishes of style, as in this passage from *My Fellow Devils* (1951):

‘If you loved me,’ Colum said, as though divining her thoughts, ‘you would believe me.’ But he had put the cart before the horse. If she had believed him she would have loved him.

the explorations of childhood conducted by most of his contemporaries is the fact that there are no nostalgic or sentimental distortions. The scene, almost in spite of the gracefully modulated style with its suggestion of an English water-colour, is solidly set, and the emotions and behaviour of the characters are directly and concretely related to it. A measure of his control of his material is that one can accept the symbolical relationship of shrimp and anemone to the gentle and rather ineffectual Eustace and his vivid, dominating sister Hilda in the same compassionate and ironical spirit in which it is offered.

*The Sixth Heaven* (1946), the second novel of the trilogy, is not as successful, reading in places as if the author regarded it as a dumping-ground for the machinery of the plot which he isn't really interested in but which has to be disposed of so that he can get on to the sequel, *Eustace and Hilda*, which finally reveals the underlying nature of the relationship between brother and sister and carries it to its tragic conclusion, in which Eustace in effect opts out of life in order to release his sister from the attachment, is indeed an impressive work. It is a theme which few English novelists have tackled, but Hartley encompasses it with surprising ease. His style is in fact tougher than it looks at first sight: it can achieve depth as well as subtlety. Eustace's gradual realization of the situation, his sudden understanding of the intensity of emotion pent up inside his sister, and the wilting of his own spirit before it constitute some of the most effective scenes in contemporary English fiction.

When he ventures outside the areas of experience he knows well, the results are not always as happy. *The Boat* (1949), for example, is long and, for Hartley, surprisingly confused. The characters outside the author's own social sphere do not convince: the 'lower orders' appear mostly as figures of fun. The climax, too, is harsh and contrived and the symbolism of the boat is thrust down our throats by one of the characters:

'It was a death-wish. He couldn't face modern life . . . and the boat was his way out, a symbol of absolute peace, where no-one could get at him . . .'

In some of the novels we feel that Hartley himself is aware of a reluctance to 'face modern life' and that as a kind of self-discipline he is forcing himself to deal with aspects of it that are basically repug-

nant to him and which he cannot properly assimilate. The film world in *My Fellow Devils*, suburbia in *A Perfect Woman* (1955) – though this is also a delicate study in personal relationships – and the changes in the class system in *The Hireling* (1957) – perhaps the most contrived of all his novels – are examples; while in *Facial Justice* (published this year) he experiments with the fantasy world of science-fiction.

The most successful novel since his trilogy has been *The Go-Between* (1953), which is set in the same period and rendered with something of the same rich concreteness of detail. In some ways Leo, the boy who in ignorance of the implications acts as go-between for the lovers, resembles the Eustace of the earlier novels, for he too is the innocent cause of emotional upheavals which he is too weak to sustain. He is, in the words he uses when years later he looks back on the experiences that had blighted his whole life, 'a foreigner in the world of emotions, ignorant of their language but compelled to listen to it'. The novel does not possess quite the assurance of *The Shrinip and the Anemone* and *Eustace and Hilda*, but the tumult of emotions and the long, hot summer against which they are enacted are communicated vividly and sensuously, and here, as in all his work, there is a deep interest in problems of moral discrimination and an urgent concern for humane and civilized values that make it possible to relate him, almost alone among his contemporaries, to the tradition represented by Henry James.

Neither Ivy Compton-Burnett nor L. P. Hartley, in spite of the inherent vitality that carried them out of the thirties where so many of their contemporaries remained transfixed, are in touch with the post-war scene in the same direct way as Anthony Powell and C. P. Snow, both of whom set out to be historians of their times. Anthony Powell's first novel, *Afternoon Men*, published in 1931, was a satire directed against the chic world of fashion and the arts, somewhat in the manner of Evelyn Waugh, and weakened by the same wavering of moral focus. It was not, however, until 1951 that, with the publication of *A Question of Upbringing*, he launched his long (and still unfinished) sequence 'The Music of Time'. The other novels in the series to date have been *A Buyer's Market* (1952), *The Acceptance World* (1955), and *Casanova's Chinese Restaurant* (1960). The over-all title obviously invites comparison with Proust, and this is perhaps unfortunate as it serves to underline the fact that the sequence so

far reveals little in the way of structural design or pattern, and the style is not suited to sustained flights, and certainly not to musical analogies. It is a medium for short bursts of description, for sudden stabs of insight and characterization, for vignette, metaphor, and epigram rather than for the slow unfolding of a theme. But it has a kind of garrulous energy and consistency (at times recalling the Huxley of *Crome Yellow*), and although much of the world it communicates is incomprehensible to readers without the necessary caste-marks or passwords, certain standards of human decency emerge clearly and uncompromisingly.

C. P. Snow makes a more determined effort than any of the novelists so far considered (with the exception of Graham Greene) to be up-to-date. His survey of the new areas of power and of the new élite that have emerged since the war is a remarkable and sustained achievement. Its limitations are examined in another essay: here it must be said that in spite of the considerable powers of intellect and organization brought to bear in his long sequence of novels (which takes its title from the first in the series, *Strangers and Brothers*, published in 1940) they are not topical in the imaginatively 'committed' sense that Graham Greene's are. He may range farther but he does not go deeper: the external features of the contemporary world are there but we recognize them rather than apprehend them — with the intelligence rather than with the senses. Too often the minutiae of the struggle for power are offered as substitutes for those emotional and imaginative challenges that we expect from great fiction. In spite, too, of the modernity of the themes, C. P. Snow has evolved no new techniques to embody them, merely taking over the machinery of the Trollope-type novel of intrigue. His style, moreover, is so devoid of anything approaching poetry that at times we cannot resist the feeling that he has taken up writing as an afterthought. There really is something in Lionel Trilling's amusing *jeu d'esprit* in which he envisages C. P. Snow discussing the state of the novel with a group of 'top people' at his London club, and on an impulse taking up a challenge to write novels, just to show that it 'can be done'.<sup>8</sup> At the same time, of course, he has done it with outstanding virtuosity.

Ivy Compton-Burnett, L. P. Hartley, Anthony Powell, and C. P. Snow, then, are novelists who, at varying levels of achievement, have emerged successfully into the world this side of the war, and have

had something of value to say to it. None of them, however, can be thought of as a 'growing point' in the English novel. The only writer in this group who makes one aware of any really powerful release of fresh forces is Joyce Cary. The source lies to a considerable extent in Cary's own personality which was vigorous, extrovert, and tough: tough, that is, in the sense that it contained a hard core of integrity that never dissolves into self-pity or self-justification – the reverse in fact of that kind of toughness we find in some American writers such as Hemingway or in some of our 'Angry Young Men', which is in fact inverted sentimentality and a fear of deep feeling. Cary, one feels, was afraid of nothing and his personal bravery gets into his characters. Sara in *Herself Surprised* (1941), Gulley Jimson in *The Horse's Mouth* (1944), and Nina in *Prisoner of Grace* (1952), for example, have something of that simple courage that we find in Joseph Conrad's novels.

The other source of Cary's freshness and strength is that he was able to return to the older tradition of the English novel in a far more radical way than any of his contemporaries; he returns moreover with a kind of joyousness as if he is tapping a life-giving spring. There are signs in his work that he was influenced by James Joyce (for example in his use of 'interior monologue') and perhaps also by Virginia Woolf and Dorothy Richardson, but his vital attachment was to the most robust part of the English tradition, that represented by the great moral writers such as Joseph Conrad and George Eliot, and beyond them to the Evangelical and Protestant traditions, leading through Defoe back to Bunyan.

Joyce Cary's early novels, with the exception of *Castle Corner* (1938), drew on his experiences as an administrator in Nigeria. The first of them was the much re-written *Aissa Saved* (1932), but the best of this group is *Mister Johnson* (1939), the story of an ill-fated African clerk, told with humour and compassion, and already displaying that power of absorption in his characters' desires and destinies which constitutes one of his greatest strengths. The same objectivity is apparent in his novels about children, particularly perhaps in *Charley is My Darling* (1940), which is about slum children evacuated to a Devonshire village at the beginning of the war. His major work however consists of two trilogies (though the novels are independent of each other). In the first, consisting of *Herself Surprised* (1941), *To Be A Pilgrim*:







that word in preference to dissenter because that implies an organized bloc separation from the Establishment, whereas dissentience has a more modulated meaning – more to disagree with majority sentiments and opinions.<sup>10</sup>

This is certainly a valid distinction, for these writers do not display the kind of anger we associate with D. H. Lawrence or with Wyndham Lewis in this century, or with such great eighteenth-century satirists as Swift and Pope, or with the Elizabethan social filibusters such as Nashe (with whom they have something in common), because what is implicit in these cases is either standards of moral reference passionately believed in or the background of a society and a culture that still possess a positive dynamic.

Nevertheless the mood of 'dissentience' is related to circumstances peculiar to the post-war era, and above all to the vacuum left by the collapse of the writers of the thirties whom we have already mentioned – those whom Kenneth Allsop describes as 'the old literati, the candelabra-and-wine *rentier* writers'.<sup>11</sup> This collapse finally exposed the hollowness both of their moral and aesthetic standards and of their political pretensions. It is here indeed that the 'Angry Young Men' have performed a service that must not be underestimated. The flavour of cultural disillusionment, for example, is captured by Kingsley Amis in *Lucky Jim* (1954), particularly in those passages that expose the 'academic racket' and the pseudo-culture that so often accompanies it, and notably in the very funny scenes describing Professor Welch's musical evening and Jim Dixon's public lecture on 'Merrie England'. Amis explores other types of aesthetic cant in *That Uncertain Feeling* (1955) and *I Like It Here* (1958).

The political disillusionment of the post-war intelligentsia, producing in most of these writers a perfunctory and lukewarm socialism, is less successfully conveyed in Amis's novels, but John Wain in his picaresque novel *Hurry On Down*, which appeared a few months before *Lucky Jim*, put his finger on one important aspect of it – the desire at one and the same time to opt out of society and yet to find a niche in it, provided it is one that carries no responsibility of 'commitment' – when at the end of the novel Charles Lumley reflects:

Neutrality; he had found it at last. The running fight between himself and society had ended in a draw.



those who were supposed to guide them was too strong for many of the 'Angry Young Men' to resist. In consequence the fifties was a decade in which self-advertisement and the literary gimmick became passports not only to the popular papers and magazines but also to such organs of the Establishment as the highbrow Sunday papers and the BBC Third Programme. These organs, it could be argued, are designed primarily to reflect prevailing fashions and only secondarily to offer constructive criticism upon them. The damage lay not so much here as in the encouragement it gave to the writers concerned to regard themselves as pundits, and thus to take it too easily in their creative work. All of these novels indeed contain flaws that twenty years ago would have been regarded as evidence of lack of simple craftsmanship or sheer laziness. In the case of Kingsley Amis, what small political content there is in *Lucky Jim* is dragged in by the scruff of the neck; both in this novel and in *That Uncertain Feeling* the genuinely comic scenes are outnumbered by set-pieces which read like not very successful pastiches of Jerome K. Jerome and P. G. Wodehouse; *I Like It Here* frequently has to fall back on lavatory jokes; and most of *Take a Girl Like You* (1960) reads like a contribution to a women's magazine under some such title as 'A Father's Advice to his Teenage Daughter'.

John Wain has vaguely suggested that the point of *Hurry On Down* was 'something to do with goodness',<sup>12</sup> but surely it should not be necessary to explain: it is the precise formulation of moral issues in concrete moral terms that makes a really good novel. *Hurry On Down* although it contains some successful passages of realistic description in the manner of Arnold Bennett (for example the scenes describing Rosa's working-class home), does not succeed at this serious level. Neither does *Living in the Present* (1955), and the fact that Wain felt it necessary in this case too to explain what it was all about suggests that he himself had his doubts. *The Contenders* (1958) marked no real advance and was again marred by a slapdash style applied whether the character or situation demanded it or not. It is only in his recently published volume of short stories, *Nuncle*, that there are signs of talent getting down to the hard work of creative detachment and control.

The faults of John Braine's *Room At The Top* are less glaring though the novel is marred by sensationalism and sentimentality, and

by frequent descents into copywriter's English. Its comment on what Richard Hoggart has described as the 'shiny barbarism' of the day could have been more pointed if it had been more thoroughly assessed. On the other hand the character of Joe Lampton is more successfully projected than many of the 'new heroes': we do at least see into his mind, and the small core of moral sensibility behind the brashness and the go-getting is revealed, not just stated. The most fully realized of these heroes however - and the most thoroughly integrated into his background and its underlying objectives - is Arthur Seaton in Sillitoe's *Saturday Night and Sunday Morning*, though here too there are evident faults in technique and construction, for example in the flash-backs to army life.

Nevertheless, when all the criticisms have been made, it is necessary to point out that these novels have an important documentary interest of the kind that will provide the literary historian of the future, who is attempting to assess the mood and temper of the fifties, with valuable illustrative material.

There are of course other novels in the same genre, but for the most part they are cases of jumping on the band wagon, and in any case a mood of disgruntlement against society cannot provide a powerful enough impetus to sustain anything so significant as a 'school'. A slight variation was provided by Iris Murdoch, whose reputation in some circles is similar to that enjoyed by Dorothy Sayers before the war. Both *Under the Net* (1954) and *Flight from the Enchanter* (1956) are more or less in the genre, with some highbrow flourishes added. Although Iris Murdoch writes without the grosser lapses of style found in some of the other novelists we have mentioned, she does not have their vitality, and she seems uncertain in which direction to exercise her talent. *The Sandcastle* (1957), which again displayed genuine narrative gifts, was a very 'English' exploration of 'the eternal triangle', reminiscent in its well-bred tone and lack of any real passion of the famous British film *Brief Encounter*. There are, too, attempts to heighten the generally tepid emotional atmosphere by the kind of symbolical incidents - such as the mysterious appearance of the gipsy at crucial points in the story - that even Thomas Hardy could not always manage successfully. In Iris Murdoch's latest novel *The Bell* (1958) the pace of the narrative and the ingenuity of the plot (in themselves exciting enough) are, when one passes to other

above the station of the themes and the rather colourless characters, so that the end of the novel is blurred, and in this case the symbolism becomes portentous and at times grotesque.

\* \* \*

In this brief and necessarily incomplete survey of the contemporary English novel two other writers of stature, who do not come under any of the other main groupings, must be mentioned. The first of them is Lawrence Durrell who has achieved a considerable reputation at home and abroad with his 'Alexandrian Quartet'.<sup>13</sup> It is easy to account for his popularity on the Continent, for his work has obvious similarities to that of Proust, Musil, and Mann, and also to that of two English novelists who have been adopted by many European critics somewhat to the bewilderment of their English counterparts - Aldous Huxley and Charles Morgan.

Durrell's technical approach in these four novels was an original one. He did not conceive of them as sequels in the ordinary sense, he tells us in the Preface to *Balthazar*, but as 'siblings', based not on continuous time as in Proust and Joyce, but on the 'relativity proposition'. On the face of it this looked like an exciting experimental departure, but in practice it has involved a good deal of repetition and clumsy device such as the exchange of lengthy letters and journals interleaved with comments by the narrator of the moment. This would not matter if in the process a new imaginative vision of the interactions of time and place had been communicated or new insights into human destiny achieved. But in these respects it is difficult to see how Durrell's method can be regarded as more original than Joyce Cary's in his two trilogies. There is no doubt of course as to the frequent brilliance of Durrell's writing: there are some splendid verbal fireworks and an impressive unity of tone is maintained. One's main doubt is whether the human values offered are worth all the elaborate virtuosity. For the most part the characters in these novels remain flat surfaces, upon which are inscribed, in bizarre ornamental profusion, all kinds of gestures, habits, sayings; they never become three-dimensional figures, for the simple reason that there is no flow of sympathy between them, or indeed between them and the reader. Moreover, there is a startling gap between the ideas and the erudition ascribed

to the characters and their actual behaviour; and what is more the ideas themselves, if we are not too overawed by the *empressement* with which they are presented, on examination are seen to be not so very original after all. This is apparent, for example, in the presentation of Pursewarden, who is supposed to be a 'great novelist'. But the only evidence we are offered is a collection of indifferent epigrams and some erudite but philosophically barren observations (that recall Huxley's *Crome Yellow*), while from what we see of him in action he has reached a level of maturity about commensurate with that of the average undergraduate. We are shown nothing to convince us that he has the equipment, the responses to life, or the personality (as Cary does convince us with Gulley Jimson, naïve though he is in his worldly dealings) to make an artist of any kind at all.

Durrell displays plenty of energy in the 'Alexandrian Quartet', but it is almost entirely cerebral and cannot compare with that deep and wide-ranging imaginative sympathy which, it is suggested, is a requisite for serious fiction in any age. The human values in his novels are thin and wavering: the novels purport to analyse 'love', but where are the examples of profound human relationships that alone could support the claim? The subtleties offered are almost entirely those of the intellect or of sexual behaviour divorced from love in any significant sense of the word. If ever there was a case of 'sex in the head' it is here, and there seems no sound reason to modify F. R. Leavis's judgement made in connexion with Lawrence Durrell's early novel *The Black Book* (1938):

... the spirit of what we are being offered affects me as being essentially a desire, in Laurentian phrase, 'to do dirt' on life.<sup>14</sup>

The other novelist who must be mentioned is a far more promising portent for the future of English fiction. Angus Wilson is perhaps our only genuine living satirist, taking the word satire in its true meaning as a criticism of society related to positive moral standards. He is also thoroughly contemporary in the sense that he gives us a vivid and recognizable picture of some at least of the aspects of the society in which we live. He is also the only novelist since Cary who has ventured to handle complicated plots and a large cast of variegated background in the manner of Dickens and with something of his zest, even though the results are sometimes uneven.

It is true that the satire, for example in some of the short stories in *The Wrong Set* (1949) and in *Such Darling Dodos* (1952), become shrill in tone, and although he has the satirist's eye for dress, mannerisms, facial expressions, and an acute ear for sectional idiom he sometimes substitutes them for deeper understanding, especially if they fall outside the environments he knows personally. His working-class characters, for example, are usually caricatures with comic names presented with an air of patronage – Mrs Salad and her grandson Vin in *Anglo-Saxon Attitudes* (1956) are examples. His women are seldom convincing unless they are neurotically sick in some way or other, as with Ella Sands in *Hemlock and After* (1952) and the heroine of *The Middle Age of Mrs Eliot* (1958). His preoccupation with the forces of evil in society sometimes involves him in unconvincing melodrama: as with the machinations of the procuress Mrs Curry in *Hemlock and After*. On the other hand we are conscious of a real emanation of evil in that vivid and viciously observed scene in the same novel where Sherman Winter and his friends chase each other round Vardon Hall with 'girlish screams'. And Bernard Sands, the hero of the novel, is an outstanding fictional portrait, executed with objective insight and sympathy, of one of the representative figures of our times, the liberal humanist of the thirties surviving in an alien world to find that the values which once seemed to him absolute have lost their power for good, both in the external world and in his inner life.

Almost as successful as a piece of sympathetic creation is Gerald Middleton in *Anglo-Saxon Attitudes*, the distinguished ex-professor of medieval history 'who had not even fulfilled the scholarly promise of studies whose general value he now doubted . . . A sixty-year-old failure . . . and of that most boring kind, a failure with a conscience. The academic background is remarkably detailed, and sustained by narrative impetus that induces in the reader a complete acceptance of the moral importance of the somewhat abstruse point at issue in the Melpham excavations for Gerald's spiritual well-being, for the integrity of the world of scholarship, and by implication for the wide world beyond.

Angus Wilson, in fact, is one of the few post-war novelists who can be said to have made any significant contribution to the great tradition of English fiction. It remains true that the achievement since the war does not equal that of the earlier years of the century

but there is at least evidence that the English novel is by no means a spent force.<sup>15</sup>

1. *Horizon*, Vol. 20, December 1949-January 1950.
2. Quoted by Robert Liddell in *The Novels of I. Compton-Burnett* (Gollancz, 1955), p. 23.
3. *Ibid.* p. 87.
4. *Ibid.* p. 22.
5. *Ibid.* p. 36.
6. *Ibid.* p. 36.
7. *Towards Standards of Criticism: Selections from the Calendar of Modern Letters 1925-7*, ed. F. R. Leavis (Wishart & Co, 1933), pp. 61-3.
8. 'The Novel Alive or Dead', in *A Gathering of Fugitives*, Lionel Trilling (Secker and Warburg, 1957).
9. *The Novel Since 1939*, Henry Reed (The British Council, Longmans Green & Co., 1946), p. 28.
10. *The Angry Decade: A Survey of the Cultural Revolt of the Fifties*, Kenneth Allsop (Peter Owen, 1958), p. 9.
11. *Ibid.* p. 25.
12. 'Along the Tightrope', John Wain, in *Declaration* (MacGibbon & Kee).
13. *Justine* (Faber, 1957), *Balthazar* (1958), *Mountolive* (1958), and *Clea* (1960).
14. *The Great Tradition*, F. R. Leavis (Chatto & Windus, 1948), p. 26.
15. I should like to thank Mrs Mary Winkler for the opportunity of discussing with her my findings on some of the novelists and novels I have considered.





---

PART

IV



# APPENDIX

COMPILED BY JOY SAMUEL

## FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

<i>The Social and Intellectual Setting</i>	
Histories: General and Political	498
The Social and Economic Background	499
Social Ideas	501
Philosophy, Religion, Culture, Education	502
Art, Architecture, Music	504
The Press, Broadcasting, Cinema	505
Science	506
<i>The Literature</i>	
Bibliographies	506
General Studies	506
Poetry	507
Drama	508
The Novel	508
Other Prose and Criticism	509

## AUTHORS AND WORKS

<i>Collections and Anthologies</i>	511
<i>Authors</i>	512

## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

B.C.P.	British Council Pamphlet	P.Q.	Philological Quarterly
E. & S.	Essays and Studies by Members of the English Association	R.E.S.	Review of English Studies
E.L.	Everyman's Library	S.P.	Studies in Philology
E.L.H.	English Literary History	w.c.	World's Classics
J.E.G.P.	Journal of English and Germanic Philology	abr.	abridged
M.L.R.	Modern Language Review	b.	born
M.P.	Modern Philology	c.	circa
O.S.A.	Oxford Standard Authors	d.	died
P.M.L.A.	Publications of the Mod- ern Language Association of America	ed.	edited, edition, editor
		pub.	published
		repr.	reprinted
		rev.	revised
		trans.	translated
		?	probably, uncertain

## FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

### *The Social and Intellectual Setting*

#### HISTORIES: GENERAL AND POLITICAL

- Allen, H. C. *Great Britain and the United States* (London, 1954)
- Amery, L. S. (ed.) *The Times History of the War in South Africa* (7 vols., London, 1900-9)
- Campion, Gilbert et al. *British Government since 1918* (London, 1950)
- Carrington, C. E. *An Exposition of Empire* (Cambridge, 1947)
- Churchill, W. S. *The World Crisis 1911-18* (6 vols., London, 1923-31; 1 vol., London, 1931)
- Churchill, W. S. *The Second World War* (6 vols., London, 1948-54; 1 vol., London, 1959)
- Cruttwell, C. R. M. F. *A History of the Great War* (Oxford, 1935)
- Ensor, R. C. K. *England 1870-1914* (Oxford, 1935)
- Feiling, Keith *History of England* (London, 1950)
- Fuller, J. F. C. *The Second World War* (London, 1948)
- Jackson, W. E. *Local Government in England and Wales* (Penguin, 1949)
- Jenkins, Roy *Mr Balfour's Poodle* (London, 1954)
- Jennings, Ivor *The Queen's Government* (Penguin, 1954)
- Keir, D. L. *Constitutional History of Modern Britain 1485-1951* (London, 1957)
- Lynd, Helen *England in the 1880s* (Oxford, 1945)
- Namier, Lewis *Europe in Decay 1936-1940* (London, 1950)
- Newton, A. P. *A Hundred Years of British Empire* (London, 1940)
- Reynolds, P. A. *British Foreign Policy between the Wars* (London, 1954)
- Smellie, K. B. *A Hundred Years of English Government* (rev. ed.; London, 1951)
- Spender, J. A. *Great Britain: Empire and Commonwealth 1886-1935* (London, 1936)
- Toynbee, Arnold *Nationality and the War* (London, 1915)
- Wingfield-Stratford, E. *The Harvest of Victory 1918-1926* (London, 1935)
- Bassett, R. *1931: Political Crisis* (London, 1958)
- Bealey, F. and Pelling, H. *Labour and Politics 1900-1926* (London, 1958)
- Blake, R. *The Unknown Prime Minister* (London, 1955)
- Cole, G. D. H. *History of the Labour Party from 1914* (London, 1948)
- Feiling, K. *The Life of Neville Chamberlain* (London, 1954)

# FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

- Fulford, Roger *Votes for Women* (London, 1957)  
*History of The Times: 1912-48* (2 vols., London, 1952)  
 Jones, Thomas Lloyd George (London, 1951)  
 Lyman, R. W. *The First Labour Government 1924* (London, 1957)  
 McKenzie, R. T. *British Political Parties* (London, 1955)  
 Pelling, H. *The Origins of the Labour Party* (London, 1954)  
 Somervell, D. C. *British Politics since 1900* (London, 1950)  
 Spender, J. A. and Asquith, Cyril *Life of Lord Oxford and Asquith* (2 vols., London, 1932)

## THE SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC BACKGROUND

- Abrams, Mark *Condition of the British People 1911-1945* (London, 1945)  
 Adams, W. S. *Edwardian Heritage* (London, 1949)  
 Altick, Richard *The English Common Reader* (Cambridge, 1957)  
 Bourne, George *Change in the Village* (London, 1912)  
 Bourne, George *The Wheelwright's Shop* (Cambridge, 1923)  
 Carr-Saunders, A. M. and Jones, D. C. *A Survey of the Social Structure of England and Wales* (Oxford, 1927)  
 Carr-Saunders, A. M., Jones, D. C., and Moses, C. A. *Social Conditions in England and Wales* (Oxford, 1958)  
 Carter, G. M. et al. *Major Foreign Powers* (New York, 1957)  
 Clapham, Sir J. H. *An Economic History of Modern Britain* (3 vols., Cambridge, 1930-8)  
 Cohen, E. W. *The Growth of the British Civil Service 1780-1950* (London, 1941)

- Graves, Robert and Hodge, Alan *The Long Weekend: A Social History of Great Britain 1918-1939* (London, 1940)
- Gregg, P. *A Social and Economic History of Britain 1760-1950* (London, 1950)
- Halévy, E. *A History of the English People 1815-1915* Vol. vi (rev. ed., London, 1950)
- Harding, D. W. *Social Psychology and Individual Values* (London, 1953)
- Hearnshaw, E. et al. *Edwardian England* (London, 1933)
- Hinde, R. S. E. *The British Penal System 1773-1950* (London, 1951)
- Hutt, A. *Postwar History of the British Working Class* (London, 1937)
- Jones, G. P. and Pool, A. G. *Hundred Years of Economic Development in Great Britain* (London, 1940)
- Keynes, J. M. *End of Laissez-Faire* (London, 1926)
- Lewis, R. and Maude, A. *The English Middle Classes* (Penguin, 1949)
- Lewis, W. A. *Economic Survey 1919-1939* (London, 1949)
- Marsh, D. C. *The Changing Social Structure of England and Wales 1871-1951* (London, 1958)
- Munford, W. A. *Penny Rate: Aspects of British Public Library History 1850-1950* (London, 1951)
- Murison, W. S. *The Public Library* (London, 1955)
- Murray, J. *The General Strike of 1926* (London, 1951)
- Orwell, George *The Road to Wigan Pier* (London, 1937)
- Plummer, A. *New British Industries of the Twentieth Century* (London, 1937)
- Priestley, J. B. *English Journey* (London, 1934)
- Robertson Scott, J. W. *England's Green and Pleasant Land* (London, 1925)
- Robbins, Lionel *The Great Depression* (London, 1934)
- Rowntree, B. S. *Poverty and Progress* (London, 1941)
- Strachey, John *The Coming Struggle for Power* (London, 1932)
- Symons, Julian *The General Strike* (London, 1957)
- Thompson, David *England in the Nineteenth Century 1815-1914* (Penguin, 1950)
- Titmuss, R. *Essays on the Welfare State* (London, 1958)
- Webb, S. and B. *History of Trade Unionism* (rev. ed., London, 1950)
- Williams, Francis *Magnificent Journey: The Rise of the Trade Unions* (London, 1954)
- Williams, T. G. *The Main Currents of Social and Industrial Change 1870-1924* (London, 1925)
- Williams, W. M. *The Sociology of an English Village: Gosforth* (London, 1956)

- Wootton, Barbara *Plan or No Plan* (London, 1934)  
 Zweig, F. *Labour, Life and Poverty* (London, 1948)  
 Zweig, F. *Women's Life and Labour* (London, 1952)  
 Zweig, F. *The British Worker* (Penguin, 1952)

## SOCIAL IDEAS

- Adams, Henry *The Education of Henry Adams* (Boston, 1918)  
 Annan, Noel *The Curious-Strength of Positivism in English Political Thought* (Oxford, 1959)  
 Benn, S. I. and Peters, R. S. *Social Principles and the Democratic State* (London, 1959)  
 Brown, J. A. C. *The Social Psychology of Industry* (Penguin, 1954)  
 Burnham, James *The Managerial Revolution* (London, 1942)  
 Crossman, R. H. S. (ed.) *The God that Failed* (London, 1950)  
 Drucker, Peter *The End of Economic Man* (London, 1938)  
 Flugel, J. C. *Man, Morals and Society* (London, 1954)  
 Fromm, Erich, *The Fear of Freedom* (London, 1842)  
 Frazer, J. *The Golden Bough* (abr. ed., 2 vols., London, 1957)  
 Freud, Sigmund *Civilization and Its Discontents* (London, 1930)  
 Freud, Sigmund *Totem and Taboo* (London, 1950)  
 Ginsberg, Morris *Reason and Unreason in Society* (London, 1947)  
 Harding, D. W. *Social Psychology and Individual Values* (London, 1953)  
 Hughes, H. S. *Consciousness and Society* (London, 1959)  
 Hulme, T. E. *Speculations* (London, 1924)  
 Klein, M. *Our Adult World and Its Roots in Childhood* (London, 1961)  
 Koestler, Arthur *The Yogi and the Commissar* (London, 1945)  
 Mannheim, Karl *Ideology and Utopia* (London, 1936)  
 Mannheim, Karl *Man and Society* (London, 1940)  
 Meyerhoff, Hans (ed.) *The Philosophy of History in Our Time* (New York, 1959)  
 Mumford, Lewis *Technics and Civilisation* (New York, 1934)  
 Mumford, Lewis *The Culture of Cities* (London, 1940)  
 Niebuhr, R. *Moral Man and Immoral Society* (New York, 1932)  
 Oakeshott, M. *Political Education* (Cambridge, 1955)  
 Ortega y Gasset, José *The Revolt of the Masses* (London, 1932)  
 Popper, K. *The Open Society* (London, 1945)  
 Popper, K. *The Poverty of Historicism* (London, 1957)  
 Riesman, David *The Lonely Crowd* (New Haven, 1950)  
 Suttee, Ian D. *The Origins of Love and Hate* (London, 1951)  
 Wallas, Graham *Human Nature in Politics* (London, 1941)  
 Webb, Beatrice *My Apprenticeship* (London, 1922)



## PART FOUR

- Webb, Beatrice *Our Partnership* (London, 1948)  
 Weil, Simone *The Need for Roots* (London, 1952)  
 Wells, H. G. *Experiment in Autobiography* (11 vols., London, 1934)  
 Whyte, W. H. *The Organization Man* (New York, 1956)  
 Wootton, Barbara *Social Science and Social Pathology* (London, 1959)

## PHILOSOPHY, RELIGION, CULTURE, EDUCATION

- Ayer, A. J. *Language, Truth and Logic* (London, 1936, 2nd ed., 1949)  
 Ayer, A. J. *et al.* *The Revolution in Philosophy* (London, 1956)  
 Flew, A. G. N. (ed.) *Logic and Language* (London, 1952)  
 Hampshire, Stuart *Thought and Action* (London, 1959)  
 Hare, R. M. *The Language of Morals* (Oxford, 1952)  
 Macbeath, A. *Experiments in Living* (London, 1952)  
 Nowell-Smith, P. H. *Ethics* (Penguin, 1954)  
 Passmore, J. A. *A Hundred Years of Philosophy* (London, 1957)  
 Routh, H. V. *English Literature and Ideas in the Twentieth Century*  
 (London, 1946)  
 Ryle, Gilbert *The Concept of Mind* (London, 1949)  
 Stevenson, C. L. *Language and Ethics* (New Haven, 1945)  
 Toulmin, S. *The Place of Reason in Ethics* (Cambridge, 1952)  
 Urmson, J. O. *Philosophical Analysis* (Oxford, 1956)  
 Warnock, G. J. *English Philosophy since 1900* (London, 1958)  
 Weldon, T. D. *The Vocabulary of Politics* (Penguin, 1953)

- Dawson, Christopher *Progress and Religion* (London, 1929)  
 Dawson, Christopher *Religion and Culture* (London, 1948)  
 Eliot, T. S. *The Idea of a Christian Society* (London, 1939)  
 Garbett, Cyril *In an Age of Revolution* (Penguin, 1952)  
 Lloyd, Roger *Church of England in the Twentieth Century* (2 vols.,  
 London, 1950)  
 Mackintosh, H. R. *Types of Modern Theology* (London, 1937)  
 Mathew, David *Catholicism in England* (London, 1948)  
 Russell, Bertrand *Religion and Science* (London, 1935)  
 Spinks, G. S. (ed.) *Religion in Britain since 1900* (London, 1952)  
 Temple, William *Christianity and the Social Order* (London, 1942)  
 Watkin, E. I. *Roman Catholicism in England from the Reformation to 1*  
 (London, 1957)  
 Wearmouth, R. F. *The Social and Political Influence of Methodism in*  
*the Twentieth Century* (London, 1957)  
 Webb, C. J. *A Study of Religious Thought in England from 1850* (London,  
 1933)

# FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

- Barzun, J. *The House of Intellect* (London, 1960)
- Cauter, T. and Downham, J. S. *The Communication of Ideas: a Study of Contemporary Influences on Urban Life* (London, 1954)
- Churchill, R. C. *Disagreements: a Polemic on Culture in the English Democracy* (London, 1950)
- Eliot, T. S. *Notes Towards the Definition of Culture* (London, 1948)
- Hoggart, R. *The Uses of Literacy* (London, 1957)
- Leavis, F. R. *For Continuity* (London, 1933)
- Leavis, F. R. and Thompson, Denys *Culture and Environment* (London, 1933)
- Mass Observation *Puzzled People* (London, 1947)
- Opie, I. and P. *Lore and Language of School-Children* (Oxford, 1959)
- Rowntree, B. S. and Lavers, G. R. *English Life and Leisure* (London, 1951)
- Williams, R. *Culture and Society: 1780-1950* (London, 1958)
- Williams, R. *The Long Revolution* (London, 1961)
- Adams, J. (ed.) *The New Teaching* (London, 1918)
- Adler, Alfred *The Education of Children* (London, 1930)
- Armfelt, R. *The Structure of English Education* (London, 1955)
- Armytage, W. H. G. *Civic Universities* (London, 1955)
- Bantock, G. H. *Freedom and Authority in Education* (London, 1952)
- Clarke, F. *Education and Social Change* (London, 1940)
- Crowther, Sir G. et al. *15 to 18* (London, 1960)
- Dewey, J. *School and Society* (Chicago, 1900)
- Dewey, J. *Democracy and Education* (New York, 1916)
- Flexner, A. *Universities: American, English, German* (Oxford, 1930)
- Floud, Jean et al. *Social Change and Educational Opportunity* (London, 1956)
- Ford, Boris (ed.) *Young Writers: Young Readers* (London, 1960)
- Hardie, C. D. *Truth and Fallacy in Educational Theory* (Cambridge, 1942)
- Holbrook, David *English for Maturity* (Cambridge, 1961)
- Holmes, Edmond *What is and What Might be* (London, 1911)
- Isaacs, S. *The Intellectual Growth of Young Children* (London, 1930)
- Isaacs, S. *The Social Development of Young Children* (London, 1933)
- Judges, A. V. (ed.) *Looking Forward in Education* (London, 1955)
- Leavis, F. R. *Education and the University* (London, 1946)
- Lowndes, G. A. N. *The Silent Social Revolution* (London, 1937)
- Moberley, Walter *The Crisis in the Universities* (London, 1949)
- Nunn, Percy *Education: Its Data and First Principles* (London, 1920, rev. ed. 1945)
- Pedley, R. *Comprehensive Education* (London, 1956)

#### PART FOUR

- Peters, R. S. *Authority, Responsibility and Education* (London, 1960)  
 Piaget, Jean *Language and Thought of the Child* (London, rev. ed. 1959)  
 Potter, Stephen *The Muse in Chains* (London, 1937)  
 Sampson, George *English for the English* (Cambridge, new ed. 1952)  
 Smith, W. O. L. *Education in Great Britain* (2nd ed., London, 1956)  
 Stocks, Mary *The W. E. A.: First Fifty Years* (London, 1953)  
 Sully, J. *Studies in Childhood* (London, 1895)  
 Truscot, Bruce *Red Brick University* (London, 1943)  
 Venables, P. F. R. *Technical Education* (London, 1955)  
 Walsh, W. *The Use of Imagination* (London, 1959)  
 Whitehead, A. W. *The Aims of Education* (London, 1929)

#### ART, ARCHITECTURE, MUSIC

- Ashcroft, T. *English Art and English Society* (London, 1936)  
 Bell, Clive *Art* (London, 1914)  
 Bertram, Anthony *A Century of British Painting* (London, 1951)  
 Fry, Roger *Vision and Design* (London, 1920)  
 Fry, Roger *Reflections on British Painting* (London, 1934)  
 Hubbard H. *A Hundred Years of British Painting: 1851-1951* (London, 1951)  
 Ironside, Robin *Painting since 1939* (B.C.P., 1947)  
 Lambert, M. and Marx, E. *English Popular Art* (London, 1951)  
 Read, H. *Contemporary British Art* (Penguin, 1951)  
 Read, H. (ed.) *The Modern Movement in English Architecture, Painting and Sculpture* (London, 1934)  
 Read, H. (ed.) *Surrealism* (London, 1936)  
 Wilenski, R. H. *English Painting* (rev. ed., London, 1954)  
 Behrendt, W. C. *Modern Building* (London, 1937)  
 Briggs, Martin S. *Building Today* (London, 1944)  
 Briggs, Martin S. *Puritan Architecture and its Future* (London, 1946)  
 Crowe, Sylvia *Tomorrow's Landscape* (London, 1956)  
 Crowe, Sylvia *The Landscape of Power* (London, 1959)  
 Giedion, Siegfried *Space, Time and Architecture* (Cambridge, Mass., 1941)  
 Hitchcock, Henry Russell *Architecture, Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries* (Penguin, 1958)  
 Inglis, C. E. *The Aesthetic Aspect of Civil Engineering* (London, 1944)  
 McGrath, Raymond *Twentieth Century Houses* (London, 1934)  
 Maufe, Edward (ed.) *Modern Church Architecture* (London, 1948)  
 Nairn, Ian 'Outrage' in *Architectural Review* (June 1955)

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

- Nairn, Ian *Counter-attack Against Subtopia* (London, 1956)  
Pevsner, N. *Pioneers of the Modern Movement* (London, 1936)  
Richards, J. M. *Introduction to Modern Architecture* (Penguin, 1940)  
Summerson, John *Heavenly Mansions* (London, 1949)  
Whittrick, Arnold *European Architecture in the Twentieth Century* (2 vols., London, 1953)

- Bacharach, A. L. (ed.) *British Music of Our Time* (Penguin, 1946)  
Blom, E. *Music in England* (Penguin, 1942)  
Hodeir, A. *Jazz, its Evolution and Essence* (London, 1956)  
Lambert, Constant *Music Ho!* (London, 1934)  
Mellers, W. *Music and Society* (London, 1946)

#### THE PRESS, BROADCASTING, CINEMA

- Angell, Norman *The Press and the Organisation of Society* (London, 1922)  
Camrose, Lord *British Newspapers and their Controllers* (London, 1947)  
Mass Observation *The Press and its Readers* (London, 1949)  
Steed, Henry Wickham *The Press* (London, 1938)  
Turner, E. S. *The Shocking History of Advertising* (London, 1952)  
Wertham, Fredric *The Seduction of the Innocent* (New York, 1954)  
Williams, Francis *Dangerous Estate. The Anatomy of Newspapers* (London, 1957)
- Crozier, Mary *Broadcasting: Sound and Television* (Oxford, 1958)  
Fraser, L. *Propaganda* (Oxford, 1957)  
Gorham, Maurice *Broadcasting and Television since 1900* (London, 1952)  
Himmelweit, Hilde *Television and the Child* (London, 1952)  
Paulu, Burton *British Broadcasting* (Oxford, 1957)  
Rotha, Paul *Television in the Making* (London, 1956)

## PART FOUR

### SCIENCE

- Bernal, J. D. *Social Function of Science* (London, 1939)
- Burt, E. A. *The Metaphysical Foundations of Modern Physical Science* (London, 1932)
- Crowther, J. G. *The Social Relations of Science* (London, 1941)
- Crowther, J. G. *British Scientists of the Twentieth Century* (London, 1952)
- Dingle, H. *Science and Literary Criticism* (London, 1949)
- Dingle, H. (ed.) *A Century of Science 1851-1951* (London, 1951)
- Evans, B. *Literature and Science* (London, 1954)
- Heath, A. E. (ed.) *Scientific Thought in the Twentieth Century* (London, 1951)
- Munroe, Ruth L. *Schools of Psychoanalytic Thought* (London, 1957)
- Russell, Bertrand *The Scientific Outlook* (London, 1931)
- Sherwood Taylor, F. *The Century of Science* (London, 1941)
- Waddington, C. H. *The Scientific Attitude* (Penguin, 1941)
- Whitehead, A. N. *Science and the Modern World* (Cambridge, 1926)

### The Literature

#### BIBLIOGRAPHIES

- Bateson, F. (ed.) *C.B.E.L. III* (Cambridge, 1940)
- Batho, E. and Dobrée, Bonamy *The Victorians and After 1830-1914* (London, 1938)
- Bibliography of English Language and Literature* (Cambridge, annually since 1920)
- Daiches, D. *The Present Age, after 1920* (London, 1958)
- Kunitz, S. J. and Haycroft, H. *Twentieth Century Authors: a Biographical Dictionary of Modern Literature* (New York, 1942; Supplement by S. J. Kunitz, New York, 1955)
- Manly, J. M. and Rickert, E. *Contemporary British Literature* (rev. ed. London, 1935)
- Modern Language Association: Annual Bibliography (English Section)* (Baltimore, later New York, annually since 1919)
- Muir, Edwin *The Present Age, from 1914* (London, 1939)
- Watson, G. (ed.) *C.B.E.L. V: Supplement* (Cambridge, 1957)
- Watson, G. (ed.) *The Concise C.B.E.L.* (Cambridge, 1958)
- The Year's Work in English Studies* (London, annually since 1919)

#### GENERAL STUDIES

- Burke, Kenneth *The Philosophy of Literary Form* (New York, 1941)
- Fraser, G. S. *The Modern Writer and his World* (London, 1953)

## FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

- Hicks, G. S. *Figures of Transition* (New York, 1939)  
 Hoffman, F. J. *Freudianism and the Literary Mind* (London, 1945)  
 Hough, G. G. *Image and Experience* (London, 1960)  
 Isaacs, Jacob *An Assessment of Twentieth Century Literature* (London, 1951)  
 Isaacs, Jacob (ed.) *Contemporary Movements in European Literature* (London, 1928)  
 Johnstone, J. K. *The Bloomsbury Group* (London, 1954)  
 Leavis, Q. D. *Fiction and the Reading Public* (London, 1932)  
 Muir, Edwin *Transition: Essays in Contemporary Literature* (London, 1926)  
 Pound, E. *Literary Essays* (London, 1954)  
 Rickword, Edgell (ed.) *Scrutinies* (London, 1928)  
 Swinnerton, Frank *The Georgian Literary Scene, 1910-1935* (rev. ed. London, 1950)  
 Tindall, W. Y. *Forces in Modern British Literature 1885-1946* (New York, 1947)  
 Trilling, Lionel *The Liberal Imagination* (London, 1951)  
 Vines, S. *A Hundred Years of English Literature 1830-1940* (London, 1950)  
 Ward, A. C. *The Nineteen-Twenties* (London, 1930)  
 Wilson, Edmund *Axel's Castle* (New York, 1931)

## POETRY

- Alvarez, A. *The Shaping Spirit* (London, 1958)  
 Blackmur, R. *Language as Gesture* (London, 1954)  
 Bowra, M. *The Heritage of Symbolism* (London, 1943)  
 Bowra, M. *The Creative Experiment* (London, 1949)  
 Brooks, C. *Modern Poetry and the Tradition* (Chapel Hill, 1939)  
 Daiches, David *Poetry and the Modern World* (Chicago, 1940)  
 Fraser, G. S. *Vision and Rhetoric* (London, 1959)  
 Graves, Robert *The Common Asphodel* (London, 1949)  
 Graves, Robert and Riding, Laura *A Survey of Modernist Poetry* (London, 1927)  
 Heller, E. *The Hazard of Modern Poetry* (London, 1953)  
 Isaacs, J. *The Background of Modern Poetry* (London, 1931)  
 Kermode, F. *Romantic Image* (London, 1957)  
 Leavis, F. R. *New Bearings in English Poetry* (rev. ed., London, 1950)  
 MacNeice, Louis *Modern Poetry* (Oxford, 1938)  
 O'Connor, William Van *Sense and Sensibility in Modern Poetry* (Minnesota, 1948)  
 Pinto, V. de Sola *Crisis in English Poetry 1880-1940* (London, 1951)

#### PART FOUR

- Read, Herbert *Form in Modern Poetry* (London, 1932)  
Roberts, Michael *Introduction to The Faber Book of Modern Verse*  
(London, 1936)  
Savage, D. S. *The Personal Principle* (London, 1944)  
Scarfe, Francis *Auden and After: The Liberation of Poetry 1930-1941*  
(London, 1942)

#### DRAMA

- Archer, W. *The Old Drama and the New* (London, 1923)  
Beerbohm, Max *Around Theatres: Reviews 1898-1910* (rev. ed., London, 1953)  
Bentley, E. R. *The Playwright as Thinker: A Study of Drama in Modern Times* (New York, 1946)  
Bentley, E. R. *The Modern Theatre* (London, 1948)  
Bourgeois, Maurice *Synge and the Irish Theatre* (London, 1913)  
Carter, Huntley *The New Spirit in the European Theatre 1914-1924*  
(London, 1925)  
Craig, Gordon *On the Art of the Theatre* (London, 1957)  
Downs, B. W. *Ibsen: the Intellectual Background* (Cambridge, 1946)  
Eliot, T. S. *Poetry and Drama* (London, 1951)  
Ellis-Fermor, Una *The Irish Dramatic Movement* (London, 1954)  
Lumley, F. *Trends in Twentieth Century Drama* (London, 1956)  
Macnamara, B. *Abbey Plays 1899-1948* (Dublin, 1949)  
Marshall, Norman *The Other Theatre* (London, 1947)  
Peacock, R. *The Poet in the Theatre* (London, 1946)  
Reynolds, D. *Modern English Drama* (London, 1949)  
Robinson, L. *Ireland's Abbey Theatre 1899-1951* (London, 1951)  
Setterquist, J. *Ibsen and the Beginnings of Anglo-Irish Drama* (Upsala, 1951)  
Shaw, G. B. (ed. A. C. Ward) *Plays and Players* (w.c., 1952)  
Williams, R. *Drama from Ibsen to Eliot* (London, 1952)  
Williamson, A. *Theatre of Two Decades* (London, 1951)

#### THE NOVEL

- Allen, Walter *The English Novel: a Short Critical History* (London, 1954)  
Baker, E. A. *The History of the English Novel*, vol. 10 (London, 1939)  
Beach, J. W. *The Twentieth Century Novel* (New York, 1932)  
Bewley, M. *The Complex Fate* (London, 1953)  
Bewley, M. *The Eccentric Design* (London, 1959)  
Brown, E. K. *Rhythm in the Novel* (Toronto, 1950)  
Chevalley, Abel *Le Roman anglais de notre temps* (Oxford, 1921)  
Comfort, Alex *The Novel and Our Time* (London, 1948)

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND REFERENCE

- Daiches, David *The Novel and the Modern World* (rev. ed., Cambridge, 1960)
- Edel, L. *The Psychological Novel 1900-1950* (London, 1955)
- Forster, E. M. *Aspects of the Novel* (London, 1927)
- Fox, R. *The Novel and the People* (London, 1937)
- Frierson, W. C. *The English Novel in Transition 1885-1940* (Norman, Oklahoma, 1942)
- Howe, I. *Politics and the Novel* (New York, 1957)
- Humphrey, R. *The Stream of Consciousness in the Modern Novel* (London, 1954)
- James, Henry, 'The New Novel' in *Notes on Novelists* (London, 1914)
- Kettle, Arnold *An Introduction to the English Novel*, vol. II (London, 1953)
- Leavis, F. R. *The Great Tradition* (London, 1948)
- Leavis, Q. D. *Fiction and the Reading Public* (London, 1932)
- Liddell, Robert *A Treatise on the Novel* (London, 1947)
- Modern Fiction Studies* (Lafayette, Indiana, annually since 1955)
- Muir, Edwin *The Structure of the Novel* (London, 1932)
- Muller, H. J. *Modern Fiction: a Study of Values* (New York, 1937)
- O'Connor, William Van (ed.) *Forms of Modern Fiction* (Minnesota, 1948)
- Phelps, G. *The Russian Novel in English Fiction* (London, 1956)
- Van Ghent, D. *The English Novel: Form and Function* (New York, 1953)
- West, R. B. and Staleman, R. W. *The Art of Modern Fiction* (New York, 1949)
- Zabel, M. D. *Craft and Character in Fiction* (London, 1957)

#### OTHER PROSE AND CRITICISM

- Dobrée, Bonamy *Modern Prose Style* (Oxford, 1934)
- Forster, E. M. *The Development of English Prose between 1918 and 1939* (London, 1945)
- Graves, R. and Hodge, A. *The Reader over your Shoulder* (London, 1943)
- House, Humphry 'The Present Art of Biography' in *All in Due Time* (London, 1955)
- Longaker, Mark *Contemporary Biography* (Philadelphia, 1934)
- Maurois, André (trans. S. C. Roberts) *Aspects of Biography* (Cambridge, 1939)
- Murry, J. M. *The Problem of Style* (Oxford, 1922)
- Neff, E. *The Poetry of History* (New York, 1947)
- Nicolson, Harold *The Development of English Biography* (London, 1927)
- Read, Herbert *English Prose Style* (London, 1928)



#### PART FOUR

- Buckley, Vincent *Poetry and Morality* (London, 1959)
- Crane, R. S. *The Language of Criticism and the Structure of Poetry* (Toronto, 1953)
- Gardner, H. *The Business of Literary Criticism* (Oxford, 1959)
- Foerster, N. et al. *Literary Scholarship, its Aims and Methods* (Chapel Hill, 1941)
- Frye, Northrop *Anatomy of Criticism* (London, 1957)
- James, D. G. *Scepticism and Poetry* (London, 1937)
- Lawrence, A. W. (ed.) *Men in Print: Essays in Literary Criticism* (London, 1939)
- Lawrence, D. H. *Phoenix* (London, 1936)
- Leavis, F. R. *For Continuity* (Cambridge, 1933)
- Leavis, F. R. *The Common Pursuit* (London, 1952)
- Leavis, F. R. (ed.) *Towards Standards of Criticism* (London, 1933)
- Richards, I. A. *Principles of Literary Criticism* (London, 1924)
- Richards, I. A. *Practical Criticism: A Study of Literary Judgment* (London, 1929)
- Richards, I. A. *Science and Poetry* (rev. ed., London, 1935)
- West, A. *Crisis and Criticism* (London, 1937)
- Zabel, M. D. *Literary Opinion in America* (rev. ed., London, 1951)

## AUTHORS AND WORKS

### COLLECTIONS AND ANTHOLOGIES

- Allott, K. (ed.) *Contemporary Verse* (Penguin, 1950)
- Caldwell, T. and Henderson, P. (eds.) *The Golden Book of Modern English Poetry 1870-1920* (E.L., 1935)
- Church, Richard and Bozman, M. M. (eds.) *Poems of Our Time* (E.L., 1945)
- Conquest, R. (ed.) *New Lines* (London, 1956)
- Fraser, G. S. (ed.) *Poetry Now* (London, 1956)
- Friar, K. and Brinnin, J. M. (eds.) *Modern Poetry* (New York, 1951)
- Grigson, Geoffrey *Poetry of the Present* (London, 1949)
- Heath-Stubbs, J. F. and Wright, David (eds.) *The Faber Book of Twentieth Century Verse* (London, 1953)
- Holloway, John (ed.) *Poems of the Mid-Century* (London, 1957)
- Irvine, J. *The Flowering Branch: an Anthology of Irish Poetry* (Belfast, 1945)
- Jones, Phyllis M. (ed.) *Modern English Verse 1900-1950* (rev. ed., W.C., 1955)
- Lehmann, John (ed.) *Poems from 'New Writing' 1936-46* (London, 1946)
- Lewis, C. Day and Lehmann, John (eds.) *The Chatto Book of Modern Poetry 1915-51* (London, 1956)
- Lewis, C. Day and Strong, L. A. G. *A New Anthology of Modern Verse 1920-40* (London, 1941)
- Lindsay, Maurice (ed.) *Modern Scottish Poetry 1920-1945* (London, 1946)
- Monro, H. (ed.) *Twentieth Century Poetry* (London, 1929)
- Parrot, T. M. and Thorp, W. (eds.) *Poetry of the Transition 1850-1914* (New York, 1932)
- Roberts, D. K. (ed.) *The Centuries' Poetry, Vol V. Hopkins to Eliot* (Penguin, 1938)
- Roberts, Michael (ed.) *The Faber Book of Modern Verse* (rev. ed., London, 1951)
- Stephens, J., Beck, E. D., and Snow, R. H. (eds.) *Victorian and Later English Poets* (New York, 1934-7)
- Untermeyer, Louis (ed.) *Modern British Poetry* (New York, 1950)
- Williams, Oscar (ed.) *Little Treasury of Modern Poetry* (rev. ed., London, 1950)
- Yeats, W. B. (ed.) *The Oxford Book of Modern Verse* (Oxford, 1936)
- Young, Douglas (ed.) *Scottish Verse 1851-1951* (London, 1952)

## PART FOUR

- Bentley, Eric (ed.) *The Importance of 'Scrutiny'* (New York, 1948)
- Hudson, D. (ed.) *English Critical Essays: Twentieth Century* (2nd series, w.c., 1958)
- Hyman, S. E. (ed.) *The Critical Performance* (New York, 1957)
- Jones, Phyllis M. (ed.) *English Critical Essays: Twentieth Century* (w.c., 1933)
- Rhys, E. (ed.) *Modern English Essays 1870-1920* (5 vols., E.L., 1923)
- Rhys, E. and Vaughan, Lloyd (eds.) *A Century of English Essays* (E.L., 1913)
- Stallman, R. W. (ed.) *Critiques and Essays in Criticism 1920-1948* (New York, 1949)
- Ward, A. C. (ed.) *Specimens of English Dramatic Criticism* (w.c., 1945)
- Hadfield, John (ed.) *Modern Short Stories* (E.L., 1939)
- Hudson, D. (ed.) *English Short Stories, Modern* (2nd series, w.c., 1952)
- Jones, Phyllis M. (ed.) *English Short Stories, Modern* (w.c., 1939)
- Lehmann, John (ed.) *English Short Stories from 'New Writing'* (London, 1952)
- Milford, H. (ed.) *English Short Stories* (w.c., 1927)

## AUTHORS

AUDEN, WYSTAN HUGH (b. 1907): Poet and dramatist; b. York, son of a doctor; educated at Gresham's School, Holt, and Christ Church, Oxford; travelled in Germany and later worked as a schoolmaster; first volume of poetry, *Poems*, published 1930; collaborated with Christopher Isherwood (q.v.) on three verse plays, *The Dog Beneath the Skin* (1935), *The Ascent of F6* (1936), and *On the Frontier* (1938); served in the Spanish Civil War; married Erika Mann, daughter of Thomas Mann, 1938; emigrated to America, 1939, and has subsequently become an American citizen; returned to England as Professor of Poetry at Oxford, 1956; recent works include *The Enchafed Flood* (1950), a work of criticism, and *Nones* (1951); has collaborated on *Poets of the English Language* (5 vols.), on libretto for Stravinsky's opera *The Rake's Progress*, and on new translation of *The Magic Flute*.

*Collected Poetry* (New York, 1945); *Selected Poems* in Penguin (1 vol.)

*Collected Shorter Poems 1930-44* (London, 1950)

See Joseph W. Beach, *The Making of the Auden Canon* (Minneapolis, 1957)

Richard Hoggart, *Auden: an Introductory Essay* (London, 1951)

BARRIE, JAMES MATTHEW (1860-1937): Dramatist and novelist; b. Kirriemuir, son of a weaver; educated at Glasgow Academy, Durn-

fries Academy, and Edinburgh University; worked on the *Nottingham Journal*, 1883-5; moved to London, 1885; *A Window in Thrums*, 1889; *The Little Minister*, 1891; married Mary Ansell, 1894; wrote several other novels of Scottish life, but after the production of *Quality Street* (1901) devoted his time to the theatre; plays include *The Admirable Crichton* (1902), *Peter Pan* (1904), *Dear Brutus* (1917), and *Mary Rose* (1920); knighted, 1913; awarded Order of Merit, 1922.

BECKETT, SAMUEL (b. 1906): Dramatist and novelist; b. Dublin of Jewish parentage; educated at Portora Royal School and Trinity College, Dublin; university exchange lectureship, Paris, 1928-30; resident in France from 1932, visiting Germany, London, and occasionally Dublin; acted as secretary to James Joyce in Paris; remained in France, writing, during the war; from 1947 has written principally in French; first play *En attendant Godot* performed Paris, 1952, New York, 1954; London and Dublin, 1956.

BEERBOHM, MAX (1872-1956): Essayist and short story writer; b. London, educated at Charterhouse and Merton College, Oxford; during the nineties wrote for the *Yellow Book* and succeeded G. B. Shaw (q.v.) as dramatic critic of the *Saturday Review*; first collection of essays *The Works of Max Beerbohm* published 1896; married an American, Florence Kahn, 1910, and thereafter lived in Italy; *Zuleika Dobson*, 1911; further collections of essays and sketches appeared in 1919, 1920, and 1928; created another reputation as a broadcaster, reading his own sketches, some of which were subsequently published as *Mainly on the Air*, 1946.

BELL, ADRIAN HANBURY (b. 1901): Novelist and poet; educated at Uppingham; after leaving school went as a pupil to a Suffolk farm and has since farmed in East and West Suffolk; works include *Corduroy* (1930), *The Cherry Tree* (1932), *Men and the Fields* (1939), *The Flower and the Wheel* (1949), and *The Path by the Window* (1952).

BELLOC, JOSEPH PETER RENÉ HILAIRE (1870-1953): Essayist, historian, novelist, and poet; b. Saint Cloud, near Paris, son of a French barrister and his English wife; educated at the Oratory School, Birmingham (under Cardinal Newman), and Balliol College, Oxford; served in the French artillery; married an American, Elodie Hogan, 1896; *The Path to Rome*, 1902; naturalized British, 1902; *Esto Perpetua*, 1905; Liberal M.P. for Salford, 1906-10; literary editor of the *Morning Post*, 1906-10; founded the *Eye Witness*, 1911, with Cecil Chesterton; *The Servile*

## PART FOUR

*State*, 1912; *A History of England*, 1925-31; *The Crisis of our Civilisation*, 1937; also wrote many biographies, including studies of *Danton* (1899), *Robespierre* (1901), *Marie Antoinette* (1909), *Joan of Arc* (1929), and *Milton* (1935).

Life by Robert Speaight (London, 1957)

*Selected Essays*, ed. J. B. Morton (London, 1948)

*An Anthology of Prose and Verse*, ed. W. N. Roughead (London, 1951)

*Verse*, ed. W. N. Roughead (London, 1954)

*Stories, Essays, and Poems in E. L.* (1 vol.)

*Letters* (London, 1957)

See G. K. Chesterton, 'Portrait of a Friend' in *Autobiography* (London, 1936)

R. Haynes, *Hilaire Belloc* (B.C.P., 1953)

C. C. Mandell and E. Shanks, *Hilaire Belloc: the Man and his Work* (London, 1916)

F. Swinnerton, *The Georgian Literary Scene* (London, 1935)

**BENNETT, ENOCH ARNOLD** (1867-1931): Novelist; b. Hanley, son of a solicitor; educated at Burslem and Middle School, Newcastle; began studying law, but turned to journalism instead; first novel *A Man from the North* published 1898; *Anna of the Five Towns*, 1901; lived in France, 1902-12, marrying a French woman; *The Old Wives' Tale*, 1908; *Clayhanger*, 1910; *Hilda Lessways* and *The Card*, 1911; returning to England, he collaborated on a successful play *Milestones* and subsequently wrote a number of plays and dramatizations of his novels; later works include *Riceyman Steps* (1923) and *Imperial Palace* (1930).

Life by Walter Allen (London, 1948)

*The Old Wives' Tale* in E. L. (1 vol.)

*Anna of the Five Towns*, *The Old Wives' Tale*, *Clayhanger*, and *Riceyman Steps* in Penguin (4 vols.)

*Journals* ed. Newman Flower (3 vols., London, 1932-3); selection ed. F. Swinnerton (Penguin, 1954)

*Letters* ed. R. Bennett (London, 1936)

See F. J. H. Darton, *Arnold Bennett* (London, 1924)

Henry James, 'The New Novel' in *Notes on Novelists* (London, 1914)

G. Lafourcade, *Bennett: a Study* (London, 1939)

Edwin Muir, in *Scrutinise*, ed. E. Rickword (London, 1928)

John Wain, 'The Quality of Bennett' in *Preliminary Essays* (London, 1957)

**BLUNDEN, EDMUND CHARLES** (b. 1896): Poet and critic; b. Yalding, Kent; educated at Christ's Hospital and Queen's College, Oxford;

served in the First World War and was awarded the Military Cross; after the war began a career in journalism, joining the staff of the *Athenaeum*; early volumes of poetry had appeared in 1914, 1916, and 1920; *The Shepherd* (1922) won the Hawthornden Prize; appointed Professor of English at the University of Tokyo, 1924; returned to England, 1927; *Undertones of War*, 1928; Fellow of Merton College, Oxford, from 1931; *Charles Lamb and his Contemporaries*, 1933; *Choice or Chance*, 1934; *Thomas Hardy*, 1941; joined the staff of *The Times Literary Supplement*, 1943; made C.B.E., 1951; Professor of English at the University of Hong Kong, 1953.

BOURNE, GEORGE - George Sturt - (1863-1927): Novelist; b. Farnham, Surrey, son of a wheelwright; educated at Farnham Grammar School, where he also taught, 1878-85; then entered family business; *The Bettesworth Book*, 1901; *Memoirs of a Surrey Labourer*, 1907; *Change in the Village*, 1912; *A Farmer's Life*, 1922; *The Wheelwright's Shop*, 1923; *A Small Boy in the Sixties* (1927) is autobiographical.

BRIDIE, JAMES - Osborne Henry Mavor - (1888-1951): Dramatist; b. Glasgow; educated at the High School and University there; studied medicine and practised in Glasgow most of his life; early plays *The Sunlight Sonata* (1928) and *What it is To be Young* (1929) popular in Scotland; great success with *Tobias and the Angel*, 1930; other plays include *The Anatomist* (1930), *Susannah and the Elders* (1937), *Mr Bolfry* (1943), and *Dr Angelus* (1947); made C.B.E., 1946.

BROOKE, RUPERT CHAWNER (1887-1915): Poet; b. Rugby, son of a housemaster at the school; educated at Rugby and King's College, Cambridge; elected Fellow of King's College on the strength of a dissertation, *John Webster and the Elizabethan Drama*; first volume, *Poems*, published 1911; travelled widely in America, the Pacific, and New Zealand during 1913, but returned to serve in the First World War; died of septicaemia at Scyros, 1915, on the way to the Dardanelles; posthumous volume *1914 and Other Poems* (1915).

*Children* (1941), *The Horse's Mouth* (1944), *A Fearful Joy* (1949), and *Prisoner of Grace* (1952).

See Walter Allen, *Joyce Cary* (B.C.P., 1953)

Andrew Wright, *Joyce Cary: a Preface to his Novels* (London, 1958)

CHESTERTON, GILBERT KEITH (1874-1936): Essayist, critic, novelist and poet; b. London, son of an estate agent; educated at St Paul's and the Slade School of Art; began working as a journalist; first book of poems, *The Wild Knight*, published 1900; met Hilaire Belloc (q.v. 1900; married Frances Blogg, 1901; first novel *The Napoleon of Notting Hill*, 1904; *Orthodoxy*, 1908; with Belloc and his brother Cecil started the *Eye Witness*, later the *New Witness*, 1911; succeeded his brother as editor, 1916; received into the Roman Catholic Church, 1922; critical and biographical work included studies of *Browning* (1903), *Dickens* (1906), *Thackeray* (1909), *Shaw* (1910), and *Chaucer* (1932); *The Victorian Age in Literature*, 1913; *A Short History of England*, 1917; religious writings include studies of *St Francis of Assisi* (1923) and *Aquinas* (1933) a talented artist, he also found time to illustrate some of Belloc's work.

*Life* by Maisie Ward (London, 1944)

*Collected Poems* (London, 1933)

*Stories, Essays and Poems in E.L.* (1 vol.)

*An Anthology of Chesterton* ed. D. B. Wyndham Lewis, in w.c. (1 vol.)

*Essays and Poems, The Man who was Thursday*, and *The Flying Inn* in Penguin (3 vols.)

See H. Belloc, *The Place of Chesterton in English Letters* (London, 1940)

E. Cammaerts, *The Laughing Prophet* (London, 1937)

Mrs C. Chesterton, *The Chestertons* (London, 1941)

C. Clemens, *G. K. Chesterton as seen by his Contemporaries* (London 1939)

Dorothy Edwards, in *Scrutinies*, ed. E. Rickword (London, 1928)

C. Hollis, *G. K. Chesterton* (B.C.P., 1950)

CHURCHILL, WINSTON LEONARD SPENCER (b. 1874); Statesman, historian, and Royal Academician Extraordinary; b. Blenheim Palace, son of Lord Randolph Churchill; educated at Harrow and Sandhurst; joined the 4th Hussars, 1895; during the Boer War acted as special correspondent for the *Morning Post*; *Savrola*, a novel, 1900; elected M.P. for Oldham, 1900; biography of his father, 1906; President of the Board of Trade, 1908; married Clementine Hosier, 1908; Home Secretary, 1910; First Lord of the Admiralty, 1911; Secretary for War and later Secretary of State for the Colonies, but was defeated at the





works include *Micah Clarke* (1889), *Sir Nigel* (1906), and *The Lost World* (1912); *Memories and Adventures* (1924) is an autobiography.

CONRAD, JOSEPH — Josef Teodor Konrad Nalecz Korzeniowski (1857–1924): Novelist; b. Berdichev, Poland, son of a writer and Polish nationalist; brought up by an uncle, Thaddeus Bobrowski; educated himself by wide reading, in Polish and French; went to Marseille to become a sailor, 1874; after some experience of smuggling, joined an English freighter, the *Mavis*, in which he first visited England, 1878; a British sailor in various ships travelled widely in the Indian Ocean and elsewhere, rising to the rank of Captain; naturalized British, 1886; the same year began *Almayer's Folly* which was completed in 1894, published 1895; favourable reviews and encouragement from Edward Garnett made him decide to leave the sea to write, especially as his health was failing; married Jessie George (1896) and settled near London; *The Nigger of the Narcissus*, 1897; *Lord Jim*, 1900; collaborated with Ford Madox Ford (q.v.) on *The Inheritors* (1901) and *Romance* (1903); *The Mirror of the Sea*, 1906; *The Secret Agent*, 1907; *Chance* (1913) won him wide popularity; other works include *The Shadow-line* (1917) *The Arrow of Gold* (1919), and *The Rescue* (1920); *Some Reminiscence* (1912) is autobiographical.

Life by J. Baines (London, 1959)

Collected Works (24 vols., London, 1946–58)

*Lord Jim* and *Under Western Eyes* in Penguin (2 vols.)

*The Nigger of the Narcissus*, *Youth*, *The Secret Shater*, and *Freya of the Seven Isles*; and *Victory* in W.C. (2 vols.)

*Lord Jim*; *Nostromo*; *The Nigger of the Narcissus*, *Typhoon*, and *The Shadow Line* in E.L. (3 vols.)

Letters in G. J. Aubry's *Life and Letters* (London, 1927)

See G. Bantock, 'The Two Moralities of Joseph Conrad' in *Essays in Criticism* (London, 1953)

M. C. Bradbrook, *England's Polish Genius* (London, 1941)

J. D. Gordan, *Joseph Conrad: the Making of a Novelist* (New York, 1941)

A. J. Guerard, *Conrad the Novelist* (London, 1959)

D. Hewitt, *Conrad: a Reassessment* (London, 1952)

Henry James, *Notes on Novelists* (London, 1914)

F. R. Leavis, in *The Great Tradition* (London, 1949)

F. R. Leavis, 'Joseph Conrad' in *Sewanee Review* (New York, 1958)

Gustav Morf, *The Polish Heritage of Joseph Conrad* (London, 1930)

I. Watt, 'Conrad Criticism and *The Nigger of the Narcissus*' in *Nineteenth Century Fiction* (New York, 1958)

M. Zabel, *Craft and Character in Fiction* (London, 1957)

CORNFORD, FRANCIS MACDONALD (1874-1943): Scholar; b. Eastbourne; educated at St Paul's School and Trinity College, Cambridge; Lecturer in Classics at Cambridge from 1902; Professor of Ancient Philosophy at Cambridge from 1931; married Frances Crofts, 1909; works include *Microcosmographia Academica* (1908), *From Religion to Philosophy* (1912), *The Origin of Attic Comedy* (1914), *Plato's Theory of Knowledge* (1935), *Plato's Cosmology* (1937), and *Plato and Parmenides* (1939).

COWARD, NOEL PIERCE (b. 1899): Actor and dramatist; b. Teddington; educated at the Chapel Royal School, Clapham, and the Italia Conti Academy; after a period of acting, began to write plays; *The Vortex* (1923) established his reputation; this was followed by several comedies, including *Fallen Angels* (1925), *Easy Virtue* (1926), and *Private Lives* (1930); revues and operettas of this period include *On with the Dance* (1925) and *Bitter Sweet* (1929); later plays include *Blithe Spirit* (1941), *This Happy Breed* (1943), *Relative Values* (1951), and *Nude with Violin* (1956); he has also written two volumes of autobiography, *Present Indicative* (1937) and *Future Indefinite* (1954).

DE LA MARE, WALTER (1873-1956): Poet; b. Charlton, Kent, related through his mother to Robert Browning; educated at St Paul's Cathedral Choir School; clerk in the offices of the Anglo-American Oil Company, 1890-1908; *Songs of Childhood*, 1902; *Henry Brocken*, 1904; *Poems*, 1906; granted a Civil List pension, 1908, to enable him to devote his time to writing; later works include *The Return* (1910), *The Listeners and Other Poems* (1912), *Memoirs of a Midget* (1922), and several volumes of poetry, some for children; made Companion of Honour, 1948; awarded Order of Merit, 1953.

*Collected Poems* (London, 1942)

*Collected Rhymes and Verses* (London, 1944)

*Collected Stories for Children* (London, 1947)

*Stories, Essays, and Poems* ed. M. M. Bozman (E.L., 1938)

*Selected Writings* ed. Kenneth Hopkins (London, 1956)

See J. Atkins, *Walter de la Mare* (London, 1947)

H. C. Duffin, *Walter de la Mare: a Study of his Poetry* (London, 1947)

Kenneth Hopkins, *Walter de la Mare* (London, 1953)

F. R. Leavis, in *New Bearings in English Poetry* (London, 1958)

R. L. Megroz, *Walter de la Mare* (London, 1942)

Forrest Reid, *Walter de la Mare: a Critical Study* (London, 1949)

W. Walsh, in *The Use of Imagination* (London, 1955)

DOUGLAS, GEORGE NORMAN (1868-1952): Novelist; b. Tisbury on Deeside; brought up in Austria where his family owned cotton

## PART FOUR

mills; educated at Uppingham and Karlsruhe; worked for the diplomatic service in St Petersburg, 1894-6; then travelled extensively in Italy and elsewhere before settling in Capri; his first travel books attracted little attention; *South Wind* (1917) established his reputation; later novels are *They Went* (1920), *Alone* (1921), and *Together* (1923); *Looking Back* (1933) and *Late Harvest* (1946) are autobiographical.

ELIOT, THOMAS STEARNS (b. 1888): Poet, critic, and dramatist; b. St Louis, Missouri; educated at Smith Academy, Harvard, the Sorbonne, and Merton College, Oxford; came to London 1915, became a teacher for a brief period, and later worked in Lloyds Bank; 'The Love Song of Alfred J. Prufrock' appeared in *Poetry* in 1915; married Vivienne Haigh Wood, 1915; *Prufrock and Other Observations*, 1917; assistant editor of *The Egoist*, the Imagist periodical, 1917-19; *The Waste Land* (1922) attracted great attention; that year Eliot established his own periodical, the *Criterion* (1922-1939); entered Church of England, 1927; *Ash Wednesday*, 1930; became Professor of Poetry at Harvard, 1932; first complete play *Murder in the Cathedral*, Canterbury Festival 1935; *Four Quartets*, 1935-1942; later plays are *Family Reunion* (1939), *The Cocktail Party* (1950), *The Confidential Clerk* (1954), and *The Elder Statesman* (1958); critical work includes *The Sacred Wood* (1920), *The Uses of Poetry* (1933), and *On Poetry and Poets* (1957); he also wrote for children *Old Possum's Book of Practical Cats*, 1939; awarded Order of Merit and Nobel Prize for Literature, 1948; re-married, 1959.

*Collected Poems, 1909-1935* (London, 1936)

*Four Quartets* (London, 1943)

*Selected Essays* (London, 1932; rev. ed. 1951)

*Selected Prose* ed. John Hayward (Penguin, 1953)

See A. Alvarez, 'Eliot and Yeats' in *The Shaping Spirit* (London, 1958)

C. Brooks, *Modern Poetry and the Tradition* (London, 1948)

Vincent Buckley, *Poetry and Morality* (London, 1959)

Helen Gardner, *The Art of T. S. Eliot* (London, 1949)

E. J. H. Greene, *T. S. Eliot et la France* (Paris, 1951)

D. W. Harding, review of *Poems, 1909-35* in *Scrutiny*, v (1936)

F. R. Leavis, in *Education and the University* (London, 1943)

F. R. Leavis, *New Bearings in English Poetry* (rev. ed., London, 1950)

F. R. Leavis, 'T. S. Eliot's Stature as a Critic' in *Commentary XXV* (New York, 1958)

F. O. Matthiessen, *The Achievement of T. S. Eliot* (rev. ed. by C. L. Barber, London, 1958)

Grover Smith, *T. S. Eliot's Poetry and Plays: a Study in Sources and Meaning* (rev. ed., Chicago, 1946)

- L. Unger (ed.), *T. S. Eliot: a Selected Critique* (New York, 1948)  
 George Williamson, *A Reader's Guide to T. S. Eliot* (London, 1955)  
 Edmund Wilson, in *Axel's Castle* (New York, 1931)

ELLIS, HENRY HAVELOCK (1859-1939): Psychologist; b. Croydon, son of a sailor; as a boy made several long voyages with his father; lived in Australia, 1875-9; returning to England; studied medicine at St Thomas's Hospital; married Edith Lees, 1891; was also a close friend of Olive Schreiner, the novelist; *Man and Women*, 1894; *Studies in the Psychology of Sex*, 6 vols., 1897-1910; *The Erotic Rights of Women*, 1918; he also wrote several essays on art and edited the *Mermaid dramatists*; *My Life*, his autobiography, appeared posthumously.

Life by A. Calder Marshall (London, 1959)

J. S. Collis, *An Artist of Life* (London, 1959)

EMPSON, WILLIAM (b. 1906): Poet and critic; b. Howden, Yorks; educated at Winchester and Magdalene College, Cambridge; Professor of English Literature at Tokyo, 1931-4, and at Peking, 1937-9; Chinese editor for the B.B.C., 1941-6; Professor of English Literature at Sheffield from 1953; works include *Seven Types of Ambiguity* (1930), *Some Versions of Pastoral* (1935), and *The Structure of Complex Words* (1951); and also *Collected Poems* (1955).

FLECKER, JAMES ELROY (1884-1915): Poet and dramatist; b. London, son of a clergyman; educated at Uppingham and Trinity College, Oxford, and later studied oriental languages at Caius College, Cambridge; entered the Consular Service, 1908; first volume of poetry *The Bridge of Fire*, 1908; sent to Constantinople, where he met and married a Greek girl, Helle Skiadarissi, 1910; vice-consul at Beirut, 1911-13; forced to retire by tuberculosis, he went to Switzerland, where he continued to write poetry; *The Golden Journey to Samarkand*, 1913; *The Old Ships*, 1915; died at Davos; his two plays *Hassan* and *Don Juan* were not published until 1922 and 1925; *Hassan* was first produced in London in 1923.

FORD, FORD MADDOX - Ford Hermann Hueffer - (1873-1939): Novelist; b. Merton, Surrey, son of the music critic of *The Times*, grandson of Ford Maddox Brown, and nephew by marriage of William Rossetti; educated at a private school in Folkestone and at University College School, London; received into the Roman Catholic Church, 1891; married Elsie Martindale, 1894; *Poems for Pictures*, 1897; collaborated with Joseph Conrad (q.v.) on *The Inheritors* (1901) and *Romance* (1903); founded and edited the *English Review*, 1908-9; served in a Welsh

## PART FOUR

Regiment during the First World War; *The Good Soldier*, 1915; moved to Paris, 1922, where his friends Ezra Pound and James Joyce (qq.v.) were then living; edited *Transatlantic Review*, 1923-4; *Some do Not*, 1924; *No More Parades*, 1925; *A Man could Stand Up*, 1926; *The Last Post*, 1928; these novels were much better received in the United States than in England, and from 1926 until his death Ford lived partly in America and partly in France; *It was the Nightingale* (1933) and *Memoirs and Criticisms* (1938) are to some extent autobiographical; died at Deauville.

Life by Douglas Goldring, *The Last Pre-Raphaelite* (London, 1948)

FORSTER, EDWARD MORGAN (b. 1879): Novelist; b. London; educated at Tonbridge and King's College, Cambridge, of which he was later made Fellow; lived for some time in Italy; first novel, *Where Angels Fear to Tread*, 1905; *The Longest Journey*, 1907; *A Room with a View*, 1908; *Howards End*, 1910; visited India and was at Alexandria during the First World War; *Alexandria, a History and a Guide*, 1922; *A Passage to India* (1924) won the Fernina Vie Heureuse and Tait Black Memorial prizes; *Aspects of the Novel* (1927) reprinted his Clark lectures at Cambridge; his biography of his friend Lowes Dickinson appeared in 1934; other works are collections of essays, *Abinger Harvest* (1936), *Two Cheers for Democracy* (1951), *Collected Short Stories* (1948), and biographies; made Companion of Honour, 1953.

*A Passage to India* in E.L. (1 vol.)

Novels, standard edition (London)

*Howards End*, *A Passage to India*, *A Room with a View*, and *Collected Short Stories* in Penguin (4 vols.)

See Peter Burra, Introduction to *A Passage to India* (E.L., 1948)

L. E. Holt, 'E. M. Forster and Samuel Butler' in *P.M.L.A.* LXI (September, 1946)

J. K. Johnstone in *The Bloomsbury Group* (London, 1954)

F. R. Leavis, in *The Common Pursuit* (London, 1952)

Rose Macaulay, *The Writings of E. M. Forster* (London, 1938)

James McConkey, *The Novels of Forster* (Ithaca, N.Y., 1957)

Lionel Trilling, *E. M. Forster* (Norfolk, Conn., 1943; London, 1944)

Rex Warner, *E. M. Forster* (B.C.P., 1950)

FRAZER, JAMES GEORGE (1854-1941): Anthropologist; b. Glasgow; son of a minister; educated at Helensburgh, Glasgow University, and Trinity College, Cambridge; read law and was called to the Bar, 1879; *The Golden Bough* appeared in twelve volumes between 1890 and 1915; knighted, 1914; F.R.S., 1920; awarded Order of Merit, 1925; other



#### PART FOUR

the Second World War; *King Jesus*, 1946; *The White Goddess*, 1948; there are several collections of poetry; critical work includes *A Survey of Modernist Poetry* (with Laura Riding, 1927), *The Common Asphodel* (1949), and *The Crowning Privilege* (1955); he has also annotated a collection of Greek myths; among his translations is a modern version of *The Golden Ass*; elected Professor of Poetry at Oxford, 1961.

GREENE, HENRY GRAHAM (b. 1904): Novelist and dramatist; b. Berkhamstead, son of a schoolmaster; educated locally and at Balliol College, Oxford; sub-editor on *The Times*, 1926-30; married Vivienne Dayrell Browning, 1927; converted to Roman Catholicism; first novel *The Man Within*, 1929; *Stamboul Train*, 1932; *A Gun for Sale*, 1936; *Brighton Rock*, 1938; *The Power and the Glory*, 1940; literary editor of the *Spectator*, 1940; worked in the Foreign Office during the Second World War; later novels include *The Heart of the Matter* (1948) and *The End of the Affair* (1951); first play *The Living Room* produced in London, 1953; second, *The Potting Shed*, 1957.

See K. Allott and M. Farris, *The Art of Graham Greene* (London, 1951)

F. N. Lees in *Scrutiny*, XIX (1953)

J. Madaule, *Graham Greene* (Paris, 1949)

M. B. Mesnet, *Graham Greene and the Heart of the Matter* (London, 1954)

GREGORY, ISABELLA AUGUSTA (1852-1932): Dramatist; b. Roxburghe, Co. Galway; daughter of Dudley Persse; married Sir William Gregory, 1881 - he died in 1892; met Yeats (q.v.), 1898; with him founded the Abbey Theatre, 1899, and acted as its manager; plays include *Spreading the News* (1904), *The Rising of the Moon* (1907), and *The Story brought by Brigit* (1924).

GRIERSON, HERBERT JOHN CLIFFORD (1866-1960): Critic and scholar; b. Lerwick; educated at King's College, Aberdeen, and Christ Church, Oxford; Professor of English at Aberdeen, 1894-1915, and at Edinburgh 1915-36; critical works include *Metaphysical Poets* (1921), *Lyrical Poetry from Blake to Hardy* (1928), *The Seventeenth Century* (1929), *Life of Scott* (1938); he also edited the letters of Sir Walter Scott and the poetry of Donne; knighted, 1936; Lord Rector of Edinburgh University, 1936-9.

HARDY, THOMAS (1840-1928): Poet and novelist; b. Dorset, son of a builder; educated at Dorchester Grammar School; trained as an architect and won R.I.B.A. medal and Architectural Association prize, 1863; began writing poetry about 1865; first novel *Desperate Remedies*,





James the pragmatist; irregular schooling in Europe and America; entered Harvard Law School, 1862; in 1864 began contributing articles and stories to American reviews; revisited Europe, 1869; in 1875 met Turgenev, Flaubert, and other novelists in Paris; settled in London, 1876 (*Roderick Hudson*, 1876, *The Europeans*, 1878, *Daisy Miller*, 1879, *Washington Square* and *The Portrait of a Lady*, 1881); disappointed at reception of *The Bostonians* and *The Princess Casamassima*, 1886; 1890-5 turned to writing of plays; after failure of *Guy Donville* (1895) went back to fiction writing; *What Maisie Knew*, 1897; 1897 moved to Lamb House, Rye; *The Awkward Age*, 1899; *The Wings of the Dove*, 1902; *The Ambassadors*, 1903; *The Golden Bowl*, 1904; visited America, 1904; *The American Scene*, 1907; 1907-9 wrote Prefaces for New York Edition; 1910 death of William James; 1913-17 autobiographical writings; 1914 war suspended *The Ivory Tower*; 1915 he became British subject; awarded Order of Merit, 1916; died in London.

Life by Leon Edel, *The Untried Years: 1843-1870* (London, 1953); Robert

C. Le Clair, *Young Henry James: 1843-1870* (New York, 1955)

*Novels and Stories* (35 vols., London, 1921-31)

*Complete Plays*, ed. Leon Edel (London, 1949)

*Letters*, ed. P. Lubbock (2 vols., London, 1920); *Selected Letters*, ed. Leon Edel (London, 1956)

*Notebooks*, ed. F. O. Matthiessen and Kenneth B. Murdock (New York, 1947)

*French Poets and Novelists* (London, 1878); *Hawthorne* (London, 1879);

*Partial Portraits* (London, 1888); *Notes on Novelists* (London, 1914); *The*

*Art of the Novel* ed. R. P. Blackmur (New York, 1934); *Literary Reviews*

*and Essays* (New York, 1957); *The House of Fiction* ed. Leon Edel

(London, 1957)

See Quentin Anderson, *The American Henry James* (London, 1958)

G. H. Bantock, 'Morals and Civilisation in Henry James' in *The Cambridge Journal*, vii (1953)

Marius Bewley, in *The Complex Fate* (London, 1952)

Marius Bewley, in *The Eccentric Design* (London, 1959)

Richard Chase, in *The American Novel and its Tradition* (London, 1958)

F. W. Dupee, *Henry James* (London, 1951)

F. W. Dupee (ed.), *The Question of Henry James. A collection of Critical Essays* (London, 1947)

Arnold Kettle, in *Introduction to the English Novel*, vol. II (London, 1953)

L. C. Knights, in *Explorations* (London, 1951)

Dorothea Krook, 'The Wings of the Dove' and 'The Golden Bowl' in *The Cambridge Journal*, vii (1954)

F. R. Leavis, 'The Europeans' in *Scrutiny*, xv (1948)

F. R. Leavis, in *The Great Tradition* (London, 1948)

- F. O. Matthiessen, *Henry James: The Major Phase* (Oxford, 1946)  
 Ezra Pound, in *Literary Essays* (London, 1954)  
 Lionel Trilling, in *The Liberal Imagination* (London, 1951)  
 Lionel Trilling, in *The Opposing Self* (London, 1955)  
 Edmund Wilson, in *The Triple Thinkers* (London, 1952)  
 Yvor Winters, in *Maule's Curse* (Norfolk, Conn., 1938)

JOYCE, JAMES AUGUSTINE ALOYSIUS (1882-1941): Novelist and poet; b. Dublin; educated at Belvedere College and University College, Dublin; later studied literature in Paris; married Nora Barnacle, 1904, and taught languages on the Continent, mainly in Switzerland; first volume of poetry *Chamber Music*, 1907; *Dubliners*, a collection of short stories, 1914; *Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*, 1916; *Exiles*, a play, 1918; became widely known after the publication of *Ulysses*, published in Paris in 1922, but not printed in England until 1936; from 1922 to 1939 Joyce worked on *Finnegans Wake*, parts of which were published as completed; during the Second World War lived in Switzerland; died in Zürich.

Life by Richard Ellmann (New York, 1959)

*Introducing Joyce: a Selection of Prose* ed. T. S. Eliot (London, 1942)

*The Essential Joyce* ed. Harry Levin (London, 1948)

*Letters* ed. Stuart Gilbert (London, 1957)

See F. Budgen, *James Joyce and the Making of Ulysses* (London, 1934)

Campbell and Robinson, *A Skeleton Key to Finnegans Wake* (London, 1947)

Stuart Gilbert, *James Joyce's Ulysses: a Study* (rev. ed., London, 1952)

Givens (ed.), *James Joyce: Two Decades of Criticism* (New York, 1948)

S. Joyce, *My Brother's Keeper* (London, 1958)

Hugh Kenner, *Dublin's Joyce* (London, 1956)

Harry Levin, *James Joyce: a Critical Introduction* (Conn., 1941)

M. Magalaner and R. M. Kain, *Joyce: the Man, the Work, the Reputation* (New York, 1956)

KAVANAGH, PATRICK (b. 1905): Irish poet and literary columnist; b. Co. Monaghan, son of a cobbler; self educated; early autobiography *The Green Fool*, 1938; *A Soul for Sale*, poems, 1947; *Tarry Flynn*, a novel, 1949; now lecturer in Poetry at the National University of Ireland

KEYNES, JOHN MAYNARD, 1st BARON KEYNES (1883-1946): Economist; b. Cambridge, son of the Registrar of the University; educated at Eton and King's College, Cambridge, of which he was later Fellow; edited the *Economic Journal*, 1911-44; during the First World War

worked in the Treasury; *The Economic Consequences of the Peace*, 1919; *A Treatise on Probability*, 1921; *A Tract on Monetary Reform*, 1923; married the Russian dancer Lydia Lopokova, 1925; *A Treatise on Money*, 1930; *The General Theory of Employment, Interest and Money*, 1936; Director of the Bank of England, 1940; created first Baron Keynes, 1942.

Life by R. F. Harrod (London, 1951)

See E. A. G. Robinson, *John Maynard Keynes* (Cambridge, 1947)

KOESTLER, ARTHUR (b. 1905): Novelist; b. Budapest; educated at the Technische Hochschule and University of Vienna; became a journalist, 1926, and as a foreign correspondent lived in France, Russia, and the Middle East; working for the *News Chronicle* during the Spanish Civil War, he was imprisoned by General Franco; settled in England, 1940, serving with the British Army in the Second World War; novels include *Darkness at Noon* (1940, translated from German), *Arrival and Departure* (1943), *Thieves in the Night* (1946), and *The Age of Longing* (1951); *Scum of the Earth* (1941) and *Arrow in the Blue* (1952) are autobiographical.

LAWRENCE, DAVID HERBERT (1885-1930): Novelist and poet; b. Eastwood, Notts, son of a coal-miner; educated at the High School and University College, Nottingham; taught at an elementary school in Croydon until the publication of his first book *The White Peacock* (1911); eloped to Italy with Frieda, wife of Professor Ernest Weekley, 1912; *Sons and Lovers*, 1913; married Frieda after her divorce, 1914; *The Rainbow* (1915) suppressed as obscene; returned to Italy after living in England during the First World War; *The Lost Girl and Women in Love*, 1920; visited Australia, 1922; *Kangaroo*, 1923; went to New Mexico where he wrote *The Plumed Serpent*, 1926; *Lady Chatterley's Lover* (1928) banned in England until 1960; died of tuberculosis in Venice, near Nice.

Life by his wife Not I, but the Wind (New York, 1934); H. T. Moore, *The Intelligent Heart* (London, 1955; Edward Nehls (ed.), *Lawrence: a Corporate Biography* (3 vols., Madison, Wis., 1957-8)

*Works*, uniform ed. (33 vols., London, 1936-9)

*Complete Poems* (3 vols., London, 1957)

*Selected Essays, Stories and Poems*; and *The White Peacock* in B.L. (2 vols.)

*Complete Novels* in Penguin (11 vols.)

Phoenix, (London, 1936)

*Selected Essays*, ed. R. Aldington (Pen)

#### PART FOUR

*Selected Literary Criticism* ed. A. Beal (London, 1955)

*Letters to Bertrand Russell* ed. H. T. Moore (New York, 1948)

*Letters* ed. A. Huxley (London, 1932)

*Selected Letters* ed. R. Aldington (Penguin, 1950)

See A. Arnold, *D. H. Lawrence and America* (London, 1958)

C. R. Carswell, *The Savage Pilgrimage* (London, 1932)

E. T., *D. H. Lawrence, A Personal Record* (London, 1936)

T. S. Eliot, in *After Strange Gods* (London, 1934)

F. R. Leavis, *D. H. Lawrence: Novelist* (London, 1955)

M. Spilka, *The Love Ethic of D. H. Lawrence* (Indiana, 1956; London, 1958)

W. Tiverton, *D. H. Lawrence and Human Existence* (London, 1951)

LEAVIS, FRANK RAYMOND (b. 1895): Critic and teacher; b. Cambridge; educated at the Perse School and Emmanuel College, Cambridge; *Mass Civilisation and Minority Culture*, 1930; *New Bearings in English Poetry*, 1932; editor of *Scrutiny* from 1932 till its demise in 1953; Fellow of Downing College, 1935; part-time lecturer in English at Cambridge, 1936; eventually, after Second World War, appointed full-time lecturer and finally Reader; later works include *The Great Tradition* (1948), *The Common Pursuit* (1952), and *D. H. Lawrence, Novelist* (1955).

LEWIS, CECIL DAY (b. 1904): Poet and detective story writer; b. Ballintogher, Ireland, son of a clergyman; educated at Sherborne and Wadham College, Oxford; taught at various schools, 1927-35; but then decided to devote his time to writing; first volume of poetry *Beechen Vigil*, 1925; married Constance King, 1928; *A Hope for Poetry*, 1934; *Collected Poems 1929-33*, 1935; *Overtures to Death*, 1938; editor of books and pamphlets at the Ministry of Information during the Second World War; *The Poetic Image*, 1947; divorced, 1951, and married Jill Balcon; Professor of Poetry at Oxford, 1951-6.

LEWIS, PERCY WYNDHAM (1884-1957): Novelist and painter; b. Maine, of English parents; educated at Rugby and the Slade School of Art; joint editor with Ezra Pound (q.v.) of *Blast*, the 'Review of the Great Vortex', 1914-15; served in an artillery regiment during the World War; *Tarr*, a novel, 1918; editor of *Tyro*, a painting and review, 1921-2; *Time and Western Man*, 1927; editor of *Enemy*, a literary review, 1927-9; *The Childermass*, 1928; *The Apes of God*, 1930; *Men without Art*, 1934; *Rotting Hill*, 1951; *The Writer and the Absolute*, 1952; *The Red Priest*, 1956; *Blasting and Bombardiering* (1937) and *Rude Assignment* (1950) are autobiographical.

- See Geoffrey Grigson, *A Study of Wyndham Lewis* (London, 1951)  
 Charles Handley-Read, *The Art of Wyndham Lewis* (London, 1951)  
 Hugh Kenner, *Wyndham Lewis* (London, 1954)  
 E. W. F. Tomlin, *Wyndham Lewis* (B.C.P., 1955)  
 Geoffrey Wagner, *Portrait of the Artist as Enemy* (London, 1957)

**MACDIARMID, HUGH** – Christopher Murray Grieve – (b. 1892): Poet and critic; b. Langholm, Dumfries; educated at Edinburgh University; supported Scottish Nationalism, and helped found the Scottish Nationalist party; writes poetry mainly in Lowland Scots (Lallans); published volumes of poetry include *Saugschaw* (1925), *Penny Wheep* (1926), *First and Second Hymn to Lenin* (1932, 1935); critical works include *Contemporary Scottish Studies* (1924) and *At the Sign of the Thistle* (1934).

**MACNEICE, LOUIS** (b. 1907): Poet and radio feature writer; b. Belfast, son of a clergyman; educated at Marlborough and Merton College, Oxford; first volume of poetry *Blind Fireworks*, 1929; Lecturer in Classics at Birmingham, 1930–6; Lecturer in Greek at Bedford College, London, 1936–40; visited Iceland with W. H. Auden (q.v.) and subsequently wrote with him *Letters from Iceland*, 1937; feature writer and producer for the B.B.C., 1941–9; Director of the British Institute in Athens, 1950; more recent works include *The Poetry of W. B. Yeats* (1941), *Springboard* (1944), *The Dark Tower and Other Radio Scripts* (1947), *Ten Burnt Offerings* (1952), and *Autumn Sequel* (1954); he has also translated Goethe's *Faust* (1951).

**MANSFIELD, KATHERINE** – Kathleen Mansfield Beauchamp – (1888–1923): Short story writer; b. Wellington, New Zealand, daughter of a banker; educated at Queen's College School, London; planned a musical career, but married George Bowden, 1909; met John Middleton Murry (q.v.), 1911, whom she married after obtaining a divorce from her first husband in 1913; ill health forced her to travel much in France and Germany; first collection of short stories *In a German Pension* 1911; *Bliss* (1920) established her reputation; subsequent collections were published under the titles *The Garden Party* (1922) and *The Dove's Nest* (1923); after her death, Murry edited and published her poetry, journals, and letters.

**MASEFIELD, JOHN EDWARD** (b. 1878): Poet Laureate; b. Ledbury, son of a solicitor; educated at King's School, Warwick; joined the merchant navy, 1893, and sailed round Cape Horn in a wind-jammer;

#### PART FOUR

the following year illness compelled him to abandon the sea and he lived in New York until 1897; returning to London, he began a journalistic career; volumes of poetry and short stories appeared from 1903 to 1913; two plays of this period are *The Tragedy of Nan* (1909) and *Pompey the Great* (1910); *Reynard the Fox*, 1919; *Collected Poems*, 1923; succeeded Bridges as Poet Laureate, 1930; awarded Order of Merit, 1935; he has also written novels, among them *Sard Harker* (1924), *Odtaa* (1926), and *The Bird of Dawning* (1933); *So long to Learn* (1952) is autobiographical.

MAUGHAM, WILLIAM SOMERSET (b. 1874): Novelist, dramatist, and short story writer; b. Paris, son of an English solicitor, and brought up in Kent; educated at King's School, Canterbury, and Heidelberg University, subsequently studying medicine at St Thomas's; works include *Of Human Bondage* (1915), *The Moon and Sixpence* (1919), *Cakes and Ale* (1930), and *The Razor's Edge* (1944); he has lived at Cap Ferrat since 1930.

MOORE, GEORGE EDWARD (1873-1958): Philosopher; b. Hastings, son of a doctor, and brother of the poet, Sturge Moore; educated at Dulwich and Trinity College, Cambridge; Lecturer in Moral Sciences at Cambridge, 1911-25; married Dorothy Ely, 1916; editor of *Mind* from 1921; Professor of Philosophy at Cambridge from 1925; works include *Principia Ethica* (1903), *Ethics* (1912), and *Philosophical Studies* (1922).

See P. A. Schilpp, *The Philosophy of Moore* (Evanston, Ill., 1942)

MUIR, EDWIN (1887-1959): Poet, critic, and novelist; b. in the Orkneys, son of a farmer; educated at the Kirkwall Burgh School; family moved to Glasgow, 1901; Muir started work as a clerk; married Willa Anderson, 1919, moved to London and joined the staff of *New Age*; travelled widely in Europe from 1921; *First Poems*, 1925; *Chorus of the Newly Dead*, 1926; first novel, *The Marionettes*, 1927; *The Structure of the Novel*, 1928; during the thirties he and his wife translated Kafka; later novels are *The Three Brothers* (1931) and *Poor Tom* (1932); critical work includes *The Present Age*, from 1914 (1939) and *Essays on Literature Society* (1949); taught for the British Council, 1942-50, was afterwards warden of Newbattle Abbey College and later Visiting Professor of Poetry at Harvard; *The Story and the Fable* (1940) is the first part of an autobiography completed in 1954.

*Collected Poems 1921-1951* ed. J. C. Hall (London, 1952)



Abbey Theatre, 1923; *Junio and the Paycock* (1924) established his reputation; married Eileen Reynolds, 1927; moved to London, where *The Silver Tassie* was first produced in 1929; later plays include *Within the Gates* (1934), *Purple Dust* (1940), *Red Roses for Me* (1942), and *The Bishop's Bonfire* (1955); has written an autobiography in several volumes.

ORWELL, GEORGE - Eric Blair - (1903-50): Journalist, critic, and novelist; b. Bengal, India; educated at Eton; served with the Indian Imperial Police in Burma, 1922-7; returned to Europe and made living teaching and working in a shop; *Down and Out in Paris and London*, 1933; *Burmese Days*, 1934; *Keep the Aspidochelone Flying*, 1936; *The Road to Wigan Pier*, 1937; fought for the Republicans in the Spanish Civil War; during the Second World War worked for the B.B.C. *Inside the Whale*, 1940; *Animal Farm*, 1945; became seriously ill, 1948 and finished *Nineteen Eighty Four* (1949) shortly before his death.

*Selected Essays, Animal Farm*, and 1984 in Penguin (3 vols.)

Selections from unpublished journal in special Orwell number of *World Review* (June 1950)

See Laurence Brander, *George Orwell* (London, 1954)

Christopher Hollis, *A Study of George Orwell* (London, 1956)

Tom Hopkinson, *George Orwell* (London, 1953)

W. Lewis, *The Writer and the Absolute* (London, 1952)

OWEN, WILFRED (1893-1918): Poet; b. Oswestry, Shropshire; educated at Birkenhead Institute and London University; lived in France as tutor, 1913-15; while serving in the First World War fell ill and was sent to Craiglockhart War Hospital, 1917; another patient, Siegfried Sassoon (q.v.) encouraged him to write poetry; sent back to France, 1918; was awarded the M.C. but was killed a week before the armistice; only four poems were published in his lifetime, in periodicals; Sassoon collected and published them in 1920.

See E. Blunden, *War Poets 1914-1918* (S.C.P., 1958)

V. de S. Pinto, *Crisis in English Poetry 1880-1940* (London, 1951)

D. S. R. Welland, *Wilfred Owen: A Critical Study* (London, 1960)

WILLIAMS, EZRA LOOMIS (b. 1885): Poet; b. Hailey, Idaho; educated at Union College and Pennsylvania University; travelled in Europe, 1907; lived in London, 1908-20; married Dorothy Shakspear, and became friendly with T. S. Eliot, James Joyce, and Wyndham Lewis (qq.v.); *Personae* (1909) and *Riposte* (1912) established him as one of the leaders of the Imagist movement; edited *Little Review* 1917-19; *Quaker Pauper Amavi*, 1919, *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, 1920; lived in Paris



1920-4, then moved to Rapallo where he lived until 1945; during this period the *Cantos* appeared; returned to America, 1946, and was tried for treason because of his Fascist broadcasts during the Second World War; acquitted as being of unsound mind, he was confined to a mental hospital until 1958, when he returned to Italy.

*Selected Poems* (Norfolk, Conn., 1949)

*Selected Literary Essays* ed. T. S. Eliot (Norfolk, Conn., 1954)

*Letters* ed. T. S. Eliot (Norfolk, Conn., 1954)

See Alice S. Amdur, *The Poetry of Ezra Pound* (Cambridge, 1936)

T. S. Eliot, *Ezra Pound: his Metric and his Poetry* (New York, 1917)

Hugh Kenner, *The Poetry of Ezra Pound* (Norfolk, Conn., 1951)

Lewis Leary (ed.), *Motive and Method in the Cantos of Ezra Pound* (New York, 1954)

Peter Russell (ed.), *An Examination of Ezra Pound* (Norfolk, Conn., 1950)

H. H. Watts, *Ezra Pound and the Cantos* (Chicago, 1952)

POWYS, THEODORE FRANCIS (1875-1953): Novelist; b. Shirley, Derbyshire, son of a clergyman and brother of John Cowper and Llewellyn; educated at Dorchester Grammar School; settled in Dorset, 1905, and subsequently lived quietly there; novels include *Mark Only* (1924), *Mr Tasker's Gods* (1924), *Mr Weston's Good Wine* (1927), and *Unclay* (1931); also *Fables* (1929) and other volumes of short stories.

See W. I. Carr, 'T. F. Powys' in *Delta*, 19 (Cambridge, 1960)

H. Coombes, *T. F. Powys* (London, 1960)

W. Hunter, *The Novels and Stories of T. F. Powys* (Cambridge, 1930)

PRIESTLEY, JOHN BOYNTON (b. 1894): Novelist and dramatist; b. Bradford, son of a school teacher; served in the First World War and later studied at Trinity Hall, Cambridge; worked as a reviewer and critic, and published several volumes of criticism; great popular success with his third novel *The Good Companions* (1929); *Dangerous Corner* (1932) was his first play; other plays include *Eden End* (1935), *Time and the Conways* (1937), *Johnson over Jordan* (1939); *Journey down a Rainbow* (1955) is a study of Texas and Mexico, in collaboration with his third wife, Jacquetta Hawkes.

QUILLER-COUCH, ARTHUR THOMAS - 'Q' - (1863-1944): Novelist and scholar; b. Fowey, Cornwall; educated at Clifton and Trinity College, Oxford; lectured in Classics at Oxford, 1886-7; first novel, *Dead Man's Rock*, 1887; *Troy Town*, 1888; editor of the *Speaker*, 1887-99; *Hetty Wesley*, 1903; *Sir John Constantine*, 1906; knighted, 1910;

#### PART FOUR

appointed Professor of English Literature at Cambridge from 1912; *On the Art of Writing*, 1916; *Studies in Literature*, 1918-29; *On the Art of Reading*, 1920; *Charles Dickens and other Victorians*, 1925; elected Mayor of Fowey, 1937; he also wrote several volumes of poetry and edited the *Oxford Book of English Verse*; *Memories and Opinions* (1944) is an unfinished autobiography.

READ, HERBERT EDWARD (b. 1893): Poet and critic; b. Kirbymoorside, son of a farmer; educated at Leeds University; Assistant Keeper in the Victoria and Albert Museum, 1922-31; Professor of Fine Art at Edinburgh, 1931-3; editor of the *Burlington Magazine*, 1933-9; volumes of poetry include *Naked Warriors* (1919), *Mutations of the Phoenix* (1923), *The End of a War* (1933), and *World within a War* (1945); critical works include *English Prose Style* (1928), *Form in Modern Poetry* (1932), *The True Voice of Feeling* (1953); knighted, 1953; *The Innocent Eye* (1933) and *Annals of Innocence and Experience* (1940) are autobiographical.

RICHARDS, IVOR ARMSTRONG (b. 1893): Critic and scholar; b. Sandbach, Cheshire; educated at Clifton and Magdalene College, Cambridge; elected Fellow of Magdalene and lecturer in English at Cambridge, 1922-9; collaborated with C. K. Ogden and James Wood on *The Foundations of Aesthetics* (1922), and with Ogden on *The Meaning of Meaning* (1923); *Principles of Literary Criticism*, 1924; *Science and Poetry*, 1926; married Dorothy Pilley, 1926; *Practical Criticism*, 1929; visiting Professor at Peking, 1929, and at Harvard, 1931; Director of the Orthological Institute of China, 1936-8; *The Philosophy of Rhetoric*, 1936; *Basic English and its Uses*, 1943; Professor of English at Harvard from 1944.

RICHARDSON, DOROTHY MILLER (1873-1957): Novelist; b. Abingdon, Berks; worked as a teacher and later as a clerk before she married Alan Odle, the artist; her novels, early examples of the 'stream of consciousness' school, include *Painted Roofs* (1915), *The Tunnel* (1919), *The Trap* (1925), *Oberland* (1927), and *Dimple Hill* (1938); all the novels have the collective title *Pilgrimage*.

ROSENBERG, ISAAC (1890-1918): Poet; b. Bristol; educated at an elementary school in London; apprenticed to an engraver; attended art classes at Birkbeck College, London; entered the Slade School, 1911; went to South Africa, 1914; returned to enlist in the Army, 1915; killed in action.



#### PART FOUR

*Profession* (1893), *Arms and the Man* and *Candida* (1894), *You Never Can Tell* (1895); dramatic critic of *The Saturday Review*, 1895-8; Borough Councillor for St Pancras, 1897-1903; married Charlotte Payne Townshend, 1898; *The Devil's Disciple*, *Captain Brassbound's Conversion*, and *Caesar and Cleopatra* published 1901; *Man and Superman*, 1903; *The Doctor's Dilemma*, 1906; *Androcles and the Lion*, 1912; *Pygmalion*, 1913; severely criticized Government policy in *Commonsense about the War*, 1914; later plays include *Back to Methuselah* (1921), *St Joan* (1924), *The Apple Cart* (1929), and *In Good King Charles's Golden Days* (1939); awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, 1925; declined Order of Merit and peerage from the first Labour Government; in his last years lived at Ayot St Lawrence in Herts; *Sixteen Self-Sketches* (1949) is autobiographical.

Life by Hesketh Pearson (London, 1942; with postscript, 1951); St John Ervine (London, 1956)

*Complete Plays* (London, 1931)

*Prefaces* (London, 1934)

*The Quintessence of Bernard Shaw* ed. H. C. Duffin (rev. ed., London, 1939)

Florence Farr, *Shaw and W. B. Yeats: Letters* ed. C. Box (Dublin, 1941)

*Letters to Ellen Terry* ed. C. St John (London, 1949)

*Correspondence between Shaw and Mrs Patrick Campbell* ed. A. Dent (London, 1952)

See Eric Bentley, *Shaw: a Reconsideration* (New York, 1947)

G. K. Chesterton, *George Bernard Shaw* (rev. ed., London, 1935)

A. Henderson, *Shaw: Playboy and Prophet* (New York, 1932)

William Irvine, *The Universe of George Bernard Shaw* (New York, 1949)

Holbrook Jackson, *Shaw* (London, 1907)

E. Strauss, *Shaw: Art and Socialism* (London, 1942)

W. J. Turner, in *Scrutinies*, ed. E. Ridewood (London, 1928)

A. C. Ward, *Bernard Shaw* (London, 1951)

Edmund Wilson, 'Shaw at Eighty' in *The Triple Thinkers* (rev. ed., New York, 1948)

SITWELL, EDITH (b. 1887): Poet and critic; b. Scarborough, daughter of Sir George Sitwell and sister of Sir Osbert and Sacheverell Sitwell; educated privately; volumes of verse include *Clown's Houses* (1918), *The Wooden Pegasus* (1920), and *Rustic Elegies* (1927); among critical works are *Alexander Pope* (1930), *Aspects of Modern Poetry* (1934); *A Poet's Notebook*, 1943; later poetry includes *Poems New and Old* (1940), *Facade* (1950), and *Gardeners and Astronomers* (1953); made Dame Grand Cross of the Order of the British Empire, 1954; joined the Roman Catholic Church, 1954.

## AUTHORS AND WORKS

SNOW, CHARLES PERCY (b. 1905): Novelist; educated at University College, Leicester, and Christ's College, Cambridge; early career as professional scientist at Cambridge, 1935-45; first novel *Paul Case* 1932; since 1935 engaged on novel-sequence of ten or more volumes entitled 'Strangers and Brothers', dealing with problems of power and morality in contemporary managerial and scientific societies; titles include *The Masters*, 1951, and *The New Man*, 1954 (jointly awarded James Tait Black Memorial Prize), *The Conscience of the Rich*, 1958, *The Affair*, 1959; became Civil Service Commissioner in 1948; married Pamela Hansford Johnson, 1950; knighted, 1957; gave 1955 Rede Lecture, Cambridge, on the Two Cultures.

SPENDER, STEPHEN (b. 1909): Poet and critic; b. London, son of a journalist; educated at University College School and University College, Oxford; at Oxford became friendly with Auden, Day Lewis, and MacNeice (qq.v.); travelled extensively with Isherwood; early volumes of poetry include *Nine Entertainments* (1928), *Twenty Poems* (1930), *The Still Centre* (1939), *Ruins and Visions* (1940), and *Poems of Dedication* (1942); co-editor of *Horizon*, 1939-41; *The Destructive Element* (1935) and *The Creative Element* (1953) are studies in modern literature; married Natasha Litvin, 1941; co-editor of *Encounter* from 1953; *World within World* (1951) is autobiographical.

STRACHEY, GILES LYTTON (1880-1932): Biographer and critic; b. London, son of General Sir Richard Strachey; educated at Liverpool University and Cambridge; dramatic critic of the *Spectator*, then edited by his cousin, 1907-9; became a member of the 'Bloomsbury Group' and a close friend of Virginia Woolf and E. M. Foster (qq.v.) and of Roger Fry and Clive Bell, among others; *Landmarks in English Literature* 1912; *Eminent Victorians* (1918) and *Victoria* (1921) created a new style in biography; later works include *Elizabeth and Essex*, 1921, *Portrait in Miniature* (1931), and *Characters and Commentaries* (1933).

SYNGE, JOHN MILLINGTON (1871-1909): Dramatist; b. Dublin, son of a barrister; educated at Trinity College, Dublin; travelled widely in Germany, Italy, and France; met Yeats (q.v.) in Paris in 1895 and returned to Ireland with him; first play *In the Shadow of the Glen* produced 1903; *Riders to the Sea*, 1904; became a member of the Abbey Theatre from 1904; *The Well of the Saints*, 1905; *The Playboy of the Western World*, 1907; *Tinker's Wedding*, 1908; *Deirdre of the Sorrows* (1910) was left unfinished when he died of cancer.

## PART FOUR

Life by D. H. Greene and E. M. Stephens (New York, 1959)

*Collected Plays* (Penguin, 1952)

*Plays, Poems and Prose* (B.L., 1941)

See Maurice Bourgeois, *Synge and the Irish Theatre* (London, 1913)

Isabella Gregory, *Our Irish Theatre* (London, 1914)

L. A. G. Strong, *J. M. Synge* (London, 1941)

W. B. Yeats, *Synge and the Ireland of his Time* (Dundrum, 1911)

**TAWNEY, RICHARD HENRY** (b. 1880): Economist and educationist; b. Calcutta, India; educated at Rugby and Balliol College, Oxford; teacher for Tutorial Classes Committee of Oxford University, 1908-14; member of Executive of Workers' Educational Association, 1905-47, and President, 1928-44; member of Consultative Committee of the Board of Education, 1912-31; adviser to the British Embassy in Washington, 1941-2; works include *The Acquisitive Society* (1920), *Religion and the Rise of Capitalism* (1926), and *Land and Labour in China* (1932).

**THOMAS, DYLAN MARLAIS** (1914-53): Poet; b. Swansea, educated at the local grammar school; joined the staff of the *South Wales Evening Post* as a reporter; first poems printed in the *Sunday Referee*; first volume of poetry *Eighteen Poems* (1934) attracted some critical attention; *Twenty-five Poems* (1936) and *The Map of Love* (1939) increased his reputation; unfit for active service in the Second World War, joined the B.B.C.; *Portrait of the Artist as a Young Dog*, 1940; later collections of poetry include *Deaths and Entrances* (1946) and *In Country Sleep* (1951); *Under Milk Wood* (1954) was commissioned as a play for broadcasting; died suddenly on a lecture tour in the United States.

*Collected Poems, 1934-52* (London, 1952)

*Selected Writings* ed. J. L. Sweeney (Norfolk, Conn., 1946)

*Letters to Vernon Watkins* (London, 1957)

See J. M. Brinnin, *Dylan Thomas in America* (London, 1955)

David Holbrook, *Llareggyb Revisited* (Cambridge, 1961)

**THOMAS, PHILIP EDWARD** (1878-1917): Poet and critic; b. London, son of a civil servant; educated at St Pauls School and Lincoln College, Oxford; married Helen Noble, 1899; endured great poverty, trying to make a living by writing; early work includes *The Woodland Life* (1897), *Beautiful Wales* (1905), and *The South Country* (1909); among his critical work are studies of *Swinburne* (1912), *Borrow* (1912), *Pater* (1913), and *Keats* (1916); friendly with Robert Frost; began to write poetry in 1912; first volume, by 'Edward Eastaway', appeared in 1917; killed in action at Arras.

## AUTHORS AND WORKS

Life by Robert P. Eckert (London, 1937); *John Macrae* (London, 1937)

*Collected Poems* ed. W. de la Mare (rev. ed., London, 1938)

*Selected Poems* ed. Edward Garnett (Newtown, 1927)

*Selected Prose* ed. R. Gant (London, 1948)

See H. Coombes, *Edward Thomas* (London, 1956)

Eleanor Farjeon, *Edward Thomas: the Last Four Years* (London, 1938)

D. W. Harding, 'A Note on Nostalgia' in *Determinations* ed. F. R.

Leavis (London, 1934)

F. R. Leavis, in *New Bearings in English Poetry* (London, 1932)

J. M. Murry, in *Aspects of Literature* (London, 1920)

Helen Thomas, *As it Was: World without End* (London, 1935)

TOYNBEE, ARNOLD JOSEPH (b. 1889): Historian; b. London; educated at Winchester and Balliol College, Oxford; Fellow of Balliol, 1912-15; married a daughter of Gilbert Murray (q.v.), 1913; worked in the Foreign Office during the First World War; *Nationality and the War*, 1915; Professor of Modern Greek and Byzantine History at London, 1919-24; later Professor of International History and Director of Studies at the Royal Institute of International Affairs; *A Journey to China*, 1931; *A Study of History*, in ten volumes, 1934-54; *Christianity and Civilisation*, 1940; later works include *Civilisation on Trial* (1948), *The World and the West* (Reith Lectures, 1952) and *A Historian's Approach to Religion* (1956); made Companion of Honour, 1956.

TREVELYAN, GEORGE MACAULAY (b. 1876): Historian; b. Stratford on Avon, grand-nephew of Lord Macaulay; educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge; *England in the Age of Wycliffe*, 1899; *England under the Stuarts*, 1902; married a daughter of Mrs Humphrey Ward, 1904; three studies of Garibaldi, 1907, 1909, and 1911; *China as a Muse*, 1913; worked with an ambulance unit during the First World War; made C.B.E., 1920; Lord Grey of the Reform Bill, 1920; *British History in the Nineteenth Century*, 1922; *History of England*, 1923; Professor of Modern History at Cambridge, 1927-47; *Western Europe since Merit*, 1930; *England under Queen Anne*, 1934; *England under George I*, 1937; *The English Revolution*, 1938; *Master of the House*, 1940; later works include *English Social History*, 1941; *biography and Other Essays* (1949).

WALEY, ARTHUR DAVID (b. 1880): *For the History of Chinese literature*; b. Tunbridge Wells; family name originally Waley; educated at Rugby and King's College, Cambridge; Assistant Keeper at the British Museum, 1912-30; later Lecturer in the School of Oriental

#### PART FOUR

Studies; first published work was two collections of poetry, translated from the Chinese, 1918 and 1919; *The No Plays of Japan*, 1921; *The Tale of Genji*, six volumes, 1925-33; *The Pillow-Book of Sei Shonagon*, 1928; *The Analects of Confucius*, 1938; worked at the Ministry of Information during the Second World War; later work includes *Monkey* (1942) and *The Real Tripitaka* (1951); made Companion of Honour, 1956.

WALPOLE, HUGH SEYMOUR (1884-1941): Novelist; b. Auckland, New Zealand, son of a clergyman; educated at King's School, Canterbury, and at Cambridge; worked as a school teacher and later as a reviewer; first novel *The Wooden Horse*, 1909; *Mr Perrin and Mr Traill*, 1911; served in Russia during the First World War; study of Conrad, 1916; *The Secret City*, 1919; *The Cathedral*, 1922; study of Trollope, 1928; later work includes the *Herries Chronicle*, four volumes, 1930-3; knighted, 1937.

WAUGH, EVELYN ARTHUR ST JOHN (b. 1903): Novelist; b. London, son of a publisher; educated at Lancing and Hertford College, Oxford; later studied art in London and began teaching; first work was a study of D. G. Rossetti, 1928; first novel *Decline and Fall*, 1928; married Evelyn Gardner, 1928; divorced, 1930, and entered the Roman Catholic Church; novels of this period include *Vile Bodies* (1930), *Black Mischief* (1932), *A Handful of Dust* (1934), and *Scoop* (1938); he also wrote a life of Edmund Campion, 1935; married Laura Herbert, 1937; served with the Marines and later with the Commandos in the Second World War; later novels include *Put out More Flags* (1942), *Brideshead Revisited* (1945), *The Loved One* (1949), *Men at Arms* (1952), and *Love among the Ruins* (1953).

WEBB, BEATRICE (1858-1943): Economist; b. Standish, Glos., daughter of Richard Potter, a railway director and friend of Herbert Spencer; educated privately; became interested in economics and socialism; married Sidney Webb, 1892, and with him devoted her life to the support of the Labour movement; works include *The Co-operative Movement in Great Britain* (1891) and *Men's and Women's Wages* (1919); also collaborated on many works with her husband; *My Apprenticeship* (1926) and *Our Partnership* (1948) are autobiographical.

WELLS, HERBERT GEORGE (1866-1946): Novelist; b. Bromley, Kent, son of a professional cricketer; educated at Midhurst Grammar School;





educated at home by her father; after his death set up house with her brothers and sister in Bloomsbury, and became the centre of the 'Bloomsbury Group' of writers, which included E. M. Forster, Lytton Strachey, J. M. Keynes (qq.v.), and Roger Fry; married Leonard Woolf, 1912; first novel *The Voyage Out*, 1915; established the Hogarth Press with her husband, 1917; *Night and Day*, 1919; *Jacob's Room*, 1922; *Mrs Dalloway*, 1925; *To the Lighthouse*, 1927; *Orlando*, 1928; *The Waves*, 1931; *The Years*, 1938; *Between the Acts*, 1941; critical work includes *The Common Reader*, studies of various authors published in two series, 1925, 1932; collections of essays, edited by Leonard Woolf, appeared in 1942, 1947, and 1950; she also wrote a biography of Elizabeth Barrett's dog *Flush* (1933) and *Roger Fry* (1940); committed suicide while suffering from a mental breakdown attributed to anxiety during the Second World War.

*Collected Works* (14 vols., London, 1929-52)

*To the Lighthouse* in R.L.

*A Writer's Diary* ed. Leonard Woolf (London, 1953)

*Correspondence with Lytton Strachey* ed. Leonard Woolf and James Strachey (London, 1956)

See Joan Bennett, *Virginia Woolf: her Art as a Novelist* (Cambridge, 1945)

B. Blackstone, *Virginia Woolf, a Commentary* (London, 1949)

B. Blackstone, *Virginia Woolf* (London, 1952)

R. L. Chambers, *The Novels of Virginia Woolf* (Edinburgh, 1947)

David Daiches, *Virginia Woolf* (London, 1945)

E. M. Forster, *Virginia Woolf* (Cambridge, 1942)

J. K. Johnstone, *The Bloomsbury Group* (London, 1954)

Deborah Newton, *Virginia Woolf* (Melbourne, 1946)

YEATS, WILLIAM BUTLER (1865-1939): Poet and dramatist; b. near Dublin, son of a painter; brought up in London; educated at the Godolphin School, Hammersmith, and later in Dublin; studied art, *Wanderings of Oisín*, 1889; *The Countess Cathleen* (1892) and *The Land of Heart's Desire* (1894) are verse plays; returned to Ireland, 1896, and became a leader of the Celtic Renaissance; founded with Lady Gregory's help, the Irish National Theatre Society in 1901, which in 1904 made the Abbey Theatre its home; wrote many plays to be performed there; also encouraged Synge (q.v.) to write plays; poetry of this period includes *The Wind among the Reeds* (1899), *In the Seven Woods* (1903), and *The Green Helmet* (1910); married Georgie Hyde Lees, 1917; *The Wild Swans at Coole*, 1917; member of the Irish Senate, 1922-8; awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, 1923; *A Vision*, 1925; *The Tower*, 1928; *The Winding Stair*, 1929; *Autobiography*, 1938; *Last Poems*, 1939; died at Roquebrune, in France.







# INDEX OF NAMES.

- Abbey Theatre Company, 65, 200-3  
 Alexander, George, 114  
 Allen, Carleton, 240  
 American influences:  
   Adams, 13  
   Arendt, 39  
   Babbitt, 337  
   Cooley, 31  
   Cooper, 105  
   Dewey, 31, 36-7, 45  
   Dickinson, 378  
   Frost, 148  
   Hawthorne, 104, 105, 107, 108,  
     109  
   Hemingway, 259, 483  
   Howells, 110  
   James, Henry (the elder), 103  
   James, William, 19, 45-6, 103  
   Melville, 103, 105  
   Riding, 90, 378  
   Santayana, 45, 242, 337  
   Stein, 47, 236  
   Stevenson, 24  
   Twain, 110, 111  
   Wharton, 104  
   Whyte, 35  
   See also Eliot, James, Pound  
 Amis, Kingsley, 96, 395, 439, 458,  
   486, 487, 488  
 Annan, Noel, 17, 22  
 Archer, William, 222  
 Arlen, Michael, 438  
 Arnold, Matthew, 28, 51, 52, 54, 60,  
   86, 88, 89, 98, 104, 233, 246, 260,  
   340, 351, 354, 358, 362, 363, 370,  
   374, 386, 414, 415  
 Auden, W. H., 92-5, 181, 217,  
   377-92, 466, 512  
   *The Age of Anxiety*, 389  
   *Another Time*, 382, 384  
   *The Ascent of F6*, 22, 381  
   *August for the People*, 385  
   *Birthday Poem*, 386  
   *Bucolics*, 390  
   *Commentary*, 386  
   *The Dance of Death*, 380  
   *The Dog Beneath the Skin*, 382  
   *Dover*, 1937, 386  
   *For the Time Being*, 388  
   *Horae Canonicae*, 391  
   *In Time of War*, 386, 387  
   *Journey to a War*, 382  
   *Look, Stranger!*, 382, 385  
   *The Malvern*, 386  
   *Musée des Beaux Arts*, 386  
   *New Year Letter*, 385, 387  
   *Nones*, 389  
   *The Orators*, 380, 381  
   *Oxford*, 386  
   *Paid on Both Sides*, 379, 466  
   *Perhaps*, 386  
   *Petition*, 380  
   *The Quest*, 387  
   *Rimbaud*, 95  
   *The Sea and the Mirror*, 388  
   *September 1st, 1939*, 386  
   *The Shield of Achilles*, 93, 389, 390  
   *Spain*, 1937, 181, 383  
   *A Summer Night*, 1933, 384  
   *Through the Looking Glass*, 386  
   *Two Worlds*, 386  
   *Underneath the Leaves of Life*, 386  
   *Venus will now say a Few Words*,  
     379  
   *The Wanderer*, 379  
   *The Watershed*, 379  
 Austen, Jane, 225, 247, 257, 259, 262,  
   264, 265, 267, 363, 364, 423, 440,  
   477, 478  
 Ayer, A. J., 24, 243  
 Bacon, Francis, 242  
 Balchin, Nigel, 438  
 Baldwin, Stanley, 30, 439  
 Balfour, Lord, 30  
 Barclay, Florence, 434

# INDEX OF NAMES

- Barker, Ernest, 25  
 Barker, George, 466-8  
 Barrie, James, 216, 512-13  
 Beckett, Samuel, 96, 204-5, 210, 513  
     *All that Fall*, 205  
     *En attendant Godot*, 204-5  
     *Endgame*, 205  
     *L'Innomable*, 96, 204  
     *Krapp's Last Tape*, 205  
     *Malone Meurt*, 96, 204  
     *Molloy*, 96, 204  
     *Murphy*, 96, 204  
     *Proust*, 204  
     *Watt*, 96  
     *Whoroscope*, 204  
 Beerbohm, Max, 322, 513  
 Behan, Brendan, 197, 207  
 Bell, Adrian, 513  
 Bell, Clive, 261, 275, 276, 277  
 Bell, Vanessa, 261  
 Belloc, Hilaire, 23, 222, 227, 241, 242,  
     513-14  
     *The Cruise of the Nona*, 241  
     *The Path to Rome*, 241  
 Benedict, Ruth, 22  
 Bennett, Arnold, 58, 59, 61, 72, 81,  
     83, 96, 257, 258, 285, 322, 436,  
     488, 514  
     *Anna of the Five Towns*, 59, 81  
     *Journals*, 59  
     *Old Wives' Tale*, 61, 436  
     *Riceman Steps*, 61  
     *Sacred and Profane Love*, 436  
 Benson, A. C., 13  
 Bentham, Jeremy, 30, 33  
 Berkeley, George, 232  
 Berlin, Isaiah, 237  
 Betjeman, John, 472  
 Beveridge, Lord, 34  
 Birrell, Augustine, 430  
 Blake, William, 22, 94, 96, 189, 385,  
     468, 487  
 Blunden, Edmund, 70, 158, 161, 165,  
     167, 168, 514-15  
     *Undertones of War*, 70, 168  
 Booth, Charles, 18  
 Booth, General, 57  
 Bottomley, Gordon, 218  
 Bottrall, Ronald, 472  
 Bourne, George, 15, 88, 515  
     *Change in the Village*, 16  
 Bowen, Elizabeth, 475  
 Bradley, F. H., 24, 232, 233, 234  
 Braine, John, 432, 487, 488-9  
 Bridie, James, 216, 515  
 Brooke, Rupert, 71, 154-7, 160, 161  
     163, 515  
     *Sonnets 1914*, 71, 154-7, 160  
 Brown, J. A. C., 35  
 Browne, Sir Thomas, 242, 259, 264  
 Browning, Robert, 68, 220, 318, 323  
     330, 340  
 Buchan, John, 436  
 Budgen, Frank, 304, 310  
 Bunyan, John, 38, 111, 213, 262, 420  
     422, 423, 426, 483, 484  
 Burke, Edmund, 30, 36, 442  
 Burns, Robert, 459  
 Butler, Samuel, 16, 222, 227, 247,  
     251  
 Byron, George Gordon, 280, 415  
 Caine, Hall, 437  
 Caird, Edward, 233  
 Carroll, Paul Vincent, 201  
 Cary, Joyce, 86, 91, 96, 483-5, 490  
     491, 515-16  
 Chase, James Hadley, 437  
 Chaucer, Geoffrey, 318, 459  
 Chelmsford, Lord, 26  
 Chesterton, G. K., 23, 222, 226, 227,  
     228, 229, 516  
     *Manalive*, 227  
     *The Napoleon of Notting Hill*, 228  
     *Tremendous Trifles*, 228  
 Cheyney, Peter, 457  
 Churchill, W. S., 222, 477, 516-17  
 Clarke, Adam, 227, 228-9, 517  
*Classical* ~~unpublished~~  
     *Annals* 227  
     *Sam* 227  
     *Samuel* 227

# INDEX OF NAMES

## Classical influences (cont.)

- Homer, 79, 304, 319, 327
- Horace, 390
- Ovid, 327
- Plato, 25, 184
- Sophocles, 354
- Cobbett, William, 28
- Coleridge, S. T., 41, 64, 240, 340, 374, 442
- Collingswood, R. G., 25, 241-2, 517
- Collins, Wilkie, 441
- Colum, Padraic, 201, 207
- Compton-Burnett, Ivy, 476-9, 481, 482, 517
- Conan Doyle, Arthur, 437, 517
- Congreve, William, 210, 215
- Conrad, Joseph, 56-7, 59, 60, 61, 72, 117, 119-37, 197, 222, 226, 228, 258, 268, 308, 364, 403, 473, 475, 483, 518
- Chance*, 119
- The End of the Tether*, 124
- Heart of Darkness*, 119, 121-37
- Lord Jim*, 119
- The Nigger of the Narcissus*, 119, 120, 124, 125, 134
- Nostromo*, 56, 119-26, 130, 133, 134, 136, 226
- The Secret Agent*, 57, 119
- The Secret Sharer*, 119, 122, 124, 125, 133, 136
- The Shadow-Line*, 119, 122, 124, 125, 126, 133, 134, 136
- Typhoon*, 119, 121, 123, 124, 125, 126
- Under Western Eyes*, 57, 60, 119, 475
- Victory*, 119
- relli, Marie, 43, 284, 437
- rnford, Francis, 519
- oward, Noel, 216, 219, 381, 519
- Cowper, William, 95
- Crossman, R. H. S., 34
- Curzon, Lord, 30
- Darwin, Charles, 58, 227
- Davie, Donald, 95, 472

- De la Mare, Walter, 64, 138-53, 519
- All but Blind*, 139
- At the Keyhole*, 139
- The Dwelling Place*, 139
- Farewell*, 139
- The Ghost*, 141
- John Mouldy*, 140
- Never-to-be*, 139
- Nicholas Nye*, 139
- Nod*, 139
- Off-the-Ground*, 139
- Old Shellover*, 139
- The Quartette*, 139
- Sam*, 139
- The Silver Penny*, 139
- The Song of the Mad Prince*, 141-2
- The Tailor*, 139
- Where*, 139
- The Witch*, 140
- Deering, Warwick, 434-5, 438
- Defoe, Daniel, 264, 438, 483
- Dickens, Charles, 28, 58, 62, 72, 113, 114, 129, 215, 222, 225-30, 305, 368, 435, 491
- Disraeli, Benjamin, 227
- Donne, John, 34, 44, 68, 94, 339, 340
- Douglas, Keith, 469-71
- Douglas, Norman, 519-20
- Dryden, John, 42, 91, 190, 357, 365
- Dublin Drama League, 203
- Dublin Gate Theatre, 203
- Dunbar, William, 459
- Durrell, Lawrence, 96, 490-1
- Edwards, Hilton, 203
- Eliot, George, 52, 58, 60, 62, 81, 104, 105, 107, 108, 120, 215, 225, 257, 259, 260, 262, 271, 279, 288, 364, 483, 485
- Eliot, T. S., 23, 27, 44, 62, 64-70, 73, 76-8, 81, 83, 86, 89, 91-7, 98, 104, 105, 109, 114, 153, 154, 170-2, 177, 178, 180, 181, 184, 192, 205, 210, 217-20, 242, 246, 315-18, 322-4, 327, 330-49, 350,



- 354, 355, 357, 363-7, 373, 377,  
378, 391, 403, 415, 425, 442, 458,  
459, 472, 520-1  
*Asi Wednesday*, 343  
*The Cocktail Party*, 219  
*The Family Reunion*, 219, 334  
*Four Quartets*, 91, 97, 98, 335, 337,  
340-1, 343-8, 355, 366  
*The Function of Criticism*, 350  
*Gerontion*, 220, 323, 335, 336, 341,  
347  
*The Hollow Men*, 334, 343  
*Homage to John Dryden*, 366  
*The Lovesong of Alfred J. Prufrock*,  
83, 332  
*Marina*, 192  
*The Metaphysical Poets*, 339-40  
*Mr Apollinax*, 69  
*Murder in the Cathedral*, 220  
*Notes towards the Definition of Cul-  
ture*, 242-3  
*The Pensées of Pascal*, 78  
*The Perfect Critic*, 365  
*Poems 1909-25*, 357  
*Poetry in the 18th Century*, 364  
*Portrait of a Lady*, 68, 331  
*The Possibility of Poetic Drama*, 219  
*Preludes*, 65  
*Prufrock and other Observations*, 68,  
153, 220, 323, 327, 330, 333, 335,  
336, 341  
*Reflections on Vers Libre*, 333  
*Rhapsody on a Windy Night*, 65  
*The Sacred Wood*, 365  
*Shakespeare and the Stoicism of  
Seneca*, 339  
*The Social Function of Poetry*, 354  
*Sweeney Agonistes*, 219, 334, 357  
*Sweeney among the Nightingales*,  
333  
*Three Voices of Poetry*, 220  
*Tradition and the Individual Talent*,  
67, 98, 242, 334, 366  
*Use of Poetry*, 340  
*The Waste Land*, 69-71, 78, 92, 97,  
177, 180, 205, 315-18, 323, 335,  
341-3, 346, 366, 377, 403  
*Ellis, Havelock*, 242, 521  
*Autobiography*, 242  
*The Dance of Life*, 242  
*Impressions and Comments*, 242  
*Little Essays in Love and Virtue*, 242  
*Empson, William*, 91, 94, 95, 232,  
465-6, 469, 521  
*Arachne*, 95, 465  
*Aubade*, 95  
*Bacchus*, 466  
*The Gathering Storm*, 466  
*High Dive*, 95  
*Legal Fiction*, 465  
*Letter II*, 466  
*Seven Types of Ambiguity*, 232  
*This Last Pain*, 466  
*To an Old Lady*, 465  
*Value is in Activity*, 465  
*Villanelle*, 95  
*Engels, F.*, 27  
*European influences:*  
*Bachelard*, 232  
*Balzac*, 104, 370  
*Baudelaire*, 65, 337, 338, 340, 342  
*Beaumarchais*, 215  
*Bergson*, 46, 66, 73, 83, 233, 266  
*Brecht*, 204, 207  
*Buber*, 278  
*Camus*, 204  
*Cavafy*, 247  
*Cervantes*, 202, 304  
*Chehov*, 61, 204, 212, 259, 303, 473  
*Corbière*, 471  
*Dante*, 239, 242, 321, 332, 338, 339,  
342, 347  
*de Biran*, 233  
*de Goncourt*, 59, 61  
*de Gourmont*, 67, 340  
*de Tocqueville*, 35-6, 443  
*Dostoyevsky*, 60, 61, 81, 479, 487  
*Flaubert*, 59, 60, 61, 81, 226, 285,  
310, 316, 320, 327-8, 337, 308,  
369-70  
*Gautier*, 317, 321, 322, 324, 333

# INDEX OF NAMES

## European influences (*cont.*)

- Gide, 34  
 Ibsen, 44, 59, 77, 199, 201, 204, 212, 222, 307, 479  
 Ionesco, 210  
 Kafka, 204, 205, 474  
 Kierkegaard, 23, 387, 487  
 Laforgue, 61, 65, 66, 320, 330, 331, 333, 471  
 Mallarmé, 61, 67, 86, 338, 339  
 Mann, 490  
 Marcel, 232  
 Maupassant, 72, 436  
 Merleau-Ponty, 232  
 Molière, 201, 210, 211, 215  
 Musil, 490  
 Nietzsche, 487  
 Pascal, 386  
 Proust, 46, 247, 251, 261, 271, 481, 490  
 Pushkin, 107  
 Rabelais, 311, 313  
 Rilke, 80, 386, 387  
 Rimbaud, 61, 65, 67, 471  
 Ronsard, 69  
 Rousseau, 20  
 Sainte-Beuve, 104, 105, 106  
 Sartre, 197, 232  
 Stendhal, 61  
 Strindberg, 209, 210  
 Toller, 204  
 Tolstoy, 59, 60, 81, 259, 265, 280, 299  
 Turgenev, 59, 60, 61, 72, 81, 103, 105, 107, 108, 112, 228  
 Villon, 319, 459  
 Voltaire, 69, 386  
 Westermarck, 22  
   ittgenstein, 24, 232, 235, 237  
   Gasset, 443  
   la, 58, 59, 60, 61, 72, 210  
 See also Engels, Freud, and Marx  
 Fabian Society, 31, 32, 33  
 Farnol, Jeffrey, 440  
 Fay, Frank, 199

- Fay, William, 199, 200  
 Fenollosa, Ernest, 66  
 Fielding, Henry, 220, 225, 226, 304, 311  
 Firbank, Ronald, 476  
 Fitzgerald, Edward, 322  
 Flecker, James Elroy, 521  
 Fleming, Ian, 437  
 Ford, Ford Madox, 61, 71-2, 89, 222, 521-2  
 Forester, C. S., 440  
 Forster, E. M., 14, 21, 26-7, 29, 46, 74, 75, 197, 210, 228, 229, 245-56, 257, 260, 261, 266, 268, 473, 522  
   *Aspects of the Novel*, 250, 257  
   *The Curate's Friend*, 248  
   *Howards End*, 254, 266  
   *The Longest Journey*, 249-50, 254  
   *The Machine Stops*, 248  
   Marianne Thornton, 247  
   *A Passage to India*, 26, 74, 251, 254-6, 261  
   *A Room with a View*, 253  
   *The Story of a Panic*, 248  
   *Two Cheers for Democracy*, 260, 268  
   *What I Believe*, 27  
 Fraser, J., 15  
 Frazer, James, 2, 232, 522-3  
 Freud, Sigmund, 18-20, 23, 27, 31, 46-7, 217, 383, 386, 387, 417, 420, 426, 479  
 Fry, Christopher, 218  
 Fry, Roger, 73, 245, 260, 261  
 Fuller, Roy, 471  
 Galsworthy, John, 60, 61, 212, 216, 257, 258, 284, 372, 523  
 Garman, Douglas, 89, 356  
 Garnett, Constance, 60  
 Garnett, Edward, 60, 83, 149  
 George, Lloyd, 30  
 Gibbons, Stella, 439  
 Gissing, George, 22, 58, 222  
 Gladstone, W. E., 31  
 Glyn, Elinor, 437  
 Gogarty, Oliver, St. J., 205



# INDEX OF NAMES

- Hume, David, 232  
Hutchinson, A. S. M., 438  
Huxley, Aldous, 46, 75, 78, 226-9,  
242, 274, 474, 482, 490, 491, 526  
*After Many a Summer*, 228  
*Ape and Essence*, 474  
*Brave New World*, 227, 228  
*Brave New World Revisited*, 474  
*Crome Yellow*, 75, 482, 491  
*Eyeless in Gaza*, 75  
*Point Counter Point*, 228  
Huxley, Julian, 526  
Hyde, Douglas, 199  
Hyndman, H. M., 31
- Inge, W. R., 241, 242  
rish National Theatre Society,  
199-203  
rving, Henry, 53  
sherwood, Christopher, 217, 378,  
380-1, 474, 526  
*The Ascent of F6*, 22, 381  
*The Dog Beneath the Skin*, 382  
*The World in the Evening*, 474
- James, Henry, 13, 29, 36, 44, 46,  
53-7, 59, 60, 69, 73, 103-17,  
221-30, 248, 308, 330, 335,  
351-5, 364, 367-74, 388, 403,  
410, 461, 473, 479, 481, 526-8  
*The Ambassadors*, 114  
*The American*, 221  
*The American Scene*, 116, 117  
*The Art of Fiction*, 73  
*The Aspern Papers*, 114  
*The Awkward Age*, 54, 61, 114, 225  
*The Bostonians*, 104, 110, 111, 112  
*Broken Wings*, 55  
*Brooksmith*, 55  
*The Chaperon*, 114  
*The Coxon Fund*, 55  
*Crapy Cornelia*, 104  
*Daisy Miller*, 110  
*The Death of the Lion*, 55, 113  
*The Europeans*, 56, 106, 107, 108,  
369
- The Figure in the Carpet*, 114  
*The Finer Grain*, 116  
*French Poets and Novelists*, 103  
*The Golden Bowl*, 114, 115, 116, 225  
*Guy Donville*, 113, 114  
*An International Episode*, 105, 108  
*The Ivory Tower*, 117  
*The Jolly Corner*, 107  
*Lady Barbarina*, 105, 113  
*The Lesson of the Master*, 55  
*A London Life*, 113, 114  
*The Middle Years*, 113  
*A New England Winter*, 111  
*Pandora*, 105, 108  
*Partial Portraits*, 105  
*Portrait of a Lady*, 56, 106, 108-10,  
115, 226  
*Princess Casamassima*, 57, 110, 112  
*Roderick Hudson*, 461  
*The Sacred Fount*, 114  
*The Spoils of Poynton*, 54, 114  
*Terminations*, 113  
*The Tragic Muse*, 113  
*Washington Square*, 56, 106, 108,  
111, 369  
*What Maisie Knew*, 114, 226  
*The Wings of the Dove*, 53, 56, 109,  
114
- Jefferies, Richard, 15, 64, 82  
Jerome, Jerome K., 488  
Johnson, Lionel, 175  
Johnson, Samuel, 42, 115, 326, 351,  
374  
Johnston, Denis, 204  
*A Bride for the Unicorn*, 204  
*The Golden Cuckoo*, 204  
*The Moon in the Yellow River*, 204,  
205  
*The Old Lady says Nol*, 204
- Jones, David, 169  
Jones, Ernest, 19  
Jonson, Ben, 211  
Joyce, James, 47, 76-9, 91, 198, 199,  
204-6, 228, 237, 258, 301-14,  
317, 337, 357, 417-18, 473, 475,  
483, 484, 490, 528

# INDEX OF NAMES

- Dubliners, 76, 199, 301, 303, 306  
 Exiles, 77, 301  
 Finnegans Wake, 78, 301, 306,  
 309-13, 475, 484  
*A Portrait of the Artist as a Young  
 Man*, 76, 301, 302, 303  
 Stephen Hero, 301  
*Ulysses*, 77-8, 83, 237, 301, 303-9,  
 310, 337, 338, 342, 417-18  
 Kavanagh, Patrick, 207-8, 528  
 Kaye-Smith, Sheila, 439  
 Keats, John, 64, 153, 161, 166, 185,  
 415  
 Kennedy, Margaret, 430, 435  
 Keyes, Sidney, 469  
 Keynes, J. M., 18, 33, 235, 238, 261,  
 276, 277, 528-9  
*The End of Laisser-Faire*, 33  
*Essays in Persuasion*, 238  
*Memoir*, 276  
 Kinsella, Thomas, 208  
 Kipling, Rudyard, 26, 57, 158, 367,  
 380  
 Knight, J. Wilson, 90, 265  
 Knox, Ronald, 20  
 Koestler, Arthur, 31, 33-4, 36, 529  
 Landor, W. S., 89  
 Langland, William, 344  
 Larkin, Philip, 40, 95, 458, 471  
 Laski, Harold, 25, 33, 36, 37  
 Lawes, Henry, 325, 326  
 Lawrence, D. H., 20-3, 30, 32, 40, 41,  
 43-4, 45, 47, 61, 63, 64, 68, 77,  
 81-6, 90, 91, 96, 112, 207, 208,  
 210, 217, 227, 228, 250, 251, 261,  
 262, 279, 280-300, 315, 326, 357,  
 364, 367-74, 403, 442, 451, 472,  
 473, 475, 486, 529-30  
*Aaron's Rod*, 283, 285, 295  
*Art and Morality*, 90, 357  
*The Captain's Doll*, 82, 280, 295  
*The Daughters of the Vicar*, 284, 292,  
*The End of Another Home Holiday*,  
 63  
*Essay on Galsworthy*, 368, 373  
*Fantasia of the Unconscious*, 280  
*The Fox*, 82, 292  
*The Horsedealer's Daughter*, 297  
*Insouciance*, 32  
*Kangaroo*, 21, 28, 285  
*Lady Chatterley's Lover*, 85, 86, 281,  
 283, 286, 287, 295, 299  
*The Ladybird*, 295  
*Look! we have come through*, 280  
*The Man who Died*, 280  
*Morality and the Novel*, 357, 368  
*The Phumed Serpent*, 282, 286  
*Preface to Poems*, 45, 83  
*The Rainbow*, 47, 82, 280-1,  
 287-8  
*St Mawr*, 82, 280, 295  
*Sons and Lovers*, 261, 280, 286-7,  
 292, 451  
*Studies in Classic American Literature*,  
 286  
*Study of Thomas Hardy*, 368, 372  
*Sun*, 82  
*The Trespasser*, 287  
*The Virgin and the Gypsy*, 82, 297  
*The White Peacock*, 287  
*Why the Novel Matters*, 90, 371  
*The Woman who Rode Away*, 280  
*Women in Love*, 83, 84, 115, 287-  
 300, 315  
 Lear, Edward, 386  
 Leavis, F. R., 37, 40, 41, 48, 62, 88-91,  
 106, 111, 147, 287-9, 290, 331,  
 341, 355, 359-64, 365, 367, 401.

# INDEX OF NAMES

- Lewis, Percy Wyndham (*cont.*)  
*The Revenge for Love*, 75  
*Self-Condemed*, 75, 476  
*Tarr*, 76, 476  
*Time and Western Man*, 242  
*Trial of Man*, 476  
*The Wild Body*, 76
- Locke, W. J., 435
- Lynd, Helen, 31
- MacCaig, Norman, 472
- MacCarthy, Desmond, 261
- MacDiarmid, Hugh, 459-60, 461, 531
- MacDonagh, Donagh, 197, 207
- MacDonald, Ramsay, 29, 33
- MacLiammoir, Michael, 204
- MacNeice, Louis, 182, 531
- McTaggart, J. M. E., 233, 243
- Mannheim, Karl, 41
- Mansfield, Katherine, 84, 356, 531
- Marryat, Frederick, 440
- Marshall, Alfred, 18, 33, 237
- Martin, Kingsley, 33
- Martyn, Edward, 199
- Marvell, Andrew, 357, 365
- Marx, Karl, 23, 25, 27, 28, 33, 34, 217, 238, 381, 383, 387
- Masefield, John, 89, 531-2
- Masterman, C. F. G., 16
- Maugham, Somerset, 59, 216, 219, 532
- Meredith, George, 54, 58, 222, 224, 247, 250, 253
- Merriman, Brian, 198
- Mill, J. S., 232, 240, 374
- Milton, John, 90, 325, 357
- Molloy, M. J., 201
- Nicholas, 438
- G. E., 24, 72, 232, 233, 234, 235, 247, 275, 276, 532
- Ethics*, 24
- Principia Ethica*, 24, 72, 233, 234, 247, 275
- Moore, George, 58, 60, 199
- Morgan, Charles, 473, 490
- Morris, William, 28, 31, 33, 172
- Muir, Edwin, 95, 357, 380, 384, 468-9, 532
- The Brig O' Dead*, 469
- Collected Poems*, 468
- One Foot in Eden*, 468
- The Story of the Fable*, 469
- Murdoch, Iris, 489-90
- Murray, Gilbert, 89, 533
- Murray, T. C., 201
- Murry, J. M., 89, 229, 242, 356, 533
- Myers, F. W. H., 270
- Myers, L. H., 7, 23, 27, 29, 85, 270-9, 533
- The Clio*, 85, 274
- The Near and the Far*, 272, 274
- The Orissers*, 271, 274
- The Pool of Vishnu*, 29, 271, 278
- The Root and the Flower*, 85, 274, 278
- Strange Glory*, 85
- Nashe, Thomas, 258, 486
- Newman, John Henry, 239, 442
- Northcliffe, Lord, 37
- Nowell-Smith, P. H., 25
- Oakeshott, Michael, 25, 36
- O'Casey, Sean, 201, 203-4, 206, 533-4
- I Knock at the Door*, 203
- Juno and the Paycock*, 203
- The Plough and the Stars*, 203
- The Shadow of a Gunman*, 203
- O'Connor, Frank, 197, 205-6
- O'Crohan, Tomas, 198
- O'Faolain, Sean, 197, 201, 205-6
- O'Flaherty, Liam, 197, 205-7
- Orage, A. R., 88-90
- Orczy, Baroness Emmuniska, 440
- Orwell, George, 26, 34, 226-9, 474, 534
- Animal Farm*, 229
- Coming up for Air*, 229
- Keep the Aspidistra Flying*, 229
- 1984, 36, 227, 474
- Politics and the English Language*, 227

- Osborne, John, 485-6  
 O'Sullivan, Maurice, 198  
 Owen, Robert, 28, 33  
 Owen, Wilfred, 71, 154-8, 159,  
     161-7, 377, 471, 534  
*Anthem for Doomed Youth*, 163  
*The Chances*, 164-5  
*Disabled*, 162  
*Exposure*, 71, 166  
*Futility*, 165  
*Insensibility*, 166  
*S.I.W.*, 155  
*Strange Meeting*, 156, 166, 167
- Pater, Walter, 72, 320  
 Patmore, Coventry, 88  
 Peacock, Thomas Love, 227  
 Pearce, Patrick, 201  
 Pinero, A. W., 54  
 Pope, Alexander, 91, 170, 190, 365,  
     486  
 Postan, M., 18  
 Pound, Ezra, 38, 62, 64-6, 68, 70, 76,  
     77, 89, 91-7, 105, 116, 154, 170,  
     172, 315-29, 333, 337, 354, 378,  
     458, 461-4, 534-5  
*Cantos*, 97, 461-2  
*The Classic Anthology defined by*  
     *Confucius*, 462-3  
*Homage to Sextus Propertius*, 315  
*Hugh Selwyn Mauberley*, 68, 69,  
     315-29, 378, 462  
*Women of Trachis*, 463  
 Powell, Anthony, 481-2  
 Powys, T. F., 64, 415-28, 535  
*The Corpse and the Flea*, 427  
*Fables*, 420, 425  
*Kindness in a Corner*, 425  
*The Left Leg*, 421  
*Mr Tasker's Gods*, 420, 425  
*Mr Weston's Good Wine*, 420, 421-8  
*No Painted Plumage*, 425  
*Unclay*, 420, 422  
 Praed, W. M., 95  
 Priestley, J. B., 216, 535  
 Prince, F. T., 472
- Quiller-Couch, Arthur, 535-6
- Raine, Kathleen, 460  
 Rattigan, Terence, 217-18, 219  
 Raymond, Ernest, 438  
 Read, Herbert, 157, 158, 161, 168-9,  
     536  
*Annals of Innocence and of Experience*,  
     157  
*In Retreat*, 168  
*The Raid*, 169  
*To a Conscript of 1940*, 161  
 Reade, Charles, 58  
 Reviews:
- Analysis*, 237  
*Athenaeum*, 356, 365  
*Atlantic Monthly*, 369  
*Calendar of Modern Letters*, 89-90,  
     356-8, 479  
*Century Magazine*, 110  
*Criterion*, 89, 324  
*Egoist*, 70, 76  
*English Review*, 89  
*Essays in Criticism*, 362  
*Horizon*, 474  
*Little Review*, 70, 77  
*Nation*, 356  
*Nation (American)*, 369  
*New Age*, 88, 89  
*New Verse*, 392  
*Scrutiny*, 42-3, 90, 358-63, 462  
 Ricardo, David, 238  
 Richards, I. A., 39, 90, 94, 232, 536  
*The Principles of Literary Criticism*,  
     39, 90, 232  
 Richardson, Dorothy, 47, 485, 536  
 Richardson, Samuel, 225  
 Rickword, Edgell, 89, 357  
 Ridler, Anne, 472  
 Robbins, Lord, 220

# INDEX OF NAMES

- Rossetti, D. G., 52, 321  
 Ruskin, John, 28, 51, 88, 172, 222, 226, 227  
 Russell, Bertrand, 23, 24, 197, 232, 240-1, 267, 298, 537  
 Russell, George, 199  
 Ryle, Gilbert, 24  
 Sabatini, Rafael, 440  
 Sackville-West, V., 16-17, 29  
 'Sapper', 436, 437  
 Sassoon, Siegfried, 71, 154, 158-66, 168, 537  
 Sayers, Dorothy, 489  
 Scott, Walter, 225  
 Seeley, John, 25  
 Shakespeare, William, 53, 89, 90, 116, 142, 213, 215, 224, 225, 264, 265, 266, 311, 312, 339, 354, 362, 381, 385, 390, 422  
 Shaw, G. B., 20, 59, 61, 197, 209-20, 221-30, 241, 242, 388, 537-8  
*Arms and the Man*, 32, 227  
*Back to Methuselah*, 214, 227  
*Caesar and Cleopatra*, 214  
*Candida*, 20, 224  
*The Dark Lady of the Sonnets*, 224  
*The Doctor's Dilemma*, 224  
*Fabian Essays*, 241  
*Major Barbara*, 59  
*Man and Superman*, 20, 59, 212-13, 214  
*Mrs Warren's Profession*, 59  
*Plays Pleasant and Unpleasant*, 214-16  
*The Quintessence of Ibsenism*, 59  
*St Joan*, 213-14  
*Widowers' Houses*, 59  
 hy-Skeffington, Francis, 200  
 dan, R. B., 215, 227  
 ls, George, 201  
 e, Nevil, 434, 440  
 litoe, Alan, 487, 489  
 itwell, Edith, 538  
 Skelton, John, 378  
 Smith, Adam, 238  
 Smollett, Tobias, 225  
 Snow, C. P., 41, 42, 96, 394, 409-14, 481-2, 539  
*The Conscience of the Rich*, 409  
*Homecomings*, 411, 412  
*The Light and the Dark*, 411-13  
*The Masters*, 410  
*The New Men*, 410-12  
*The Search*, 409  
*Strangers and Brothers*, 409  
*A Time of Hope*, 410, 412  
 Snowden, Lord, 33  
 Sorley, Charles, 156-7  
 Spencer, Herbert, 16, 59  
 Spender, Stephen, 92, 539  
 Stephen, Leslie, 73, 88, 262, 267, 269, 270, 374  
 Sterne, Laurence, 258  
 Stevenson, R. L., 248-9, 437, 438  
 Strachey, John, 33  
 Strachey, Lytton, 19, 251, 539  
 Swift, Jonathan, 486  
 Swinburne, Algernon, 320  
 Synge, J. M., 44, 65, 175, 196, 197, 199-202, 207, 225, 227, 229, 539  
*In the Shadow of the Glen*, 201  
*The Playboy of the Western World*, 175, 200-2, 205, 207  
 Tawney, R. H., 540  
 Tennyson, Alfred, 52, 66, 161, 330, 390  
 Thackeray, W. M., 58, 60, 72, 258  
 Thomas, Dylan, 93-4, 415-19, 460-1, 466-8, 471, 540  
*Country Sleep*, 419  
*Eighteen Poems*, 466  
*Poem in October*, 94  
*A Refusal . . .*, 93-4, 460-1  
*Under Milk Wood*, 417-19  
*When I Wake*, 467  
 Thomas, Edward, 15, 63, 64, 71, 96, 138-53, 165, 378, 540-1  
*Ambition*, 151  
*The Brook*, 151  
*The Glory*, 152, 153





# INDEX OF NAMES

- Woolf, Virginia (*cont.*)  
     *A Room of One's Own*, 259  
     *Three Guineas*, 259  
     *To the Lighthouse*, 74, 257, 262-8  
     *The Voyage Out*, 262-3  
     *The Waves*, 264, 266, 268  
     *A Writer's Diary*, 259  
     *The Years*, 268  
 Wootton, Barbara, 33, 35  
 Wordsworth, William, 22, 41, 51,  
     64, 96, 149, 170, 340, 357  
 Yates, Dornford, 436  
 Yeats, W. B., 26, 32, 44, 53, 59, 65-70,  
     78-81, 93, 139, 170-95, 196,  
     198-201, 205-8, 214, 216, 217,  
     220, 231, 242, 304, 317, 318, 322,  
     323, 382, 385, 415, 458, 460,  
     461-2, 544-5.  
     *All Soul's Night*, 189  
     *Among Schoolchildren*, 171  
     *Ancestral Houses*, 81  
     *Autobiographies*, 322  
     *A Bronze Head*, 172, 189  
     *The Cold Heaven*, 78  
     *Coole Park and Ballylee*, 189  
     *Countess Cathleen*, 200, 201  
     *The Crazy Moon*, 231  
     *Crazy Jane*, 80  
     *A Dialogue of Self and Soul*, 80, 186  
     *Easter 1916*, 187, 191, 205  
     *The Fascination of What's Difficult*,  
         69  
     *The Fisherman*, 181  
     *Four Plays for Dancers*, 174  
     *The Green Helmet*, 175, 188  
     *The Gyres*, 80, 183  
     *In Memory of Eva Gore Booth and*  
         *Con Markiewicz*, 188  
     *In Memory of Major Robert Gregory*,  
         188-90  
     *In the Seven Woods*, 188  
     *Introduction to the Oxford Book of*  
         *Modern Verse*, 53, 461  
     *An Irish Airman Foresees his Death*,  
         78, 79  
     *John Sherman*, 196  
     *Kathleen ni Houlihan*, 201  
     *Leda and the Swan*, 78  
     *Long Legged Fly*, 78  
     *Man and the Echo*, 193  
     *Meditations . . .*, 79, 170, 173-4, 176,  
         179, 181, 205  
     *Michael Robartes and the Dancer*,  
         186  
     *Never Give all the Heart*, 188  
     *Nineteen-Nineteen*, 21, 79, 175, 179,  
         181, 205  
     *On a Political Prisoner*, 187  
     *Parnell's Funeral*, 172  
     *A Prayer for My Daughter*, 184, 187,  
         189  
     *Purgatory*, 220  
     *Responsibilities*, 175  
     *Sailing to Byzantium*, 171, 186  
     *The Second Coming*, 69, 79, 182, 183,  
         318  
     *Solomon and the Witch*, 187  
     *The Stare's Nest*, 179  
     *The Statues*, 183  
     *Supernatural Songs*, 191-2  
     *The Symbolism of Poetry*, 65  
     *To a Shade*, 188  
     *The Tower*, 172, 184, 377  
     *Under Ben Bulbin*, 205  
     *Vacillation*, 172  
     *A Vision*, 183  
     *What is Popular Poetry?*, 65

